

殿
不



臣
知



道
了

好人
善

殿下



臣知

道了



好人卡
著



Your Highness, I Know My Wrongs

Table of Contents

- 1. [1](#)
- 2. [2](#)
- 3. [3](#)
- 4. [4](#)
- 5. [5](#)
- 6. [6](#)
- 7. [7](#)
- 8. [8](#)
- 9. [9](#)
- 10. [10](#)
- 11. [11](#)
- 12. [12](#)
- 13. [Chapter 13](#)
- 14. [Chapter 14](#)
- 15. [Chapter 15](#)
- 16. [Chapter 16](#)
- 17. [Chapter 17](#)
- 18. [Chapter 18](#)
- 19. [Chapter 19](#)
- 20. [Chapter 20](#)
- 21. [Chapter 21](#)
- 22. [Chapter 22](#)
- 23. [Chapter 23](#)
- 24. [Chapter 24](#)
- 25. [Chapter 25](#)
- 26. [Chapter 26](#)
- 27. [Chapter 27](#)

28. [Chapter 28](#)
29. [Chapter 29](#)
30. [Chapter 30](#)
31. [Chapter 31](#)
32. [Chapter 32](#)
33. [Chapter 33](#)
34. [Chapter 34](#)
35. [Chapter 35](#)
36. [Chapter 36](#)
37. [Chapter 37](#)
38. [Chapter 38](#)
39. [Chapter 39](#)
40. [Chapter 40](#)
41. [Chapter 41](#)
42. [Chapter 42](#)
43. [Chapter 43](#)
44. [Chapter 44](#)
45. [Chapter 45](#)
46. [Chapter 46](#)
47. [Chapter 47](#)
48. [Chapter 48](#)
49. [Chapter 49](#)
50. [Chapter 50](#)
51. [Chapter 51](#)
52. [Chapter 52](#)
53. [Chapter 53](#)
54. [Chapter 54](#)
55. [Chapter 55](#)
56. [Chapter 56](#)
57. [Chapter 57](#)
58. [Chapter 58](#)
59. [Chapter 59](#)
60. [Chapter 60](#)
61. [Chapter 61](#)

62. [Chapter 62](#)
63. [Chapter 63](#)
64. [Chapter 64](#)
65. [Chapter 65](#)
66. [Chapter 66](#)
67. [Chapter 67](#)
68. [Chapter 68](#)
69. [Chapter 69](#)
70. [Chapter 70](#)
71. [Chapter 71](#)
72. [Chapter 72](#)
73. [Chapter 73](#)
74. [Chapter 74](#)
75. [Chapter 75](#)
76. [Chapter 76](#)
77. [Chapter 77](#)
78. [Chapter 78](#)
79. [Chapter 79](#)
80. [Chapter 80](#)
81. [Chapter 81](#)
82. [Chapter 82](#)
83. [Chapter 83](#)
84. [Chapter 84](#)
85. [Chapter 85](#)
86. [Chapter 86](#)
87. [Chapter 87](#)
88. [Chapter 88](#)

PREVIOUS CHAPTER – –

CHAPTER 1

- TL: AmeryEdge
- Editor: LtBeefy

—

On that day, Lin Shan was suddenly transported to another world...

It was late in the afternoon when Lin Shan was transported.

She was completing her civil service exam, but the logic test made her head became dizzy with confusion. Before she knew it, she already fell asleep at the desk. When she woke up, she had already became one of the people from ancient times.

The Minister Second Young Master – Song Luo.

What?!? Lin Shan is a man????

Wrong wrong wrong!!! Even though her womanly assets wasn't that great, she is definitely a girl, you can just ask the Aunt Flo who visits monthly for proof.

At this point, one must be tempted to ask: "Is this the cliché woman transferred into a man's body from fiction?"

To be honest, Lin Shan also doesn't know if she have been transported into the body of a male or female.

In actuality, the second "son" Song Luo is definitely a woman, one who had even bigger cup sizes than Lin Shan. She can guarantee they are genuine.

But on paper, not only is Song Luo the second son of the prime minister, she is also the fiancé of Princess Ming Yue – the emperor's spoiled daughter.

Simply put, Lin Shan's current identity is a "female" Prince consort.

She is obviously the Second Young Miss, how did she turned into Second Young Master? She even wanted to marry the princess? Not long after, Lin Shan finally figured out the reason behind all of this.

It was said that, when Song Luo was born, her body was extremely weak, to the point where it nearly lead to a premature death. After that, Song Luo's father Minister Song Xian sent people to ask for the most prestigious fortune-teller in the Capital to come and consult about the baby's fate. After calculating on his hand for awhile, the fortune teller shook his head. He told them that Song Luo's soul had made a mistake during reincarnation. Originally it was supposed to become a male, but now it's a daughter. The weak body is the result of Hell's Ruler trying to take the soul back.

Song Xian became enraged when he heard this. No matter if it's a boy or a girl, Song Luo has already become a descendent of the Song Clan, how could he just want to take it back? He pleaded with the fortune-teller for a method to save his daughter.

This fortune-teller thought of a solution. Doesn't Hell's Ruler wish to retrieve the soul of Song Luo just because of her gender? If the Song clan raise Song Luo up as a boy, then Hell's Ruler would also be fooled and no longer pay it any mind.

What an excellent idea! Song Xian exclaimed.

But won't the girl be unable to marry for the rest of her life?

Eighteen years, you only need to wait eighteen years – The fortune-teller said after further calculation – by then Hell's Ruler would also forget about this matter, the young lady would also no longer need to pretend to be male. But within these 18 years, aside from family and close attendants, no one is allowed to find out about this. The more people who knows, the harder it would be to keep her life. Remember that!

After sending the fortune-teller off, Song Xian immediately sent people to spread the news. Not long after, the entire capital all heard about the Minister's Mistress giving birth to a second son named Song Luo. Everybody congratulated Minister's family for having two heirs, none of them any the wiser about the truth.

In the end, how many sons the Song Clan truly had should not have mattered to anyone but them.

However, the current problem were caused by the First Young Master of the Song Clan.

Song clan eldest son Song Lin Feng, appearance just like his name, features that shine like the jade tree in the wind, elegant and suave. He is definitely within the top three most handsome man in the capital.

Purely based on heredity, everybody thought that the Second Young Master, even if lacking the eldest' elegance, would at least be handsome and dapper. Especially after Lin Feng married, all the young girls with broken hearts transferred their hopes and dreams towards the mysterious Second Young Master.

Rumours about the Song Clan Second Young Master began to spread throughout every corner of the capital.

"I heard that Song Clan Second Young Master is even better looking than the eldest many times, his face as white as the moon, demeanor refined, personality extraordinary. It's just that ever since he was young he has preferred quietness, so he rarely ever goes out."

"I heard, Song Clan's second son this year just turned eighteen, the perfect age for marriage. I wonder which lucky girl will snatch him up?"

"Song Clan First Young Master already married the General's daughter, so the person the Second Young Master must want to marry,... at the very least.. has to be the royal family right?"

"The other day when I met Jiang Clan Young Miss, daughter of Jiang Shang, all she could talk about was Song Clan's Second Master."

"I heard the young Miss Zong, daughter of Zong Tai is also interested in the Song Clan Second Master??"

—

Just like that, the rumours about Song Clan's second son grew by day, almost everyone was curious about which young miss from what family could marry this

extraordinary man. Suddenly, a Royal decree was declared, extinguishing all the young single women's pinning hopes.

The Emperor sent out a marriage decree!

This can only be blamed on Song Lin Feng. One has to know, before Lin Feng married, he was famous as the capital's biggest lady killer, being worshiped by many girls, including the Princess Ming Yue.

It was said that the princess has long idolized Song Lin Feng ever since she had caught a glimpse of him, but because of her shy personality, she could only give the emperor a book with a letter hidden inside as her way telling her father her thoughts. Who knew, the emperor has a thousand things that need to be done, how could he find the spare time to read books? By the time he had found the letter, Lin Fang has already married the General's daughter.

It could be said that this wasn't really a big problem at first, at best Princess only carried some adoration for him, that's all. But now, if you want to blame someone you can only blame the Princess with her vague writing, in her letter she wrote that her only wish was to be married into the Song Clan. The emperor thought that with their eldest son already married, his daughter must be secretly admiring the Second Young Master.

No problem, marriage decree!

That's why Song Luo, or now Lin Shan, is having a terrible headache.

All of this was told to her by her maid Little Lu. Only now did Lin Shan understand that in this world there is no such things as secrets, also there is nothing Little Lu can't find out about. If this was the modern world, Little Lu would definitely become an excellent reporter.

At least, Lin Shan thought, the person with the biggest headache right now must be her father, Song Xian.

The old man nearly fainted when he received the royal decree. One must know, Song Lin Feng was already responsible for breaking the Princess's heart, now if the emperor found out Song Luo is a girl, Song Xian's head would have trouble staying on his shoulder.

"Wait a minute, when officials make a criminal offense, how are they

punished?” Lin Shan looked suspiciously at Little Lu.

Little Lu smiled and said “Young master, the crime of offending the emperor must be punished by completely eradicating the entire family line.”

“The entire family!!! Doesn’t that include me?” Lin Shan started to sweat profusely.

“That’s right, young master.”

“What about you?”

“Little Lu will live and die as your maid, Young Master. Little Lu knows no fear.”

Tears streamed down Lin Shan’s face.

You have no fear but I sure do! It’s not often one have the chance to live another life, and if the first thing that happens after my transportation was knife through the neck, what is the point?

Lin Shan suddenly had an ominous premonition.

PREVIOUS CHAPTER – –

CHAPTER 2

- TL: AmeryEdge
- Editor: LtBeefy

—

Song Luo and Princess Ming Yue's marriage has been arranged for the third day after Lin Shan came to this world.

This wasn't going to be a big deal, after all this is only a prince consort engagement event. All you need is a piece of cloth wrapped around the chest, a swaggering walk and a loud haughty attitude like in the movies and it will be fine.

Even so, this is still causing Lin Shan no small amount of anguish. She remember in her previous life, TV always advertise about those plastic surgery services using "Be a beautiful woman" as the slogan, but now that she has ended up with this chest that is obviously bigger than her previous one, her parents threw her a piece of white cloth to hide them.

"Lou child, this is an extremely important matter, it relates to the life of our entire Song Clan, we can't afford to make any mistakes. You are not allowed to take this cloth off, do you understand?"

Looking at the serious expression on her mother's face, Lin Shan swallowed the words she was about to say. Choosing between her chest and her small life, she still isn't very excited to pick living.

"It's okay to have a flat chest, life is more important" while repeating this mantra over and over, Lin Shang still didn't forget to order the Little Lu that was currently wrapping her chest: "Tighten it up a bit!".

"Yes!" Little Lu breathed a sigh of relief, she has succeeded in nearly strangling Lin Shan.

After being wrapped, Lin Shan clumsily put on the marriage gown and prepared to go and become a live-in son in-law.

In fact, according to the old teachings of “Wife follows her husband”, even if he was a prince consort he didn’t need to go and live with the royal family. Unfortunately, Lin Shan has terrible luck, meeting an emperor who “Adores daughters but scorns sons”. Even to his own children, the boys are easily sent to the frontline to die, while not a single hair on his precious daughter’s body is allowed to come to harm.

The royal escorts quickly arrived at the Minister’s house, aside from the marching bands, there were also a cavalry, led by the Guard Chief – the Holy Golden Sabre Guardian granted by the emperor – Lian Feng.

Just his title is enough to explain that Lian Feng did not have an ordinary background. On his waist hung the Holy Golden Sabre the emperor gifted him. Whether humans or gods, if they get in his way, he is permitted to cut them down, completely making all the ladies blindly worship his image of being a mighty hero. (1)

If not because he usually covers his face with a mask, and is also rumoured to be uninterested in romantic relationships, the title of being the most handsome man in the capital would also probably not be given to Song Lianfeng.

Little Lu was eating walnuts while passionately talking about Lian Feng, her spit flying everywhere, making Lin Shan curious.

“Little Lu, do you like him?” Lin Shan smirks while asking.

“Who out there doesn’t like handsome men? I also like First Master, it’s a shame that First Master seems to despise me... Master, why does your smile look so evil?”

Lin Shan puffed out her wrapped chest while wearing a sinister smile: “Your master will bring you to eat some handsome boy’s tofu!”

Master and servant headed to the main hall, where all the old and young of the clan has gathered. The crowd included some women who usually never leave their rooms, but now they are all at main hall, risking their life to peek at someone

Lin Shan shifted her eyes towards that direction, but she only saw a tall man wearing a black uniform whose back is facing her, his tight clothes made from high end materials complemented his fantastic figure. Lin Shan silently swallowed her saliva, facing Little Lu and said: “Wait for a bit later when I’m going in, I will “accidentally” push you onto him, then you can grope him all you like.”

Little Lu glanced at the Holy Golden Sabre next to Lian Feng, expression changing, whispered: “Master, can I not grope? I am having some regrets....”

“No way, didn’t a few days ago you said that you would follow me in life or in death? Right now your master is giving you the chance to eat a pretty boy’s tofu, and yet you refuse?”

Little Lu said with a distressing expression “Master, this is forcing the innocent to do evil!!”

The auditory sense of a martial expert are obviously heightened in comparison to normal people, Lian Feng could clearly hear the conversation between the master and servant. Unable to withstand it any longer, he sent a cold piercing gaze towards the two people who were hiding behind the curtains.

“Master, he’s looking this way!” The nervous Little Lu awkwardly used all her might to push the groom out.

That’s why, everybody in the Song Clan witnessed their Song Clan Second master throwing himself at the famous Guard Chief, while Lin Shan used this opportunity to “eat” the handsome man’s tofu.

After she finished her blatant groping, Lin Shan then lifted her head, beaming a smile at Lian Feng and said “Oh no! I was careless...” At this point, she shifted her attention to his silver mask, silently thinking “Hand-made! If you sell this it must yield quite a sum of money right?” This person’s eyes suddenly lit up with a crafty look.

Lian Feng mouths twitched, his cold eyes seem to penetrate a layer of frost into your bones, his hands gripping the Holy Golden Sabre tightly.

Song Xian is a clever man, seeing that the situation was heading towards an unfavourable direction, he hurriedly grabbed Lin Shan and said “Lian Guardian,

let me do the introduction, this is my son Song Luo". Finished speaking, he glared at Lin Shan "Little rascal, recklessly offending other people, and yet you still haven't apologised to Lian Guardian!"

Lin Shan lamented in her heart, you are clearly the Minister of a whole kingdom, but now you are intimidated by a mere guard? Isn't it just a sabre? Hm... that Holy Golden Sabre must have quite a high value too right?

As if he can feel the danger from Lin Shan's greed, Lian Feng's grip on the Holy Golden Sabre became even tighter by several degrees.

"Ahem!" Song Xian coughed.

Only now did Lin Shan react, her eyes reluctantly parted from the golden sabre. She spoke expressively "I'm very sorry, Lian brother".

Lian Feng's remain composed, he gave a slight nod and gestured "The sacred hours has come, Prince Consort, let us depart."

Right now there are a lot of people crowding in front of the Minister's mansion, the majority of which are young women, aside from wanting see the distinguished Lian Guardian, they also want to catch a glimpse of the Song Clan Second Young Master's face.

There was no one in the capital who doesn't know about the famous Song Clan First Young Master Song Linfeng, but there was rarely anyone who have met the elusive Song Clan second son. The rumours surrounding this Young master has long since spread throughout the Capital, everybody wanted to see if this Song Clan Second Young Master is as the legend says.

There was a saying, the bigger the hope, the bigger the disappointment.

By the time Lin Shan, who was wearing the groom's gown, finished coming out of the mansion with her fake haughty walk, everybody was whining in their hearts.

What nonsensical rumours! This Song Clan Second Young Master, although not ugly, pink lips white teeth like a girl, but next to Lian Feng it really was a case of duck besides swan, not an ounce of dignity.

The crowd in front of the Minister mansion that was so rowdy before, now

suddenly became halved. The biggest thing that came out of the trip for most people was being able to see the visage of Lian Feng and the Holy Golden Sabre. Regarding Song Clan Second Young Master, there definitely won't be anymore rumours about him.

A brown horse wearing red silk cloth was waiting in front of the Minister's mansion.

Lian Feng casually turned towards Lin Shan and gestured "Prince Consort, please get on".

"Can I not get on?" Lin Shan weakly said.

"Not an option." The other party firmly replied.

"But I can't climb on..." This war horse was clearly meant for a male to climb on, she is a woman, one with poor strength at that. Don't even mention horses, even donkeys would give her a hard time.

The corner of Lian Feng's mouth became twisted, he abruptly raised his hand. Immediately a servant came out and kneel next to the horse.

"Prince Consort, please." Lian Feng said.

This.. is this the legendary stepping on people back that TV always shown? Does it have to be this way? Not even a little consideration for human rights!!!

Lin Shan decided to compromise, waving her hands saying "Forget it, I'll climb up myself..". While pushing the servant out of the way, she poured all her strength into climbing on the horse.

As a result, everybody was treated to an extremely frustrating scene. The Song Clan Second Young Master, while combining both arms and legs along with all his efforts, still failed to climb on the horse's back. Even though his limbs were gripping tightly on the horse's body, he still couldn't climb up.

Everybody sweated in place for the poor horse....

Under the scrutiny of everybody, Lin Shan continued to try her best. Hmph! just a horse, want to make trouble for me? I will climb, I will climb, I will climb.... Hmph, I can't climb. T^T

Suddenly, someone from behind her gave her a small push. Before she could

react, she already found herself sitting solidly on the horse's back. Turning around, it was of course still Lian Feng behind her. Strangely, his position remained unchanged as if he never did anything.

This is the gap between ability! Lin Shan lamented sadly while looking up toward the sky.

--

(1) The sabre isn't some sort of magical powerful weapon as far I know, but it acts as his license to kill anyone, even royalty.

CHAPTER 3

- TL: AmeryEdge
- Editor: LtBeefy

—

In the situation where one is married into the wife's family, frankly put, the bride's only job is wait at the palace for the marriage ceremony. Unfortunately for the groom Lin Shan, not only does the ceremony take an ungodly amount of time, there are also a great deal of troublesome formality and customs on top of it, more burdensome than a common marriage by a hundred times. To a modern person, this process was truly torture.

Even so, this undertaking was not without harvest.

Inside the palace who doesn't want to curry the Emperor's favor? Today, the daughter that the Emperor loved the most is getting married, isn't this the best opportunity for them? A bunch of royal officials surrounded Lin Shan, constantly giving their congratulations while handing over a pile of blindingly bright gold, silver and jewellery.

Looking at the mass of valuables in front of her, all the tiredness disappeared and Lin Shan even become more devoted to the ceremony.

Lin Shan smiled happily as she looked at Little Lu ordering the servants to carry the gifts away while she continued to offer drinks.

Speaking of alcohol, Lin Shan couldn't stop praising herself. She knew that it would be hard to avoid drinking at a wedding, unfortunately her tolerance is scarily low. Afraid of accidentally revealing her secrets, she ordered Little Lu to switch the wine with water. When people looked, they all thought that this Prince Consort could hold his liquor, and applauded non-stop.

“Even though the prince consort looks frail, his tolerance is so high. He definitely lives up to the title of Minister’s son.”

“You really can’t judge with your eyes, the Princess has chosen a worthy partner, it’s such a beautiful union!”

....

Hearing these approving comments, Lin Shan could only hold in her laughter.

This is the best evidence for the benefits of wisdom! Only an idiot would drink real wine.

While she was getting carried away, trouble has found its way to her in the form of the Emperor.

“Luo child, today you have married Ming Yue, now that you are Our son-in-law, you must treat the Princess well from now on, understood?”

He is definitely worthy of the emperor title, only lightly saying a few words was enough to make Lin Shan feel guilty. I am a girl, how do I “treat” the Princess well? Do you want me to give her massages and backrubs?

Even though she was howling inside, Lin Shan still obediently nod “Your child will follow your Highness’s bidding”.

The emperor’s face broke into a wide grin, continuously nodding in approval. Finally he also did not forget to call out: “Servants, offer wine!”

Wine??? Once Lin Shan heard this, tears nearly escaped from her eyes.

Why didn’t anyone tell her about this wine gifting matter? Wine gifted by the Emperor cannot be rejected, furthermore, this wine can’t be switched by Little Lu. This wine, two cups was already enough to make her dizzy, if she drank some more, everything could be ruined.

Luckily she was clever, she knew that before she was really drunk she need to fake drunk. Behind her there was still a queue of people who wanted to offer her liquor, she could only fake drunk, hands holding the wine cup while her body slightly stumbles side to side.

“Song brother, be careful!” Suddenly a person held out his arm to hold her up, it was Third Prince, third brother of Du Ming Yue- Du Jing.

Speaking of this person, once again the list of most handsome of the capital must be mentioned. These past few days Little Lu has been gossiping non-stop about these people.

This person along with Song Lin Fang are tied for the title of third most handsome in the Capital, but both looks and personality of these two people are at the polar opposites.

Song Big Brother is known to be as graceful as a pearl, in the capital countless young women worshipped him, but he only poured his affection towards the General's daughter, treating his lover above everything else, even his own life. This has broken who knows how many young girls' hearts.

But Du Jing, a person also like his name, is a person whom never "because of a flower forget about the forest". Rumour has it, not only does he tease the neighbouring country's princess, he also toyed with countless girl's heart everywhere. But now he doesn't have even a concubine.

When Little Lu told her this, Lin Shan was be able to determine that this guy is one those who are "Human on the outside, beast on the inside." Now that she met him, she was sure!!! Just look at his face, two wandering eyes, loveless lips, any girls who follow him will definitely not have a happy ending.

Lin Shan spoke with some contempt "Little brother's tolerance isn't very good, Third Prince please kindly forgive!"

"Is that so?" Du Jing lifted his eyebrows, smiled with an understanding look "But I can't seem to smell any alcohol."

Lin Shan stiffened, realising that this was a formidable opponent, she quickly called out for Little Lu "Little Lu, come out and help me up".

Little Lu is also quite smart, on one side she held Lin Shan up, on the other side she shouted in complaint: "The Prince Consort is drunk..."

When the other people heard that the Prince Consort was drunk, they also stopped trying to offer drinks. Whatever happened, he is now a consort, and there is no need to make trouble with the royal family.

"Escort the Prince Consort back to the palace!" Finally Lin Shan was able to complete the all night socialising event, she quickly said her goodbye to all the

officials, not forgetting to act drunk, sloppily walked outside, in her mind repeating Stephen Chow's famous mantra: "I am an actor, I am an actor...". (1)

The show had to be continued until she reached the Princess's palace, by then everyone would have left. Even so Lin Shan still couldn't relax, because there's an even bigger headache waiting for her.

Faking drunk is easy, but consummation ...

Being a woman, Lin Shan could feel the pressure.

Lin Shan went inside the room with a dejected expression. The Princess's palace is huge, she still has sometime to think. What if the princess took off her clothes and jumped her? What can she even do?!? While absorbed in thinking, not long after she had reached the bedroom. The bride is sitting on the bed, face covered by the marriage veil, her red dress decorated with phoenixes in golden threads, at a glance it's obvious that it must have cost quite a great deal of money.

But currently Lin Shan doesn't have the frame of mind to think about these kind of things, she is still squeezing her brain thinking of a solution for this whole consummation debacle. Abruptly the bride stood up, threw the veil down revealing her cold gaze, angrily said: "You are not Lin Feng, don't you dare dream of marrying me! Get out!"

Lin Shan stood there stunned, but in a few seconds, she suddenly understood. Everything Little Lu said must have been true, this Princess thought that her father would marry her to Song Lin Feng, but with a little mistake, her target of marriage was changed. The Princess must have quarrelled with the king quite a bit behind the scene, but the royal decree was already sent out, the news announced, it's too late to take it back.

If so, they are both unwilling participants in this marriage.

Thought up to here, Lin Shang two eyes lit up. Ha ha ha, the heavens have helped me!!!

"Princess, I..."

"Get out of here!" Ming Yue screamed.

“Lin Shan happily bowed down and said “Yes, I will leave. I will guarantee to not bother the Princess again, please be at ease.”

It was now Du Ming Yue’s turn to be stunned. How can he be so happy to be kicked out? Hmph! Song Clan has no eyes for people, a bunch of useless servants, how aggravating!

“Go, get the hell out of here!”

Lin Shan quickly left the Princess’s palace.

--

CHAPTER 4

- TL: AmeryEdge
- Editor: LtBeefy

—

Du Ming Yue's attitude made Lin Shan feel that the heavens really do reward good people, she was more grateful to it then to her own blood parents.

But soon, she started feeling some regret: Now that the princess has kicked me out, where will I sleep? I can't just wear this marriage garb and sit here awkwardly all night. If the others saw, how could she keep her face?

While ruminating about the problem, she felt a sudden pang of hunger.

In regards to marriage ceremonies, the people who suffer the most are definitely the new bride and groom. Even though the bride couldn't eat anything all day, but at least she gets to just sit around in one place. The new groom must handle all the formality and socialisation matters with the families from both sides and government officials. The worst thing was they could only stare at the tables of delicious food and endure.

Now that she thought about food, her stomach began to grumble loudly.

Whatever, let's stop worrying. Let's find some food first!

Just then, an eunuch who was patrolling passes by. Lin Shan quickly pulled him into the corner.

The pitiful eunuch, he was just minding his own business in the middle of the night when a horrifying person with a pale white face wearing a red robe came out of nowhere and pushed him into a dark place. He was terrified out of his wits.

“HELP M...”

“Humph!” Lin Shan quickly covered his mouth, “What are you screaming for? I’m the Prince Consort!”

Prince... Prince Consort?!? The little eunuch slowly calmed down with some difficulty. Through the illumination of the moon, he discovered that it was really the Prince Consort. He became even more nervous. Mother! At this hour, the Prince Consort should be consummating with the Princess. Why did he run out here, and even using those passionate eyes to look at me?

Ai ya, could it be that the Prince Consort has special.. preferences!!?

The little eunuch was extremely stressed, he asked while shaking: “Prince Consort young master, ... I... Is... is there something you need?”

Lin Shan smiled brightly. She looked at him and asked “What’s your name?”

“Dear Prince Consort young master, my.. my name is Fu Quan.”

Oh, this little eunuch looks like a coward, must be very easily bullied!! Lin Shan eyes brighten, “Fu Quan, can you help me with something?”

I’m finished! Nine out of ten it’s “that” matter!!! Little Quan became even more scared, his entire body couldn’t stop shaking.

“Prince Consort... You.. What is your order?”

“Take off your clothes.”

Wha.. What?!?! Little Quan nearly fainted.

“Prince Consort young master... I... I... but.. but”.

“But your sister! Take it off quickly!” Lin Shan was annoyed. This damn little eunuch, I only want to borrow your clothes to go find something to eat, why the heck are you so tense!

Scared by Lin Shan’s threats, Little Quan eyes turned dim. He fainted!

“Troublesome!” Lin Shan frowned. She had no choice but to do everything by herself. Enjoy your new clothes!

Fu Quan had a tiny build, so her body fit into the eunuch’s uniform perfectly. Feeling pleased, she used the shadows to her advantage and sneaked out of the

garden.

The process of finding food was also successful. With the disguise of an eunuch, she just needed to head to the kitchen and lie that the princess was hungry and wanted to have a snack. Her harvest was considerable.

This is the intelligence of a modern person!

Lin Shan was feeling very satisfied, so she looked for a place to dig in. The palace was huge. She head to a nearby hill then sat down and ate.

Ai ya, the tastebuds of ancient people sure are inadequate, their food can't even be compared to an ordinary package of potato chips. How did all these Princes and Princesses swallow this down?

Even though Lin Shan was complaining, but due to her hunger, she tried her best to glomp it all down. She was planning to finish the meal quickly and find a place to sleep, but who would have thought because she was eating so quickly, she started to... choke!

"Water... water... water!" Right now, Lin Shan couldn't help but feel sorry for herself. She was always worried about her identity being discovered, causing her entire bloodline to be eradicated and dying a pitiful but dramatic death. But who would think that right now she was about to die from eating too fast!!!

Water! I need water!!!!

A normal person would start behaving erratically when under extreme stress, and start lashing out without thinking. Even though Lin Shan usually always tried to use her brain, but right now it has completely failed her, and she flailed around purely on instinct. A figure of a passerby suddenly appeared. She immediately latched onto their arms.

"Water.... Water.. I need water" Like a crab she clinged onto him with claws, begging for water.

The other person was stunned and were not able to even respond.

"Water... water!" Lin Shan thought this was the end. Suddenly, she caught a glimpse of the other party's wine bottle. She immediately snatched and gulped it down.

“Cough.. Cough...” After awhile of just intense coughing, the lump in her throat finally pass.

Finally took care of it!!! Lin Shan felt immensely relieved, sighing loudly, handing the wine bottle back. “Brother, my gratitudes!”

The other person continued to stand there in silence like a statue.

Lin Shan didn’t think much of it.. It’s the middle of the night, all the royal family must have come back to the palace and rest. This person must have been just a random guard, it must be no big deal. She spoke innocently: “Brother, don’t hold a grudge, I thought that wine wasn’t anything special anyway. If worst comes to worst, tomorrow I’ll give you another one! Brother, why aren’t you talking? Hey...”

Whoa! Lin Shan was speechless.

Oh lord! This guy is super handsome!

She could see that the passerby was wearing a guard uniform, his demeanor proud and serious, his face heroic, his nose tall and straight, one could vaguely sense a powerful aura coming from him. If not because of him wearing a guard uniform, Lin Shan would have cursed her luck for running into a prince or a big shot from somewhere.

What a Royal Palace, even a random guard has such good looks. Lin Shan felt an immense appreciation for life.

“Brother, you have grown up to be so handsome, stop keeping that serious look all day. Give me a quick smile, come on!”

The corner of the other person’s lips started twitching.

“It’s just a wine bottle, why are you so selfish? I understand, your pay must not be very much? I’ll tell you, the people up there only cares about themselves, why would they worry about the lives of the people beneath them? I wonder who take cares of the salary payment...” Lin Shan began to prattle on.

“Prince Consort” The other person abruptly spoke.

Lin Shan almost fainted. Not only are you so good looking, even your voice is so nice and smooth! Do you want to take my life?

“The Prince Consort must have a lot of spare time, even worrying about my salary? Even so, it’s best if each person worries about their own finances.”

“Hey.., do you know what this wine is? I feel sort of.. Hazy..” In the middle of their talks, she suddenly felt her legs weakening.

“Help me stand, I can’t... I..” Lin Shan wasn’t able to think of much more and held onto the other person’s arm.

Then, darkness befall her vision. She was passing out.

Even though she was fainting, she didn’t forget to take advantage of the situation and started groping.

Ooh, I like what I’m feeling... Oops, yup, losing consciousness.

--

CHAPTER 5

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: LtBeefy

[Amery: Our first day of launch went great. I'm super grateful of everybody's views, comments and votes in the polls. Here's an extra chapter of the winning series. Next week there will be more chapters coming. Enjoy!]

—

By the time Lin Shan woke up, she was already inside the Princess' Palace. Du Ming Yue was standing right next to her, glaring menacingly.

"I already kicked you out last night! What are you doing in my room now?"

Lin Shan just woke up from her drunken stupor, her mind was still quite foggy. Thinking back, she can vaguely recall yesterday's event, like when she was choking, and when she drank the wine of that handsome man, but whatever happened after that she had absolutely no idea.

"Princess, I really do not know." Lin Shan shook her head and said.

Du Ming Yue was so enraged she nearly jumped: "The Imperial Princess's palace isn't a place a man can just casually stroll in. Get out!"

Lin Shan was still feeling faint, but she nodded and clumsily stood up from the floor and prepared to leave.

Suddenly, an announcement came from outside: "The Emperor summons the Princess and Prince Consort to the Imperial study!"

Hearing the Emperor's title, both of them turned around at the same time and stared at the same direction. Du Ming Yue began to seem flustered.

"Fine, but later on when we meet Father, don't you dare mention yesterday's

matter! Do you understand?” She could act haughtily all she wants in front of Lin Shan, but in front of the Emperor she has no choice but to behave. She does not dare to argue with him, especially about important matters like this.

Even if you didn’t say anything I would already know, do you think I’m an idiot? Lin Shan cursed in her heart, but she also discovered something. The Princess’ attitude towards Lin Shan was always rude, but the slightest mention of the Emperor would cause her to turn nervous. It seems like the Emperor did not spoil her as much as the rumours had said.

Finding out one of Du Ming Yue’s weaknesses, Lin Shan’s mind began to turn, a scheme slowly forming.

After that, a group of maids entered the room and helped them get ready. Finished with their preparation, the eunuch brought them to the Imperial study. On the way there they met many servants. Upon seeing the two, everybody bowed and paid respect: “Good Morning Princess! Good Morning Prince Consort!”

This was the first time Lin Shan have been treated so courteously. She suddenly felt the need to act like a big shot: “Ai, morning morning, you have a good morning, you have a good morning too, everybody should have a good morning!”

The group of maids stared at the hilarious figure of Lin Shan who was half dazed half drunk while wishing them all good mornings non-stop. They couldn’t hold it for too long and all simultaneously lowered their heads while giggling. This result in Du Ming Yue, who was following them from behind, giving them a terrible glare and shouted:

“What a bold bunch of servants! Have you run out of things to do? Be careful or I’ll send you to the storage room as punishment. Get out of my sight!”

The maids fled as quickly as they could.

Lin Shan stood beside the Princess and shook her head. She quietly grumbled, hey Princess, you must win people’s heart with kindness. Kindness!

Du Ming Yue abruptly turned around, her glare directed towards Lin Shan “Song Luo, don’t you go thinking that just because Father have forced me to

marry you that you can do whatever you like! I know you carry a grudge against me, but if you use this chance to get back at me, I won't let you have a day of peace for the rest of your life."

When did I carry a grudge against you? I'm even wishing that you would hate me even more! Lin Shan chuckled quietly in her mind, but on the outside she nodded obediently.

"At least you know your place!" Du Ming Yue humphed, and then stepped forward arrogantly.

"Try not to fall over and die!" Lin Shan cursed under her breath.

The result was...

"OW!" Du Ming Yue really did fell down.

Whoa, what? Really?!?! Lin Shan became stunned, and then she abruptly burst out laughing.

The eunuch who was leading the way froze on the spot, his face filled with fear.

"Song Luo, you..." Du Ming Yue knew that she just lost all her face. She struggled to stand up, her face red with anger, she yelled:

"You... you Bastard!" You dare to make fun of me, the Princess?

But the Emperor chose this precise moment to enter the room.

"Yue-er, Luo-er, you both seems to be having fun, what happened?" The Emperor mood was very good, his aura refreshing and his footsteps light. He strolled towards them casually.

"Your child greets the Emperor!" Lin Shan quickly used the formality knowledge drilled into her by her parents to welcome the Emperor.

Du Ming Yue didn't bother to greet the Emperor, she immediately pulled on his hand and said: "Father! He.. he looked down on me!"

Very good Du Ming Yue, you dare to try to harm me. Lin Shan felt extremely annoyed, but on the outside she was all smiles: "Princess, don't embarrass me like that. Emperor, the Princess and I were simply playing around!"

How could the Emperor not know the personality of his own daughter? Looking at the smiling face of his son-in-law, and then at his daughter's red face, he could somewhat guess the situation. But he felt very pleased in his heart.

“Good good! This is youth! This marriage was definitely not a mistake! Good kid!” The Emperor waved his arm in front of an eunuch “Rewards!”

Rewards? Hearing this word, Lin Shan's eyes brighten up like a weasel, faintly glowing with a shade of greed.

Ooh, it seems like being the Prince Consort does come with some perks! Lin Shan gave a beaming smile while receiving the treasures the Emperor gifted. She didn't forget to go through all the proper formalities: “This child is grateful for the Emperor's generous gift!”

Du Ming Yue who was standing nearby was so angry that smoke seems to have risen from her head.

—

After coming back from their visit to the Emperor, Du Ming Yue wondered about Lin Shan's actions.

“Hey!”

“Hey!”

“Hey!”

“Song Luo!”

Only now did Lin Shan stop. She slowly turned around with her head lowered and spoke “What can I do for you Princess?”

“You...!” Today Du Ming Yue was feeling startled. She felt that she couldn't gain the upper hand against this person no matter what she tried, but with her position as the Royal Princess, she gnashed her teeth and pointed at Lin Shan: “Just then you humiliated me in front of Father on purpose didn't you?”

Lin Shan only smiled mysteriously.

“Very good, Song Luo, you.. you dare to bully me!” The princess who has been spoiled ever since her youth wasn't capable of dealing with this tiny amount of

injustice. She ended up using a young lady's ultimate technique: "First cry, then make a scene, and if that doesn't work threaten to hang oneself".

Unfortunately for the Princess, her Prince Consort was also a girl. Young girls would of course understand each other's hearts. Even though Lin Shan can't handle sophisticated scheming, she can easily take care of Ming Yue's childish tantrum.

"Princess, you accused me of bullying you, but do you have any proof?"

Du Ming Yue didn't think that Lin Shan would respond in such a manner, but she still pressed on: "Why are you still denying it? You... you made fun of me in front of Father!"

"Princess, you got it wrong!" Lin Shan stopped smiling, her face became incomparably serious.

"Did Princess ever think about the consequences of your tattling to the Emperor? What do you think will happen once he is angry?"

"This..." Du Ming Yue was speechless.

"If the Princess can't answer, then I'll say it in your stead." Lin Shan adjusted her clothes and then continued.

"Once the Emperor is angry, I will definitely suffer some punishment, but does Princess think that this won't affect you at all?"

"Me?" Ming Yue was suspicious.

Lin Shan continued her explanation: "That's right, my current identity is the Prince Consort, your husband. Once your husband is reprimanded, do you think that you will just get away peacefully? Don't even talk about the Emperor's anger, what about your reputation? You are the Princess of an entire country, but after being married for just a single night, your husband was immediately punished by the Emperor. What do you think others will think of this?"

Ming Yue's face slowly changed.

"Princess does not like this servant, and I you. But the Imperial decree have already been given, we are already considered to be married, what more do you think you can do about it now? Do you want to leave me or me to leave you? You

are scared of losing face, but what about me? Since fate have already brought us together as husband and wife, why don't we sit down and discuss things politely?"

Lin Shan's words hit all of Du Ming Yue's weaknesses.

It's true, she really was scared of tarnishing her honour! That's why she went through all the trouble of writing a secret letter to her father, and that was also why she didn't run to her father and turn the Royal Palace upside down when the marriage decree was sent out. She cannot disagree with a single one of Lin Shan's words.

After thinking for awhile, Du Ming Yue decided to make a compromise.

"Fine. What do you propose we do now?"

--

CHAPTER 6

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: LtBeefy, No1Fan

—

After negotiating for a while, Lin Shan and Du Ming Yue finished signing a contract based on five rules: Always respect each other's privacy, no touching of any kind, no interfering with each other's lives, both sides get equal shares of any spoils and finally they must live in peace.

After finishing the negotiations, Lin Shan spoke, "I have a request, I want my family servant to be transferred here as my personal maid."

Pervert! Du Ming Yue cursed in her heart, but she still nodded. "Fine!"

"I also have another request."

Du Ming Yue frowned: "Couldn't you just say it all in one go?"

"The gifts the Emperor have rewarded us with, I want half."

Du Ming Yue's lips twisted. Just then as they worked through their mutual agreement, she began to gain some good feeling towards this Song Luo, but hearing his words, all her sympathies went right out of the window "Shameless bastard! Just take all of it."

Lin Shan's eyes lit up like the moon "Really? Don't you dare regret it!"

Du Ming Yue: "..."

—

Ever since Little Lu returned back to Lin Shan's side, the both of them were continuously up to no good.

“Young Master, would you like to have some Mung Bean Cake?”

“Young Master, have some tea!”

“Young Master, do you need a back rub?”

“Young Master, let this servant accompany you on your walk in the garden.”

...

Du Ming Yue stood to the side and glared at them “Hey, are you really Song Lin Feng’s younger brother?” No matter how you look at it, it just seemed like the Song clan picked up some random punk on the street to use as a replacement.

“Yes really! I’m the real deal, the genuine goods. Definitely not a fake.” Lin Shan puffed out her chest and said.

Du Ming Yue asked coyly “Your brother isn’t like you is he?”.

It seems like this little girl hasn’t given up on her crush! Lin Shan pretended like she was shocked by her strange suggestion: “How could that be? My big brother is graceful like jade, brilliant, talented, loved and admired by all. If flowers saw him, they would suddenly bloom, if hens saw him they will instantly shoot out eggs, how can I compare to him?”

Du Ming Yue sighed lightly, “I knew that even without you telling me!”

Suddenly, Lin Shan became very mysterious, she lowered her voice and said “Even so... these are just the things others know about. My big brother actually has many deep secrets, and he only shares them with me.”

Huh? Du Ming Yue eyes brighten “Quick, tell me some of them!”

“Well, I could tell you, but right now I’m feeling sort of tired. I guess I’ll go for a walk. Little Lu!”

“Yes Young Master.” Little Lu instantly appeared by Lin Shan’s side.

“Let’s go, we’ll take a stroll around the flower garden!”

“Oh-kay!” Little Lu has been thoroughly educated by Lin Shan, she even knew how to speak English! What bright prospects she has!

Du Ming Yue was thrown to the side just like that. She became so angry that she stomped the ground repeatedly “Song Luo, you bastard! This Princess will

never forgive you as long as we both live!”

The path from the Princess’ Palace to the Imperial Flower Garden was overflowing with the fresh scent of flowers that came with the arrival of spring.

With the Prince Consort appearing, there was no small amount of palace maids whose eyes were drawn to her. Even though Song Luo wasn’t as handsome as Son Lin Feng, the same foundation was obviously there. Pink lips and pearl white teeth combined with refined men’s clothing, it could be considered a neutral kind of beauty.

The reason why Song Luo’s initial appearance disappointed so many young maiden’s heart was because their expectations were way too high. Furthermore, Lian Feng was standing right next to him with his domineering presence, how could Song Luo compete?

But right now, besides Song Luo was a completely normal looking young girl. That’s why at a glance, Song Luo body was exuding a regal aura, not a tiny bit average. Even more, Palace maids don’t usually get to meet many young men, now that a new Prince Consort had appeared it had definitely made the scenery more tolerable and refreshing. The group of palace maids would stop and stare while shyly giggling.

This made Lin Shan feel very happy, the girls in ancient times were too restrained. She remembered that she used to have a crush on a School Hottie (1), and she pursued him extremely aggressively, to the point where the poor School Hottie had to start looking for a boyfriend instead. Who would have thought that situation would now be reversed, she had become a man, and now has to endure the infatuated and flirtatious glances of innocent maidens. This made her feel so moved she wanted to cry!

Lin Shan suddenly felt very smug. As a woman I am successful, as a man I am extraordinary, this is something that had never happened before in history!

While Lin Shan was deep in her gloating fantasies, someone shouted: “The Third Prince is coming!”

Abruptly all the shyness that palace maids had previously exhibited disappeared without a trace, they all crazily flooded toward the same direction.

In but a moment, her new gain confidence was devastatingly crushed.

“Little Lu, I feel so.. Disappointed...” Lin Shan said painfully.

“Why does Young Master feel disappointed?” Little Lu blinked and asked.

Lin Shan complained: “How can people just care so much about outside appearances? How shallow!”

“Lian Guardian has also come!” Someone called out.

“AH!” Lin Shan eyes glowed, “Go! Little Lu, we must go over there!”

Little Lu shook her head “Young Master, how shallow of you!”

“Shallow your face! This Young master is only interested in the Golden Sabre. Its value must not be low!”

Little Lu: “...”

To the people inside the Royal Palace, when it comes to Du Jing and Lian Feng, whether looks or constitution, neither of them were ordinary. The chance of catching sight of them both in the Palace was extremely small.

But now the mythical moment had arrived, the two of them appeared together at the Imperial Flower Garden, causing others to be surprised. This caused the palace maids to be extremely excited, but they didn’t dare to approach them, only observing them from afar. The passion they exhibited right now was a hundred times more intense than when they saw Lin Shan.

Maid A: “Look, Third Prince’s smile is so intoxicating!”

Maid B: “But I think Lian Guardian looks more mysterious!”

Maid A: “Third Prince is more charming and suave!”

Maid B: “But Lian Guardian is heroic and righteous!”

Maid A: “Third Prince is just better looking!”

Maid B: “No way, Lian Guardian is the most handsome!”

...

Maid C: “Stop arguing the both of you. Don’t you see that they belong together?”

Listening in on the side, Lin Shan almost fell over. It seems like not only does BL have the power to dominate the entire world, it could even break through time and space. Excellent! How awe-inspiring!

Meanwhile, Lian Feng and Du Jing were currently talking.

“Your Highness, what did you find this servant for?” Lian Feng’s face was still covered with the silver mask this entire time, but based on his flat tone, one could tell that he was not very excited to be here.

“Don’t rush things Lian Guardian! This Prince only plans to bring you to a certain place.”

“This servant Lian Feng is the leader of the Royal Guard, my duty is to protect the Palace. I cannot leave no matter what, I hope Third Prince will forgive me.”

“Why are you always so serious? This Palace is full of guards, just because you won’t be around for awhile doesn’t mean trouble will start. Follow me for a bit, come on!” Du Jing said, pulling Lian Feng to follow him.

“I beg the Prince to let go.” Lian Feng spoke coldly, his hands gripping the Golden Sabre tightly.

Du Jing was not at all afraid. Suddenly he laughed loudly, leaning over to Lian Feng and whispered something.

Immediately Lian Feng froze on the spot.

“So? Will you follow me or not?” Du Jing smiled.

Lian Feng didn’t say a word, the two of them stood still in place... The Palace maids who were sneaking peeks saw these suspicious actions and began to screech painfully.

Maid A: “It can’t be, Third Prince and Lian Feng Guardian have this kind of special relationship...”

Maid B: “Why??? Both of them are... My heart is dead.”

Maid C eyes became bright with excitement “Such a beautiful couple, amazing couple, adorable couple...”

Lin Shan’s forehead became drenched with sweat as she stood to the side

observing the maids.

The high pitched screech of the palace maids caused Du Jing to turn around. He looked over, a maddeningly seductive smile slowly broke out, causing all the palace maids who couldn't take it any longer to drop onto the ground one after another. By the end, there was only one person left standing, whose eyes were glued to the Golden Sabre on Lian Feng's hip instead of Du Jing, her two eyes full of light.

"Song Brother, come here!"

A single sentence from Du Jing caused Lin Shan to return to reality. Only now did she realise "I've been found out!"

--

(1) 校草, or literally School Grass, is a title referring to the most handsome/beautiful looking male student of an entire school.

CHAPTER 7

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: LtBeefy, No1Fan

—

Being caught red handed, Lin Shan could only come out from hiding and walk towards them. Only now did Lin Shan truly realise the gap between her and them! The palace maids were now all wondering what was wrong with their eyes.

“The Prince consort really is nothing special!”

“That’s right, he isn’t even comparable to the Third Prince!”

“Next to Lian Guardian, the Prince Consort is a little bit too short...”

...

Lin Shan felt extremely wronged: “Why do you guys have such high standards? I’m dying under the pressure here!”

Seeing that Lin Shan was depressed, Du Jing smiled slyly and said, “Look at your poor complexion. Last night must have been very rough huh?”

“Ha ha ha...” Lin Shan awkwardly laughed, but she was cursing him quietly in her heart: “Rough your mother!!! I hope immoral people like you all run out of strength from indulging in “that” too much and die an early death!!!”

“Well, it’s your first, so it’s hard to blame you for having a difficult time. After getting some more experience you will be alright... Oh was it the Prince Consort’s first time?”

What sort of shameless person is this? Why are you talking about this matter with such a casual face! Lin Shan laughed painfully “Not everyone is so

experienced like Third Prince.”

“Haha, Song brother really praises me too much!”

I’m not praising you! How is your face so thick? Lin Shan was beginning to run out of retorts.

Right now, the person who had never spoken a word from start to finish – Lian Feng, suddenly interrupted the both of them and said, “If there’s no other matter, this servant will retire.” Finished speaking, he turned around to leave.

“Wait!” Du Jing stopped him while smirking “What do you mean no other matters? I have a very important matter. Song brother, seems like you are also not very busy, why don’t you come with us?”

Lin Shan cautiously asked: “Where?”

“Outside the Palace.”

Outside the Palace? Lin Shan were indeed interested.

Little Lu beside her became noisy: “Young Master, I wanna go outside the Palace too!”

“You can’t come!” Du Jing shook his head. He looked at them and smiled mysteriously: “This place, only men may enter...”

It took Lin Shan but a moment to catch his drift. They were heading to a brothel!... Lin Shan frowned while looking at Du Jing, he was not a simple person. Following him outside would not be very safe.

That’s why, Lin Shan turned around and looked at Lian Feng.

Lian Feng didn’t say a word, the eyes beneath his mask exuding a calm appearance without a wave of emotion.

“Lian Guardian, this Prince only worries about you, this great chance, others can’t even beg for!”

Outside of her prediction, Lian Feng didn’t reject him. She silently thought, Lian Feng must have a weak spot somewhere that the Third Prince has gotten a hold of. Who would have thought even the Lian Feng Guardian would have such a weakness, one really cannot judge based on appearances.

If Lian Feng has already agreed, why wouldn't Lin Shan come!? Wherever the precious Golden Sabre goes, I must follow! ... How valuable is that thing?!!
(Author's note: Little Shan Shan, you're too much~! TT.TT)

The three of them quickly left the Royal Palace and went to the most lavishing and expensive brothel in the Capital, the "Leaning Vermillion House".

Du Jing was definitely a regular here, the moment the horse carriage pulled up to the gate of the brothel, a flood of ladies in full makeup rushed out to greet them. They had pink lips and white teeth, some with beauty so breathtaking they were like blooming flowers. Every single one of them were "high quality" goods, and they were extremely professional.

Not only Du Jing, even the masked Lian Feng was warmly welcomed. Not mentioning his fame, just basing on his height along with his mysterious and cold attitude, it was more than enough to send all the girls wild.

Lin Shan were right behind them, but nobody even gave her a glance. A bunch of ladies, some sticking to Du Jing, some glued to Lian Feng, while Lin Shan awkwardly followed, such a pitiful sight!

Shallow, so shallow! Lin Shan quietly gave out her judgement while grumbling all along the way.

After everything settled, someone finally noticed Lin Shan. Even though the two people in front of them were special guests, people who the Third Prince brings must at least not be ordinary. Let's ask to make sure.

A young lady smiled sweetly and asked: "Third Prince, this guest is..."

"This person? Guess." Du Jing lifted a wine cup and spoke.

"Silly, I can't guess!" The women's plump chest shook as she spoke with a voice that was comparable to Lin Chi-Ling, causing Lin Shan to have goosebumps everywhere.(1)

"This is Song Clan's Second Young Master, Song Luo."

What? Song Clan's Second Son, isn't that the Prince Consort? Husband of Ming Yue Princess?

In a blink of an eye, all the ladies surrounding Lin Shan retreated.

No way! Lin Shan face turned into an ㄣ. Can you guys not be so obvious? You're killing me here!

A young lady awkwardly laughed: "Prince Consort hasn't been married for long, yet you already sneaked to our Leaning Vermillion House, could it be that there are some problems?"

"Ming... Princess Ming Yue will be very angry if she finds out." A different girl jumped in.

"Prince Consort should return early." A girl spoke out with sincerity.

Lin Shan quietly cursed in mind: "Du Ming Yue, what kind of reputation do you have that can cause everybody to shake in fear like this?"

"Men going out to have fun is a perfectly normal matter, why is everyone so nervous?" Du Jing spoke up, "Come, come, Song brother, I will buy you a drink. I still feel regret that I couldn't drink with Song Brother on the day you got married. Come now, Little Red, quickly pour wine for the Prince Consort!"

Little Red's body shook as she picked up the wine bottle and poured Lin Shan a drink. She then quickly pulled back out of fear.

Lin Shan pretended to be shy and said: "I thank the Third Prince. Unfortunately my constitution isn't very good, I hope I can drink this tea in place of the wine."

Du Jing frowned: "How could Song brother say that? On your wedding day, your drinking ability was astonishing!"

Astonishing your head! On that day this old grandma only drank water. Lin Shan was planning to continue rejecting the drink when the Manager of Leaning Vermillion House appeared, her smile reaching up to her ears "Third Prince, Bai Lian lady has come!"

Bai Lian? Lin Shan became curious. Could it be some sort of special character?

Of course, following behind the Manager was a super beauty!

A girl wearing a light blue uniform, bringing with her a gentle and fragile beauty with soft white skin, her flowing black hair shining. Bai Lian was a person just like her name, a dazzling white lotus that makes everything around it pale in comparison.(2)

Everybody, no matter who they were, could appreciate beauty. Lin Shan was the same, a one of a kind beauty like Bai Lian make her cannot help but stare.

Suddenly, Bai Lian lifted her head and said: “Bai Lian greets Third Prince and Lian Young Master...”

Lin Shan has once again been thrown to the side. =.=

“Lian brother, let me introduce you, this is the number one beauty of Leaning Vermillion House – Bai Lian lady. She has admired you for a long time... Little Lian, come and pour wine for Lian Guardian.”

Bai Lian softly walked towards them, her lovely demeanor enough to cause countless men to go crazy and all women to be jealous.

But Lian Feng act like nothing has happened. He continue to sit there with no reaction.

“Lian Young Master, have some.” Bai Lian’s sweet voice rang out, causing people’s heart to melt.

Lian Feng remained unmoved by her voice. He didn’t even turn to glance at Bai Lian once. Bai Lian’s hand that was holding the wine cup froze in the air. She had no idea what to do next while being so embarrassed.

Seeing Bai Lian’s eyes beginning to turn red from tears, Du Jing tried to smooth things over: “Lian brother, you shouldn’t act like that, why are you ignoring the good intentions of Bai Lian lady? Give me face and have a drink.”

Hearing Du Jing, Lian Feng could only take the wine cup. He downed it in one gulp and then slam the wine cup down determinedly with a “clack”.

Bai Lian planned to keep offering him wine, but seeing Lian Feng’s decisive actions, her arms stiffen. She felt extremely aggrieved, tears were already overflowing from her eyes.

“How pitiful!” Lin Shan shook her head while sitting on the side. Definitely a beauty with a poor fate. The person who likes you, you don’t like, but the person you love wouldn’t even give you a look. Beauty, you must wake up soon, lower your standards a bit, and find a more appropriate crush, as no matter what it would be better than getting yourself mixed up with the royal family’s matters.

While Lin Shan was still shaking her head in complaint, Lian Feng's face suddenly changed, his sharp eyes shot towards Bai Lian and he coldly spoke:

“What did you put inside the drink?”

--

(1) Lin Chi-Ling is a Taiwanese supermodel and actress, well known as being the spokesperson for China airline and Longines. [[Her Voice](#)]

(2) Bai Lian literally translates to White Lotus.

CHAPTER 8

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: LtBeefy, No1Fan

—

Lian Feng's wine was definitely drugged, but the person who did it was not Bai Lian, but Du Jing.

Why did Du Jing do such a thing? Simple, for the smile of a beauty. And this beauty, is the very same person standing in the room, Bai Lian.

This was a long story.

Bai Lian was the number one girl of the Leaning Vermillion House, people who want to even catch a glimpse of her must line up all the way from the front of the street. But Bai Lian very rarely took any guests, even Du Jing was no exception.

Du Jing was promiscuous and indulgent, and the entire capital's young, old, men and women all knew about this matter, but his reputation was still very good. This is partly because of his position as the Prince, but there was another crucial reason, that was he really understood a woman's heart. Even if it was a girl he has thrown away, they still spoke good things about him. Plainly put, this person is extremely calculating.

Du Jing really liked Bai Lian, seeing that she was always depressed, after doing some asking around, he found out the reason. It turns out that before she sold herself, Bai Lian was a daughter of a merchant. Once she followed her father outside to do some business negotiations, they ran into some bandits. Not only were they after the gold, they were coveting Bai Lian due to her beauty.

At that moment, Lian Feng who had left the palace to complete a mission saw

this situation and rescued them. From then on, Bai Lian quietly resolved to use her body to repay their saviour.

Later on, Bai Lien's family business began to fail and they were left with no money. Their debtors sold her into this brothel, but even so, she still has not given up her idea of repaying Lian Feng.

After finding out her deepest wish, in order to gain her smile, Du Jing thought of a ploy. Du Jing was definitely a person who only appears once in a thousand years. He would go out of his way to help the woman he likes to sleep with a different man. No wonder so many ladies would sacrifice themselves for him.

That's how they ended up with the current farce.

"What did you put inside the wine?"

When Lin Shan heard what Lian Feng has said, her heart was jumping. This sort of amazing drama, I was even lucky enough to witness! So exciting, so thrilling! (= _=)

But in that moment, Du Jing suddenly summoned a bunch of servants, his eyes like a tiger staring at its prey.

"Take his sabre away!" After Du Jing gave out his order, they all headed towards Lian Feng.

Sabre? Lin Shan were startled, her blood began to boil: Humph! You are a Prince of an entire country, just because of a Golden Sabre, you dare to poison your own Royal Guard's Chief?

Are you even human? Is the Golden Sabre's value that great?

Of course, Lin Shan had totally misunderstood the whole situation.

At that moment the drug has successfully spread throughout Lian Feng's body. His legs became weak, his entire body was burning, even when he tried to gather his inner strength, nothing came.

He knew that he had made a big mistake, his hands gripping the Golden Sabre on his hips and faced Du Jing's lackeys head on.

As the sabre was about to leave its sheath, starting a river of blood, a person jumped out right in front of him.

“Everybody, stop your hands!”

Hearing this earth shattering shout, everybody was startled. Only when they gathered had their wits did they recognise the Prince Consort.

Song Luo was currently standing in front of Lian Feng, shielding him while wearing an extremely angry expression.

Even Du Jing was surprised. He has always been good at judging people, he thought that this Song Luo was just a pervert with a weak-will. He thought that this guy would just simply stay out of trouble and know his own place, but who would have thought he would jump out and destroy his plan. What a headache!

“Song brother, this Leaning Vermilion House has many beauties, you can have whoever you want, don’t get in the way of my good plans!”

Beauties your fart! This grandpa only needs the Golden Sabre! Golden Sabre!! Lin Shan became even angrier, she continued to stand in front of Lian Feng, not moving a step.

Du Jing began to feel annoyed “Song brother, if you won’t listen to reason, then deal with the consequences!” he finished speaking, then he motioned to the servants: “Go!”

Between the Prince and Prince Consort, the servants obviously knew who to listen to. They intimidatingly approached her like a group of wolves.

Lin Shan panicked, but in the midst of hardship a brilliant idea appeared. She yelled out, “Whoever dares to do anything, I will report it to Ming Yue Princess!”

Just with a sentence, everybody stopped.

Even if the bunch of servants were currently all intimidating like wolves...the Princess is a tiger!

Between the Princess and Third Prince, everybody chose the Princess. If they cause a problem with the Prince, they just need to find another power to rely on. But if they offend the Princess, they are offending the Emperor himself.

“Prince Consort... Tell... Tell them all to get out.” Lian Feng stood behind Lin Shan and weakly said.

Lin Shan nodded and shouted: “ I will count to 10, you all better get out before

I have finished. If anyone remains after I finish counting, I will ask the Princess to bring you to the Royal Palace, females will become maids, men will become eunuchs! 1, 2, 3, 10!

Immediately, everybody bolted from the room, and the lackeys even fled like the wind while holding on to their crotch. Even Bai Lian lady – her beauty and demeanor comparable to Lin Daiyu, also left. Finally, only Du Jing was left. He looked at Lin Shan not knowing whether to laugh or to cry.

“Prince Consort, the truth is...”

“Get out” Quickly get out of here. I won’t let you snatch this grandpa’s Golden Sabre. Don’t even mention one measly Third Prince, even thirteen Third Princes wouldn’t be able to.

Du Jing could only shake his head, swallowing the other half sentence of “... I drugged him with an aphrodisiac.” down to his stomach. He looked at Lin Shan with a look of “Pray for your own safety!” and left, locking the door behind him. He felt extremely angry, even though he was a Prince, a damn Prince Consort dared to threaten him, he has no face left! Only after making sure that the door was tightly locked, would he leave to find a lady to entertain himself with.

With only Lin Shan behind, she thought, I bravely defended the Golden Sabre like that, at least you must let me touch it!

Thinking that, she giggled greedily, planning to go snatch her prize when she suddenly froze.

Hey hey hey,... why is your complexion under that mask a little... Weird? Why are you so red? Hey, why are you getting closer to me?

Suddenly, Lin Shan understood.

Du Jing, you bastard!!! You even drugged him with aphrodisiac in order to steal the Golden Sabre. I... I ... gotta get out of here.

She ran towards the door, but she discovered: It’s locked!!!

At this moment, Lin Shan had only one thought: my innocence... you must prevail!

CHAPTER 9

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: LtBeefy, No1Fan, Azusky

—

The door was definitely locked very tight. Not only that, due to Lin Shan's previous threat, everybody has already retreated far away from the room. Nobody dared to get closely. No matter how loud Lin Shan knocked on the door no one would come.

Right now, the person behind her had already approached very close. Lin Shan could detect the unique male odor coming from Lian Feng's body, her heart was overcome with fear.

A hand touched her shoulder.

Lin Shan's body nearly shot into the air.

"There's no need to be so excited! I'm a man! Man! Look closely! I don't even have a chest!" Lin Shan turned around, slapping her chest repeatedly.

I'm actually being partially honest right now! Why must it be like this, you haven't even touched me yet but I already want to vomit blood.

Seeing that the other side had no reaction, Lin Shan slowly opened her eyes, peeking at Lian Feng. It's hard to describe his current facial expression, there was a weakness to it, combined with overwhelming lust, but inside that lust was a trace of intelligence.

"Prince Consort, you... don't need to worry..." Since he was drugged, even speaking was difficult for Lian Feng. But thanks to his strength, he was still able to hold himself back.

“You’re like this, how can I not worry?” Lin Shan pulled on his mouth.

Lian Feng’s eyes twitched: “Prince Consort, please be at peace... With my internal strength... it’s possible to hold on.”

“Really?” Lin Shan inspected his face, it seemed like he wasn’t lying to her. She was temporarily relieved and began to pat his chest strongly “Oi, why didn’t you say so earlier? Made me worry to death! Ooh, this feels pretty nice!” =_ =

“Stop touching me!” Lian Feng’s expression worsen, his voice full of caution.

Lin Shan quickly retreated, her face aggrieved: “... Didn’t you say you can control yourself?”

On the other side, Lian Feng’s emotions were in turmoil. Just then, Lin Shan’s touch has left a burning feeling on his flesh. There was a revolving fire in his body, threatening to explode outward. His eyes became dull, the person in front of him slowly morphed into the figure of an attractive young woman. The scent she was releasing had a vaguely feminine touch, causing him to subconsciously inches closer in order to find out the truth.

Lin Shan was still sighing in relief when she suddenly noticed Lian Feng who were once again approaching her slowly, his sniffing nose aiming for her face. Terrified, she quickly stepped back, her back hitting the door.

Lin Shan could feel that the closer he got, the hotter his breath becomes, causing her back to be drenched with cold sweat.

Brother, I only care about your golden sabre, there’s no need to use your body to repay me! If worst comes to worst, you can keep your sabre! Lin Shan was on the verge of tears, even though his body was nice, there has to be a reason why he always wore that mask. He might have even been injured by acid! If that was the case then I wouldn’t profit at all! Lin Shan screamed loudly, her hands scrambling all over the door.

In that moment, Lian Feng’s mind was under a powerful struggle. After the previous wave of emotions, he recovered temporarily . Realising that he had lost control and was right next to Song Luo, he felt ashamed and started to apologise: “I... AH!” After releasing a painful yell, the Legendary Golden Sabre Guardian, Leader of the Royal Guards — fell face flat on the ground.

Looking at Lin Shan, she was holding a wooden pole used to lock doors. She breathed out in relief: “Oh Mother! That was dangerous!”

Looking at the Lian Feng who fell on the ground, Lin Shan slowly regained her composure, before quickly panicking again. Isn't he the leader of the Royal Guards? How did I knock him out with just a wooden lock? Twitch a little so I can tell if you are still alive! She kicked Lian Feng with her shaking feet, but there was no response.

Ai ya! Did you die just from that? Lin Shan was horrified, she quickly knelt down, and attempted to measure his breath. Perfect, perfect, you're still alive. You only passed out.

Lin Shan breathed out once more, her eyes brightened as she looked down: “Golden Sabre?! Good opportunity!”

The hidden evil desire in Lin Shan's mind appeared, she looked at Lian Feng who was unconscious on the floor and then at the golden sabre. Her inner heart was struggling ceaselessly. In the end, rationality lost.

Brother, for better or worse, I was the one who saved the Golden Sabre and prevented it from falling into other's hands. I also only smacked you around a little bit, let's call it even. Your Sabre... let me borrow it. Once she has made up her mind, Lin Shan's evil claws shot out towards the Golden Sabre.

Move! Why aren't you moving? Lin Shan looked closely and saw that even though Lian Feng has passed out, his hands were still gripping the sabre tightly. The power behind his grip was terrifying, and no matter what she did it wouldn't budge.

Are you serious? Isn't it just a damn sabre? Lin Shan felt depressed, no matter how much she tried it wouldn't move an inch. Forget it, let's just say you owe me one! Lin Shan was out of breath and tired. She sat down and stared at Lian Feng while sulking.

Hey, how valuable is this sabre? Even the Third Prince wanted it, and you just won't let it go. Could it be some ancient artifact? Lin Shan thought that this Sabre must truly be an expensive weapon, the more she looked at it the more annoyed she felt. Her foot shot out and kicked Lian Feng again. Seeing that he continued to lie there in silence, she used both her feet to kick him repeatedly to

vent her anger, but the result was that he began to move.

What are you mumbling? Didn't you pass out? Lin Shan became scared, she quickly ran back a small distance and stared at Lian Feng.

Lian Feng's body shook, but after awhile there were no more changes, he still laid there frozen.

Lin Shan looked from afar, her eyes scanning him from head to toe. If she was honest, this guy's body was really first class. His waist, legs, hands... Unfortunately, he wore a mask. It's the same kind of mask as The Phantom of the Opera wore. It's probably because his face has been terribly scarred, how pitiful...

Wait! This mask, it must be worth a lot right?

Our friend Lin Shan had a special eye for valuable objects, no matter the time or place, her eyes always ended up at the most valued treasure around. The thing called a naturally greedy soul, basically describes her perfectly.

Being careful of waking Lian Feng, Lin Shan cautiously approached. Her sinning claws once again reached out, this time for the mask on Lian Feng's face..

Right now, Lian Feng didn't move even a bit, so Lin Shan casually took off his mask. But her attention immediately shifted from the mask to his face – It was that guy she met on her wedding night!

Lin Shan was full of regrets, her stomach was churning. Why are you wearing a mask when you look like that? If I knew it was you earlier, I would have let you have your ways! You can do your best without holding back. Don't worry about me being a fragile flower, I can really take it all!

(Author: Little Shan Shan, what will we do with you? =_=)

CHAPTER 10

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: LtBeefy, No1Fan

—

The next morning when Lian Feng woke up, the effect of the drug has subsided, but his head was still dull, and his chest was struggling for breath. He looked around and saw the Prince Consort Song Luo sleeping on top of him, drool overflowing all over the place. Lian Feng couldn't help but frown, he was going to wake the other person up but who knew that suddenly their body would become like a little kitten who then snuggled deeper into his bosom, licked their lips and continued to sleep.

His figure was no different from a woman, Lian Feng paused his hand in mid air. His eyes suddenly panicked, he remembered what happened yesterday when he was drugged and nearly committed some unimaginable crime, his cheeks reddening.

Even though he was the leader of the Royal Guards, ever since he was young he has never had any contacts with female, and he also didn't want to get into any trouble with woman so the rumours have always praised him as a good man. But in reality, his feelings on this matter was like a blank white piece of paper, that's why last night when the drug was affecting his emotions, he was not able to hold back. If not for a smack from Song Luo's wooden stick, he would have ran out of methods, and who knows what kind of horrible situation might have resulted.

But now that one thought about it, even though this person looks weak with thin arms, a single strike with the wooden pole was extremely powerful, in comparison with the current kitten like posture which was totally different.

No matter what, he was still a man, how could he be compared to a woman who can't even kill chickens? Lian Feng suddenly felt that his previous thought of comparing Song Luo to a woman was laughable, his heart relaxed and he determinedly shook him awake.

Feeling that someone was shaking her, Lin Shan who was still sleepy opened her eyes, slowly she saw a masked person come into view. Only after a while did her mind caught up with her, she suddenly jumped up and hid like she was being chased by a demon.

"You you you.. Don't you come over here!" Even though she still hasn't woke up fully, but she still can recall last night's matters, especially about how she smacked him with the wooden pole using all the strength she has saved up since she was baby, and how her hands still hurts. Handsome men of course make the scenery more beautiful, but if you make this handsome man angry, especially with his sabre still on his hip, it won't be a joke.

Seeing Song Luo so nervous, Lian Feng was startled, and immediately got the wrong idea. Could it be because yesterday I scared him so badly, that now he's like this? He felt really guilty in his heart: "Prince Consort please don't worry, the drug has subsided, I can currently control myself fully."

Because you can control yourself that I am scared! I'm scared that you will come after me for revenge! The more Lin Shan heard, the more scared she became. She continuously retreated, wanting to hide underneath the table.

Poor Lian Feng really didn't know what kind of crime he committed last night, his guilt turned into shame, the Royal Guard Chief who has been through countless battle and difficult missions currently has no idea what to do.

After Lin Shan hid behind the table for awhile, she saw that Lian Feng really didn't seem to plan on revenge, so she risked asking a question: "Your.. your head... Is it alright?"

Lian Feng misunderstood again! Even though the Prince Consort was scared of me, he stilled worried about my injuries, what kind of overwhelming kindness is this? Lian Feng was strongly moved.

"Dear Prince Consort, this servant is alright."

“Really? Are you sure?”

“I am sure.”

Seeing that he was being sincere, Lin Shan breathed out in relief. If his head was okay, he won't need to take revenge, so she slowly crawled out from the under the table, blinked her eyes and look at Lian Feng full of admiration: “Hey.. we should return to the Palace.”

Lian Feng hesitated, he suddenly felt speechless. After awhile, he nodded: “This servant understands.”

They rented a horse carriage, left Leaning Vermillion House and headed back to the Palace. On the way Lian Feng remained quiet like usual while Lin Shan who was sitting besides him was babbling non-stop.

“Hey Lian Guardian, I should say, you were too careless. The other party asked you to drink wine and you drank it, why don't you remember what kind of person Du Jing is, he is obviously a freak, his face is human but his heart is of an animal, just a glance will tell you that he is evil, from now on don't mention wine, you shouldn't accept water from him!”

—

“ACHOO!” Du Jing who was inside his palace suddenly sneezed, his hands massaging his nose, “Little Fu Zi, I feel like someone is cursing me...”

The junior eunuch Sun Fu next to Du Jing quickly said, “One sneeze means somebody misses you, Your Highness.”

—

Lian Feng's mouth twitch, but he didn't reply.

Lin Shan continued: “I knew him inviting us outside was definitely not a good thing, what a failure of a prince, his mother, even my Golden Sabre... Ah, I mean, is he looking down on you? What a pig... no no no! Even comparing him to pigs is shaming the pigs!”

—

“Atchoo!” Du Jing sneezed once more, “Little Fu Zi, are you sure nobody is cursing this Prince?”

“Your Highness, sneezing twice means somebody misses a lot.”

“AChoo!”

“Three times means somebody misses you endlessly.”

“Achoo, Achoo, Achoo!!”

Sun Fu wiped his sweat: “Your Highness, have you caught a cold?”

Du Jing: “...”

—

Just like that, they came from the Leaning Vermillion House to the Royal Palace, Lin Shan continued to go on and on cursing Du Jing along the way, her voice not letting up any anger. Poor Lian Feng, on the way he has to sit there and listen to it all, his mental strength was completely depleted, his face harden in pain. But our friend Lin Shan didn’t pay attention to any of that.

“Prince Consort.”

“Shamelessness in itself is not scary, but what’s scary is his shamelessness combined with his greed, the shameless people like him are really invincible..”

“Prince Consort!” Lian Feng raised his voice.

“Ah?” Lin Shan jolted, her face nervous: “What? Did something happen?”

Lian Feng looked at her then said, “Prince Consort, we have returned to the Palace.”

“Oh? So quick!” Only now did Lin Shan woke up, she awkwardly smiled, “Ha ha, I was too busy cursing him, I didn’t pay attention... Lian Guardian, next time we get the chance we should both curse him together, that kind of person deserves it, if you don’t curse him he won’t feel relaxed... Ah!” As the horse pulled over, she was busy talking smack about Du Jing and accidentally fell off.

Luckily Lian Feng was quick with hands and fast with his eyes, he quickly reached out to hold her.

Lin Shan only saw a flash as her body flew through the air before she was

abruptly stopped. Opening her eyes, she saw the sunlight reflecting behind Lian Feng. Her eyes became deep with emotion, the silver mask reflected dazzling lights as a strange feeling crossed Lin Shan's heart, but this was quickly snuffed out by a guard who ran up to them.

The guard's face was pale, he hurriedly said: "Lian Chief, why are you back only now! Big trouble has happened! The Palace was infiltrated by assassins last night!"

--

CHAPTER 11

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: No1Fan

—

Intruders? Hearing this, Lin Shan became excited, and her curious eyes once again wandered. Her ears perked up to listen in.

But as the guards whispered to Lian Feng, their faces became grimmer, especially the face of the little guard, who was turning paler and paler.

Lin Shan felt that something was not right. Could it be that some big disaster had happened? As she was preparing to ask, Lian Feng had already come to her side.

“Prince Consort, I have some matters to attend to, please return the Palace for now.” His voice was as calm as ever, as if there was no big event that happened.

“The intruders...”

“Prince Consort, you need not worry, the intruder have been caught.”

So they had already been caught! Lin Shan breathed out in relief, and once again became curious: “Well, I am not that busy, why don’t you bring me with you to have a look?”

“While the intruder have been detained, we don’t know if they had any other accomplices. Right now the entire capital is under lockdown, I think Prince Consort should return to your palace quickly.”

Accomplices? Hearing this, Lin Shan was cautious. Even though she really wanted to go see the infamous palace intruders from legends, it seems like her small life might be more important. She nodded repeatedly and prepared to

leave. But just as she took several steps away, Lian Feng suddenly called out to her.

Lin Shan stopped, turned and look at the tall figure standing underneath the bright sun light, his long shadows extending endlessly behind him. He looked incomparably serious.

“Thank you.” Lian Feng spoke, his voice even and plain.

Lin Shan did not reply. She only smiled, nodded, then turned around and left.

—

From the gate to the Princess’s Palace, Lin Shan’s eyes twitched non stop. Remembering Lian Feng’s demeanor just before, there was an unknown feeling of unease welling up in her heart.

Just as she made her way back, she ran into Du Ming Yue who was leaving the palace. The other party was arrogant and aloof like usual and walked right by her without giving her so much as a look. She just held her head high and swayed her hips gently on her way out. She thought she could use this chance to show off her prestige as the Royal Princess, but who would have thought that Lin Shan didn’t even spared her a glance.

Suddenly, Du Ming Yue became angry and shouted: “Song Lou, stop right there!”

Lin Shan was deep in thoughts, but the piercing shout stopped her on her tracks. Looking around, she discovered Du Ming Yue standing behind her, her eyes glaring angrily. The servants behind her were all cowering.

“How dare you not greet this Princess?”

Greet your head! Lin Shan swore quietly, her heart was currently in turmoil, and she did not have the energy to play around with the Princess. She only spoke, “Princess, you really knows how to joke. Since ancient time, all husbands are greeted by their darling first. You really don’t know how to make use of your education.”

“Who.. who is your darling!” Du Ming Yue blushes, her momentum greatly weakened.

“How strange, I and Princess have already bowed to heaven and earth and consummated, if Princess isn’t my woman, then are you the dog and cats on the sidewalk to me? Of course, if the Princess don’t mind, then I also do not.”

“Song Luo, you, you...” Du Ming Yue gnashed her teeth, her fingers pointing directly at Lin Shan, speechless.

“What about me?” Lin Shan pushed out her chest. This old grandma’s chest is even bigger than yours! What are your worth in comparison? “If there are no other matters, I will retire to my room to get some rest. I had a bit too much fun last night at the Leaning Vermillion House.”

Seeing Lin Shan retorting her words, Du Ming Yue became blind with rage, but suddenly her mind caught up to the words Lin Shan said, “What did you say? You, you went to the Leaning Vermillion House?”

“Dear Princess, I originally did not want to come, but the Third Prince forcefully pulled me along. It was impossible for me to say no. Ah, I am so tired now, I need to go have a nap, no need to say goodbye.” Lin Shan then turned around and giggled evilly, “Du Jing, you dared to compete with me for the Golden Sabre, go die!”

Of course, Du Ming Yue’s face immediately changed: “Du Jing, very good! You dare to help him play around! You’re definitely not going to live!”

At that moment, the servants behind Ming Yue looked at Lin Shan’s departing figure, and their eyes showed signs of worship: “Prince Consort is so amazing, even the Princess does not dare to go against him! Our Hero!”

From then on, rumours of the Princess being scared of the Prince Consort spreaded, and Lin Shan instantly became a bright and famous figure. Her attractiveness drastically increased overnight, and she became an idol to all palace maids and eunuch and guards in the Royal Palace. She will soon end up in the top 10 in the 108 Most Handsome Men the Capital list, her fame known far and wide.

Of course, this was a later story, right now Lin Shan still doesn’t know about how powerful her control was over the Princess. She was currently sitting next to a table, cracking walnuts while thinking about the events this morning.

Strange, isn't it just a measly intruder? He had already been caught, even if the Emperor sent out punishments, at worst it would just be reprimanding their carelessness... Wait! Lin Shan's heart suddenly jumped.

Lian Feng is... a royal guard, right? Yes!

And he is also the leader of the royal guards, right? Yes!

Last night, he was not at the royal palace, right? Yup!

Doesn't that mean that he has failed his duties? Indeed!

So he will be heavily punished, right? Bingo Bingo Bingo!

My mother! Lin Shan slammed the table filled with walnut shells. No wonder this morning Lian Feng's composure was one of "Piercing wind, freezing river of Yi. The hero fords, and he never returns!" (1). It took me half a day to think of the possibility of him getting punished.

It's all over! They say that being near kings are like being near tigers, this guy had provoked the emperor's anger, he will definitely lose his head, but if that's so... Lin Shan suddenly felt that this was unbearable. What's more, last night he was even smacked on the head by me with a stick, it seems like I am partially at fault here.

Lin Shan couldn't decide the more she thought about it. She paced around her room back and forth, finally she left to see the current situation.

At that moment, Little Lu burst inside the room and quickly said: "Prince Consort, you are finally back! Last night was scared me witless! I heard that the intruder was very formidable! He was tall! And Big! And his head was massive! He has three swords! He even knew how to fly!"

Are you trying to say he's Superman? Lin Shan cringed, but she asked, "That's right, I heard that the intruder have been caught?"

"That's right." Little Lu nodded, "I heard that it took all the great experts in the palace combined to capture him. That intruder was merciless, each slash of his blade result in a fallen head. Dozens of guards have lost their lives."

Lin Shan was stunned: "And the Emperor..."

"Luckily last night the Emperor was not sleeping inside the Royal Bedroom, so

he was not harmed. That's right, what's more! Last night after the intruder have been discovered, there was not a shadow of the Royal Guard Chief Lian Feng. The Emperor seems to be extremely angry, this morning he have already summoned Lian Feng for judgement."

Lin Shan panicked in heart and became fiddly.

"How... how is he?"

"Of course he was punished! Even though the Emperor have always been partial to him, but this time he disappeared at the worst time. I heard that his Royal Highness's visage was extremely furious, he already sent out the punishment of twenty lashes. Don't you look down on those lashes, those are especially made, they have many painful thorns weaved together inside them, ... Ah, Prince Consort! You, where are you going?"

Lin Shan had already long rushed out of the door, her figure fleeting.

--

[Amery: We made a magazine! The 12th chapter of Your Highness is already published in it. If you don't want to wait a few days for the next chapter, grab the magazine now and have a read. There are also glossaries and other goodies inside. [LINK](#)]

(1) A common Chinese quotation from Biography of an Assassin. It basically talks about heroes who are about to embark on suicide missions.

CHAPTER 12

- TL: AmeryEdge
- ED: No1Fan

—

From the Princess's Palace, she searched and asked for directions. Finally she was able to find out where Lian Feng was, but an alerted guard came out and stopped her on her track.

Seeing that the person was the Prince Consort, the guard greets her politely, his expression was filled with worry: "Greetings Prince Consort, we have already escorted Lian Chief back to his room."

"Where is he currently? Where is the Royal Physician? Why didn't you call him here?"

"This matter..." The guard's face shifted, "The Royal Physician had already came by, but Lian Chief said his punishment this time was due to his own fault, and told the physician to return..."

Is he an idiot? Lin Shan was feeling very anxious, twenty lashes is not a joke. This damn Lian Feng, punishments are punishments, wounds need to be tended to! She spoke, "Let me in."

"Ah!" The guard quickly stopped her, "The Chief already ordered that I must not allow anyone to come in. Please don't put this servant in an awkward position."

Lin Shan was growing annoyed: "Get out of my way, I am the Prince Consort! Are you going to listen to your Chief or me?"

The guard said full of anguish: "The Chief..."

“You!” Lin Shan gnashed her teeth, “You want me to tell the Princess about this matter?”

“...” The poor guard shivered at the mere mention of the Princess, and hastily said, “Prince Consort, this servant will leave, you can... do whatever you wishes...”

Thank you Princess! Lin Shan quickly ran towards Lian Feng’s room. Before she could even enter it, the sound of something falling rang out.

She quickly rushed inside to find Lian Feng, whose body was ghostly pale, struggling to stand with a fallen cup on the ground. He must have accidentally dropped it while trying to get a drink.

“Ah! I’m here, I’m here!” Seeing that he was unstable, she quickly ran to his side to helped him up.

Just as her hand touched his shoulder, she heard a soft grunt, following which she could feel something sticky on her hand. Lin Shan was shocked, her hands quickly retreated. Her fingers were covered in the blood that was overflowing on Lian Feng’s shirt.

Lin Shan had never witnessed this kind of sight. She was terrified: “This... that.. your... your back...”

“Prince Consort, please do not worry, this is merely a flesh wound...” Even though he said so, he was barely able to stand and fell on her.

“Ah!” Lin Shan only realised by the time it was too late. Luckily there was a table behind her, or they both would have fell on the floor.

“I didn’t mean to, I... I am a little tired... Prince Consort please return...” Lian Feng forced himself to up, his hands on her shoulder, his lips pale. He was extremely weak at the moment.

“Return your face!” Lin Shan couldn’t hold back and shouted at him, “Get on the bed and rest! Take off your clothes! Medicine! Where are the medicine?” These kinds of battle hungry idiots will always have some sort of healing herbs around.

“Prince Consort, I have been punished deservingly...”

“If you don’t listen to me, I’ll mention to the Princess that our Royal Palace is lacking some eunuchs. I also noticed that there seems to be a surplus of guards in your squad...”

“Swash swash” sounds sounded out, all the guards who were peeking in through the windows immediately ran away. Not even a shadow was left.

Lian Feng: “...”

“The medicine is in the second cupboard over there, inside the red bottle.” Lian laid down and reluctantly answered her.

Lin Shan followed his direction and took out the medicine herbs, while at it she casually let her hands run all the blue vase sitting on the cabinet. (◉o◉) Whoa! This thing ain’t cheap!

Lian Feng was laying on his bed, his shirt still on him, his back full of crimson holes. There was almost no stopping the blood gushing out of them.

Even though on the outside Lin Shan was being aggressive, when it was came time to apply the medicine itself, her hands paused.

“If Prince Consort is afraid, I can...”

“I’m not afraid! Do I look like I am scared?” Lin Shan pushed out her chest, bit down her lips and took out the scissor to cut his clothes.

Even though she was prepared in her heart, the instant she saw and smelled the fresh blood oozing out, her senses received a critical attack. The wounds from the lashes has started to swell, blood flowing from them non-stop. At that moment, Lin Shan cannot help but feel guilty. Her nose started to itch, her eyes reddens.

“Hold on for abit.” She pushed down the nauseating feeling in her stomach and began some simple treatments on the injuries. She then rubbed some medicinal herbs on the mouth of the wound.

She suddenly realised that Lian Feng had frozen stiff, not a sound came from him as his knuckles tightens.

Lin Shan was startled and paused. She asked, “Hey, are you alright?”

“Prince Consort please do not worry, I am okay.”

His voice was full of repressed pain. It was clear he was just putting up a front. Lin Shan's hands shook. This was the first time she had done this, so of course she was nervous. While she was hesitating, she suddenly remembered an old memory.

When she was young, she once fell and got a big scrape on her skin. Her grandma blew air on the wound and said, "Good Shan Shan, if I blow on it, it won't hurt! It won't hurt a bit..."

Thinking of this, she leaned down and blew on Lian Feng's wound gently.

Lian Feng was doing his best to hold back the pain, his mind hazy. Suddenly he felt a cooling sensation on his back while a soft murmur was transmitted to his ears: "If I blow on it, it won't hurt! Won't hurt, won't hurt, won't hurt..." The voice was like a soft pair of hands that gently carried the pain away from his mind...

"Since ancient time, after applying medicine, people are more prone to falling asleep, he's probably the same!" After she finished treating Lian Feng, she could determine that he was sleeping, and not unconscious. Lin Shan breathe out in relief.

If he can sleep, that means he will most likely be alright. If he's alright, I won't feel guilty! The heavy burden in her heart was temporarily lifted. She checked over the wounds once more, making sure that everything was still properly healing, then put away the medicine and prepared to leave.

It was then that her eyes was drawn towards the golden sabre on Lian Feng's table. It was lying there like a lamb waiting to be slaughtered, like a braised pork dish served at a meal, as if it was whispering, "Come, come take me!"

Lin Shan slowly approached the sword. She reached out, but her hands stopped. Her eyes looking at Lian Feng with a complicated feeling. She bit her lips and retrieved her hand.

"If you are so careless next time, don't blame me for taking advantage of you!" She then left with her lingering eyes full of regret towards the sword.

When she departed his room, the sun was setting, and all the guards have returned to their position in high alert. It's hard to blame them, last night there

was an intruder, today their royal guard leader was punished and is weakened, how can they possibly not be grim? But compared to the males inside the royal palace, all the females were acting strange.

Today as she walked through the imperial garden, all the maids she walked past was totally different from how they normally looked. They were all in full make up, their faces fresh like blooming flowers, their giggling voice echoed near and far, not any different then the ladies at Leaning Vermillion House!

What happened? Could it be that the entire royal palace was planning to destroy the Leaning Vermillion House's businesses? This wasn't a bad idea, the palace was filled with wasted beauties, they should make use of them by opening a new business inside... Lin Shan was too deep in her weird fantasies that she bumped into two palace maids who was laughing and giggling.

When they noticed who they had ran into, they quickly bowed and apologised: "These maid was careless, I hope Prince Consort will forgive us."

"Stand up, stand up!" Lin Shan couldn't stand these polite gestures and quickly helped them up. However, the moment she saw their faces, she nearly passed out.

Calm down sisters! Why do you guys need to put on such horror movie-like thick makeups? If you go outside and compete with the Leaning Vermillion House, the funeral homes' bosses would be having a party.

Wiping off her cold sweat, Lin Shan asked, "I won't punish you guys, but tell me, why are you all so excited?"

The two looked at each other, then bowed and answered while smiling idiotically: "Prince Consort does not know, but the Crown Prince have returned!"

That's right, the number one handsome man of the entire capital, the one who could make young ladies faint just from catching sight of him, the very same that causes young men to castrate themselves when they saw his face, the legendary Crown Prince Du Hao, have returned.

Chapter 13

To my dear readers,

I have found something new to translate! This novel is actually very good. I finished the whole thing in less than 2 days!! This novel is one of the projects started by Amery Edge. He does teasers on his site, but does not fully translate a novel. He recommended me to translate this and I must say, this novel is very fun to read. He has already translated 12 chapters on his site.

Chapter 1-12 can be read [here](#)

Glossary can be found [here](#)

Hope you guys will enjoy this story!

P.S. Lin Shan is a woman dressed up as a man. (in case you are confused). She has also been transported from the future to the past.

Chapter 13

The Crown Prince had defeated the enemy of the Hans and led the troops home victoriously. The moment the news arrived, the entire country celebrated. When Du Hao and his troops were ten li* from the capital, the whole palace had already been decorated with lanterns and coloured banners. Countless of imperial concubines and palace maids wore their most beautiful dresses while awaiting for their hero's arrival.

This enthusiastic atmosphere eliminated the fear of the intruder. In addition, it distracted others from how Lian Feng, the Imperial bodyguard, had been punished for failing to fulfill his obligations. Those large or small government officials who used to surround Lian Feng when he was in favour have all disappeared. Even the palace maids who fancied him were avoiding him, and no longer dared to discuss about anything that was related to him.

The only exception was our female lead, Lin Shan. Currently, she was inside Lian Feng's room....what was she doing? Touching a very expensive looking antique vase!

Look! Look! Look at the exquisite texture!!! Look at the coloured glaze! This is

definitely an item of the highest quality!

Don't underestimate Lin Shan. Although she was obsessed with money, she wasn't blind. Last time during her wedding with the princess, she was given a lot of gifts from the royal relatives; all the names sounded beautiful, but when she looked at the actual items, they were of terrible quality! "Thousand years mountain ginseng" my ass! It just looked a tad bit better than a regular white radish. Did they think the Prince Consort was a bonehead? She was Taobao's** diamond member, ok?! A mere picture was enough for her to determine whether something was good or bad; not to mention the items were placed in front of her.

This flower vase was definitely worth a lot of money though!

Seeing how Lin Shan's hands have not left the vase since her arrival, the bed ridden Lian Feng spoke up, "If Prince Consort likes the vase, this servant will give it to Prince Consort."

Are you freaking kidding me? If I knew you were so generous. I wouldn't be touching the vase, but the golden sabre instead! Lin Shan's heart was filled with regrets. Originally, she was planning to leave with the vase, but looking around Lian Feng's room, she could only describe it as a room with four bare walls. He was the head of the Imperial Bodyguard, yet the only expensive item in his room was the vase. Wouldn't it be very inconsiderate of her if she took it?

Her heart softened and she responded politely: "No, it's okay...it's okay..." But deep down, she was hoping he would push her to take it.

Just press on, press on a bit more and I will take it!

But Lian Feng wasn't someone who would go around the curves and skirt the corners. If the person didn't want it, then he shall not press. Instead, he began reading a book.

Poor Lin Shan. She waited so long but Lian Feng did not press on. She realized she was too polite and he took her words seriously!

Hello?! I was just being nice. Lin Shan totally regretted her actions now. As she looked at the vase once more, she felt like she lost something good. Her heart ached.

Forget it! What the eye doesn't see, the heart doesn't grieve over. She moved away from the vase and sat on a seat next to Lian Feng. If he's reading, she will watch him read. She stared at him for a couple of minutes until Lian Feng couldn't take it anymore.

"Prince Consort, is something the matter?"

"No." Lin Shan shook her head, and continued staring at him while resting her chin on her hand.

"Then why is Prince Consort staring at servant in such a way?"

"I'm bored! Just ignore me. Continue! Continue!"

Lian Feng: "....."

After a few moments later, even Lin Shan couldn't take it anymore. Her eyes started circulating around the room. Suddenly, she seemed to remember something: "Oh yes, have you eaten?"

"This servant has already eaten lunch."

"That was lunch. What time is it now? It must have been digested long ago. What do you want to eat? I'll go grab it for you. How about cake?"

"This servant does not like sweet food."

"How about I'll tell the imperial kitchen to fry you some noodles?"

"....this servant is not hungry."

After being rejected again and again, Lin Shan was angry: "I'm really bored! Would it kill you to say you're hungry to accommodate me?" She fished out a walnut from her pocket and smacked it onto the bedside: "I'm going to peel the walnut for you to eat! This is an order! You are not allowed to reject!"

Lian Feng: "....."

Speaking of Lian Feng, he was quite a sad soul. As the golden sabre guard, plus his mysterious mask, his image was as serious as a monk. After living like this for many years, even he had accepted it as his character. When dealing with others, he would always be cold and elegant.

But ever since the silly Prince Consort barged into his life, everything seemed

to have changed. After the incident from Leaning Vermilion House, he had a strange feeling towards him. It was so odd that he couldn't even describe it to himself. It wasn't closeness, and it wasn't disgust. But basically, he would be annoyed if he comes often. Yet, if he doesn't come, he would think of him.

This odd state of mind had really affected his past firm attitude. He actually allowed the Prince Consort to peel a walnut by his bedside.

As for Lin Shan, she was also a sad soul. Before she had transported from the past, she had seen many palace battle television shows. But it seemed like she didn't learned anything from them. Instead, she seemed to be always linked to danger. She only seemed to get away with luck.

The time at the Palace was definitely not as exciting as what was played on television. In fact, Lin Shan found it super boring. She had no computer and no cell phone. And she didn't dare to look at attractive men. What if she actually invest emotions and he turned out to be a eunuch!? Thinking of this, at least Lian Feng has the golden sabre. The golder sabre could help her through mental distress.

Currently, the bored Lin Shan finally found something to do -peeling a walnut. How could she not be excited? She was very focused as she was peeling; it was comparable to her government official exam. Lian Feng sat on the bed, not knowing what to say. It seemed rude of him to read while she was peeling, so he decided to watch her. After staring at Lin Shan for a bit, his heart started to stir.

His serious face actually looked quite good. If someone were to make faces around him, he wouldn't have noticed. His skin was very white, and his eyelashes were so long. His face was small, and his nose was smooth and round. His face also had some meat..even without cosmetics, he looked better than most palace maids....

"I am done!" Lin Shan's voice brought him back to reality. When he snapped out of his zone, he realized that their faces were very close together. There was a feminine odour coming out from his body, and Lian Feng couldn't help but blush.

He felt helpless. He didn't know why. He was clearly with a man. How could he compare her to a woman? It's probably because the Kingdom Minister's son was brought up with many women. Thus, he was raised very delicately.

Lian Feng was trying to comfort himself and forced himself to revert back to his original form. It was then he realized that Lin Shan had already eaten half of the walnut.

“Eat! Why are you not eating?” Lin Shan asked as she ate super lightheartedly. She had walnut bits on the corner of her mouth. At that moment, Lian Feng had the urge to reach out and wipe it from her mouth.

Lian Feng was troubled by this strange thought, when suddenly, a loud cried could be heard from outside: “The Crown Prince has returned! The Crown Prince has returned!!”

Lin Shan immediately got up from her seat: “Ohhhh!!! I want to go see! This is for you!” Right after, she ran like a rabbit and disappeared without a trace. All that was left behind was half of the peeled walnut. She had placed it in Lian Feng’s hand, and it was still warm.

*li = ancient measure of length, approx. 500 m.

**taobao is a very popular online shopping site from China.

Chapter 14

To my dear readers,

It seems like many of you are obsessed with this novel. As a result, I worked day and night to translate this! (okay, I'm exaggerating..but I worked extra hard). However, translating is honestly too difficult and I cannot release a chapter daily. You can only expect **3 chapters a week** from me. It sucks all my brain power.

If you appreciate my work, please support me by donating. Any amount would be appreciated. It takes me many many hours to give you guys something that may only take you 10 minutes to read.

If you are bored, feel free to read some of my other posts on my blog.

Chapter 14

Lin Shan followed the direction of the crowd, all the way to the main hall. She was instantly shocked by what she saw.

Wow. What was so special about the Crown Prince? Regardless of ranking, all the government officials appeared to be extremely emotional and overjoyed to see him. Their eyes were filled with respect. In fact, they were so impressed that they almost failed to greet the Crown Prince in unison.

Lin Shan looked around and saw that the Emperor, the Empress, and the Princes had all arrived. All the large government officials who could come were already here as well. Such a fancy occasion was honestly not very appropriate for someone low key like herself. Thus, Lin Shan found a spot somewhere further away so she wouldn't be seen; she mixed herself in with a bunch of people.

Since she was quite new to the Palace, no one seemed to take any notice of her as she stood around. In fact, she was being shoved all over the place. She tried to push her way forward, and felt like she was in a World Expo. All she could see were the heads of others, and not the Crown Prince.

What the heck? Is the Crown Prince really that charming? Lin Shan's level of curiosity had reached its limit. She stood on her tiptoes, and tried to squeeze through the people just to see something.

At that moment, a faraway eunuch's voice could be heard: "The Crown Prince is about to enter!"

The crowd cried out in surprise and started to push forward. Lin Shan lost the spot that she had gotten with great difficulty. Now, all she could see were heads swaying. By the time the uproar was over, she could only see the backside of a person who was in armour from head to toe. From where she was, she couldn't even tell if it was a man or a woman – let alone the face.

"The Crown Prince is truly brilliant and godly!"

"Young and promising!"

"A young hero!"

"His presence is out of the ordinary!"

"Worthy of a general style!"

An excessive amount of praise came out of those people and Lin Shan was annoyed.

Are you kidding me? You can see this much inner potential from looking at his back? What's going to happen if you saw his front? If I were the Crown Prince, my testicles would hurt!

Suddenly, Du Hao sneezed in the main hall.

Since Du Hao arrived back to the Palace two days ahead of schedule, the Palace could not prepare the welcome reception in time. Therefore, after greeting the Emperor and reporting his battle news (what he has accomplished), the Crown Prince received his rewards and the simple welcome ceremony was over. Du Hao and his high ranking military officers departed from the scene, and everyone else that was originally surrounding to watch started to leave as well. Lin Shan was left by herself to mourn. After all this, she didn't even get a glimpse of the Crown Prince's face. He was supposedly one of the most gorgeous man in the country! I wonder if he was as hot as Lian Feng?

Speaking of Lian Feng, what's wrong with that guy? He's so hot yet he wears a

mask. What a waste of God's gift! But then again, maybe there are lots of hidden secrets when working for the Emperor. Maybe he's like a Tiger squad leader and works better undercover!

As Lin Shan thought about it, she felt relieved. She decided to stroll around the Palace before heading back to eat.

As she was strolling, she recognized a familiar figure from faraway. That figure was with a bunch of people, and they were walking across the path ahead of her. Lin Shan froze.

Huh? Isn't...isn't that Lian Feng? How did he heal so quickly? He looked so energized as he spoke with his companions. Wait!! Something doesn't seem right... she thought about it and quickly realized that Lian Feng wasn't wearing his mask!

Oh my goodness. I just put him as a Tiger squad leader. How come the moment I turned around, his underground organization turned to above ground? She was strikingly curious and rushed forward, about to call him.

All of a sudden, she felt a hand on her arm. When she turned around, she saw a sullen Xiao Lu grumbling: "Prince Consort, where were you the entire day? Please save this servant. If you don't come back with this servant now, the Princess is going to sell this servant to the Leaning Vermilion House!! But this servant is innocent...."

Why is it Du Ming Yue again? Lin Shan crinkled her brows, implying that she's annoyed. Then to Xiao Lu, she said: "Why are you so worried? You think it is easy to get into Leaning Vermilion House? They want girls who are well rounded in musical instrument, chess, literature, and art. Not to mention, their face and body must be top notched. Even if you were to go, you would be immediately eliminated. Perhaps they'll take you in to do some sweeping. Definitely not for anything else!"

Xiao Lu: "....."

Lin Shan decided to drop the Lian Feng incident and headed to Ming Yue's. From faraway, she could already hear shattering sounds and screaming. A bunch

of servants were pulling back like quails from outside the doorway. Everyone was shivering like they had been electrocuted.

Lin Shan felt a headache coming and used her fingers to rub in between her brows. She pushed the door open and saw an antique vase flying towards her. Fortunately, her reflexes were good and she managed to avoid being hit. But a shattering sound immediately followed.

Lin Shan felt like her heart was bleeding. My sister, out of all things, you shattered an antique! That is money!!! As she grieved, one after another, items flew to her. Lin Shan was quick and managed to catch everything flawlessly. She would look at the items right after she caught it, and then rubbed them with her sleeves and stuffed them in her pockets.

Du Ming Yue was venting on all the items in the room. The moment Song Luo returned, she was even angrier. Seeing how he didn't give her face and caught everything she was throwing, she raged even harder. She began to throw anything within her sight. The garnet that the Western Regions had offered as a tribute...a palm sized jade mythical animal.....After she threw everything around her, she started to throw the things she had on her. She threw out the jade pendant from her waist.

Lin Shan wanted to cry. Sister, if I knew you were going to throw me so many expensive items. I wouldn't have bothered going to see the Crown Prince. I would just stand here daily...wow! Is that a big piece of jade? The colour looks great! Lin Shan's eyes shone brightly.

At that moment, Du Ming Yue seemed to have snapped out of her anger. She realized she just threw out the jade pendant that the Emperor had granted her. Her body was immediately drenched in cold sweat. That jade pendant was something the Emperor granted only to the eldest Prince and Princess. It was an object that represented dignified royal family. Those who saw the jade pendant would have to bow down as if they saw the Emperor. If she lost it or broke it, it was serious business. Luckily, she noticed that Lin Shan caught it with her speedy hands. She sighed a breath of relief and wasn't angry anymore. Instead, she struck out her hand.

"Give it back to me."

Woah! You threw it away and expect me to return it? Are you kidding? Lin Shan had already stuffed the jade pendant behind her belt: “Anything you threw to me is mines! I’m not giving it back!”

“Hey!” Du Ming Yue was freaking out, “You can take whatever, but give me back the jade pendant!”

You didn’t mind throwing all those treasures, but you want this jade pendant? Even an idiot would know this jade pendant’s worth! It’s expensive and easy to carry around. I would be a fool if I gave it back to you!

Lin Shan pretended to be stupid: “What? The Princess must have mistaken. What jade pendant?”

“Song Luo, you!” Du Ming Yue was panicking and decided to head over to grab it herself. But unexpectedly, Lin Shan reacted faster than her, and managed to scuttle away. Since Du Ming Yue missed, she flew in a rage out of humiliation. She revealed her fangs and claws* and was about to pounce once more. However, she slipped on the shattered pieces of the vase. From the looks of it, she was about to land on the shattered porcelain!

Lin Shan knew it was a bad sign. Playing with the Princess was alright, but if she got hurt, it would be her responsibility. Thus, she quickly dropped all the other items she was holding to catch Du Ming Yue.

The two of them rolled around the ground twice. By the time Lin Shan knew what was going on, she had been slapped.

“You are such a scoundrel!” Du Ming Yue struggled to get up from Lin Shan’s embrace. Her face was flushed red as she quickly ran off, leaving poor Lin Shan on the ground by herself as her cheek stung.

What the hell. I tried to do a good deed and this is what I get? Suddenly, she noticed that there was another part of her that stung more than her face. She lifted her hand and noticed that her hand had been cut by the shattered pieces; fresh blood was oozing out.

“Oh my goodness! Are you alright, Prince Consort?” Xiao Lu ran towards her, her eyes had already turned red.

“Don’t worry. Don’t worry.” Lin Shan shook her head. With her uninjured

hand, she took out the jade pendant from behind her belt and blew twice on it. She comforted it and said: “I’m so glad you weren’t hurt...”

Xiao Lu: “.....”

*Don’t take it literally. It’s just an expression. Not real fangs and claws.



Just in case you are wondering what the jade pendant would look like. Usually, it’s hung around the waist. This is just an example. When I looked it up on google, most of them were made of copper. (NOTE: Originally, I translated the term as waist metal because I did a literal translation. -_-” I realized it may be very confusing, and so jade pendant it is!)

Chapter 15

To my dear readers,

This chapter took me so long. -_-“. Thanks for being patient. In addition, I would like to thank **Piyanat Noourai** for your donation. It means a lot to me. Thank you!! As well, I would like to thank **Sandy Nguyen** for her attempt to donate. Unfortunately, paypal takes 30 cents per transaction as well as 2.9%. Therefore, if anyone were to donate an amount less than that, Paypal takes it all. I do appreciate your gesture though. Thank you so much.

Once in awhile, I'm going to promote my own post: [How to escape the friendzone](#) <- feel free to read and leave a comment if you want.

P.S.Each chapter is about 4 pages when I put it in the word document. I will try to translate one or two pages a day. It is definitely hard work. If I could translate the whole chapter in an hour, you guys would have something to read daily. But I have a slow brain, sorry. -_-”

Chapter 15

On the second day of Du Hao's return, an announcement was made to cancel the welcome reception that was originally planned for the Crown Prince's victory. The reason being the Crown Prince thought it was a waste of manpower and resources. As a result, he suggested to the Emperor to use the expenses saved for the reception to reward the army and the soldiers instead.

Du Hao's suggestion received the Emperor's full support. In addition, it won the praises of all the government officials. Among the common people, he had obtained a very high level of respect. In no time, the Crown Prince's name had been spread across to the country's young and old. Everyone prided themselves for having such a noble Crown Prince. The Emperor couldn't stop glorifying his son, and decided to assign his son to investigate the intruder's whereabouts.

As Du Hao was occupied with the investigation, Lin Shan was still in the Palace being bored out of her mind.

Originally, the Crown Prince's arrival was supposed to be exciting. Lin Shan was

looking forward to the welcoming feast. But now, it was cancelled. Damn that Crown Prince. The moment he came back, he went to investigate on the intruder. Now everyone in the Palace were complaining about how they could not see his gorgeous face. It was driving Lin Shan nuts.

Stop being so pathetic, will you? It's just the Crown Prince. You guys look like you would pounce on him like a dog with a bone! For a couple of days, Lin Shan was extremely irritated... until she didn't even care anymore. She changed into a garment and decided to go bug someone.

That unlucky person, obviously, was Lian Feng.

Honestly, you can't blame Lin Shan. Ever since she had entered the Palace, the faces and names she could actually recognize were fewer than ten. From the ten, some of them weren't on good terms with her. For instance, Du Ming Yue. These days, she would glare at her daily and then coldly make a "hummph" sound. After that, she would completely disregard her existence.

As for Du Jing, ever since what happened at the Leaning Vermilion House, he hated her guts. Apparently after Du Ming Yue found out they were out together, she went crazy on Du Jing. According to some, that day Du Ming Yue seized a couple of Du Jing's servants and questioned them individually. As a result, all of Du Jing's servants were terrified whenever they came across the Prince Consort. They would flee as if they had seen a ghost. As well, Du Jing had completely decided to break off all ties with her. Whenever they bumped into each other in the Palace, he wouldn't even glance her way; which showed how arrogant he was.

Lin Shan wasn't angry though. She didn't want to interact with those people anyway. Even if they gave me attention, I would rather not be there. But honestly, life here was too dull! Lin Shan slammed the table. Out of everyone in the Palace, Lian Feng was the only person she had similar things to talk with. Then again, he usually didn't talk.

As Lin Shan made her way to Lian Feng's, she could hear movement from faraway. It sounded as if someone was practicing martial arts. Out of nowhere, she recalled how she saw the unmasked Lian Feng the other day. Hence, she became extremely nosy and wanted to spy on him. She wanted to see what he

was up to.

Therefore, Lin Shan tiptoed and sneaked towards his residence, and peeked in from the courtyard door. Lian Feng was practicing his movement and style. It truly was like how the television depicted. No no no no! Definitely much more powerful and cooler than the TV -Lian Feng's left hand held onto the blade as he struck out forcefully. The cutting edge of the blade created friction with the air, causing a zheng zheng sound! Lin Shan was mesmerized. On one hand, she was admiring Lian Feng's polished skill. On the other, she was sad that Lian Feng wasn't using the golden sabre.

Damn it, I wanted to see whether the handle of the golden sabre was gold too.....

As she was deep in thought, she accidentally stepped on a branch, which caused a very noticeable sound. Lian Feng could hear it from his trained ears and suddenly aimed his blade straight towards the courtyard door!

Lin Shan was aghast. One second she was mesmerized, the next, a blade was heading straight towards her. She let out a sharp yelp and fell forward as her foot lost balance.

Lin Shan's yell revealed who she was and Lian Feng quickly pulled his blade back as he caught her by the waist. She was extremely light, and her waist was so tiny. Lian Feng only used one hand but barely felt a thing. The Prince Consort was the opposite of those sturdy Imperial bodyguards. In fact, his whole body felt so soft and his skin was so white. He looked so delicate....Lian Feng couldn't believe this was a man...

Once again, Lian Feng had slipped into a state of confusion. But the voice within his embrace brought him back to reality.

"Ow, I'm in pain!!"

Lian Feng snapped back into reality and saw that Lin Shan had lifted her arm up. Her palm was wrapped with white bandages, but revealed spots of blood. It turned out that Lin Shan had been disobedient and hadn't abstain from spicy food. As a result, her injuries were healing very slowly. Now, her wound has opened up again since she had carelessly rubbed against a branch.

Lian Feng grabbed her arm and took a look. Once he confirmed the open cut, he said: “Come in my room. I will give you some medication.”

Lian Feng was definitely the leader of the Imperial guard. He had all sort of medication. Aside from the bottle Lin Shan used on him before, there were still so many different kinds. Last time, she didn’t even notice.

Out of a bunch of bottles, Lian Feng chose one and threw it to Lin Shan.

“Why aren’t we using that one instead?” Lin Shan pointed to the bottle she used on Lian Feng last time.

“That one is too powerful. It will sting more.”

“Ohhh.” Lin Shan nodded. After catching the bottle with her good hand, she lifted her injured hand and opened the bottle cork with her mouth; she was about to apply it on herself by pouring it on her wound.

“Wait!” Fortunately, Lian Feng warned her. It appeared that he wanted to say something. Lian Feng noticed how Lin Shan had one injured hand raised, and the other holding the bottle. She definitely couldn’t apply the medication on herself. Thus, he took the bottle from her hand and said: “Sit down. I’ll help you.”

Lin Shan didn’t bother to object, as her hand was stinging too much. She tightly pressed her teeth together and obediently allowed Lian Feng to apply the medication on her. Seeing how serious his facial expressions were, it must be the first time he has helped someone other than himself to apply on medication. It looked as if he was trying to be extremely careful. From Lin Shan’s angle, although he had half a mask* on, she could still see his firm lips and thick eyelashes.

Are you kidding me? This guy’s eyelashes look too damn good. Definitely a 360 degrees of hotness. Lin Shan deeply sighed on the inside. All of a sudden, her palm felt a throbbing pain.

“Ahh! It hurts so much! I’m going to die from the pain!”

She hollered and tried to pull back her arm, but Lian Feng prevented her from doing so: “Stop moving!”

“But it’s too painful! I don’t want to apply on medicine! No more!” Lin Shan

wincing. She honestly couldn't handle the pain. Suddenly, she recalled Lian Feng mentioning how the other bottle was even more painful. She couldn't help but remember the slight tremble on Lian Feng's back when she was applying the medication on him previously. At that time, he must have been in tremendous amounts of pain!

Due to Lian Feng's forceful attitude, he managed to finish applying the medication on Lin Shan's palm. However, by the time Lin Shan pulled her hand back, her eyes were all red and her nose was sniffing.

"If I knew it was so painful, I wouldn't have applied medication. I'm going to die from the pain..."

Lian Feng had never seen a man react in such a way over something like this. He wanted to lecture Lin Shan, but seeing his watery eyes, he felt bad. Thus, he felt awkward because he didn't know what to say.

As Lin Shan whined about the pain and blamed Lian Feng for being too rough, she continued chattering like no tomorrow. After awhile, her hand didn't appear to hurt as much anymore. It was then she realized that she was the only one doing all the talking. Hence, she looked up at Lian Feng, and was puzzled.

"Why are you watching me?"

From the looks of it, Lian Feng had been fixedly staring at her for quite awhile. But the moment Lin Shan spoke, Lian Feng instantly pulled his sight away from her.

"Nothing...." Since he wore a mask, no one could see his expression. Suddenly, he stood up and said: "Prince Consort, it is getting late. You're injured. Please return to rest."

"But I just came!" Lin Shan refuted.

"Please leave, Prince Consort."

"I...."

"Please!"

Lian Feng's attitude was firm, and Lin Shan wasn't able to refuse. However, she was confused and frustrated. He just helped me apply on medication, but now

he's kicking me out? Why did his face turn so fast? Yet, she couldn't find an excuse to stay. After thinking for a moment, she glared at Lian Feng: "Fine! I'll leave! You think you're all that! Humph!" Lin Shan stormed out and slammed the door behind her.

As Lian Feng watched the door closed, beneath the mask his eyes revealed a turbulence of emotions.

*I'm assuming the mask covers half his face horizontally, and not vertically like Phantom of the Opera. lol

Chapter 16

To my dear readers,

The chapters are getting longer and it's taking me forever to translate. .
Next chapter is going to be very interesting *suspense*

P.S. I am already starting to feel drained because translating is so hard. But donations would motivate me *wink wink*

Chapter 16

Once Du Hao got involved with the investigation, the story behind the intruder was quickly revealed. It was so ridiculous that people didn't know whether to laugh or cry.

Apparently, in the city, there was a corrupted official named Wu Liang Zhi. Wu Liang Zhi was actually the brother of Rong Fei, one of the Emperor's most spoiled imperial concubine. Just like his name, this person had no conscience* He often committed outrageous acts like snatching ordinary women and taking bribes. Due to the Emperor's love towards Rong Fei, none of the city's large or small officials dared to mess with Wu Liang Zhi. Hence, Wu Liang Zhi became increasingly aggressive and accumulated countless amounts of wealth.

But although Wu Liang Zhi didn't have a conscience, he had some IQ. Since he was already a government official and he had already gotten his bribes, he wasn't going to do anything off the radar to create attention on himself. However, the problem here lied with Wu Liang Zhi's male cousin, Wu Zhi Shang.

Wu Zhi Shang truly had no IQ. Seeing how his cousins have all become rich, he was resentful as he was merely a local wealthy landlord.

Why are we from the same family, but they can have power and wealth but I can't? That's it! The only reason why they're so high up in the social ladder is because of the power and wealth they have accumulated. I'm going to be even better. I am announcing myself as the Emperor!

On that very night, the idiot Wu Zhi Shang asked his bookkeeper to create a version of an Emperor edict. He decided to change the official name of the

nation to Wu, and crowned his wife as the Empress, his eight years old son as Crown Prince, his next door landlord neighbour as the Emperor's brother, and his bookkeeper as his Kingdom Minister. He also had a total of eight soldiers, and pronounced himself as the Emperor.

Three days after this "regime", it had spread to Wu Liang Zhi's ears. Wu Liang Zhi was furious.

Wu Zhi Shang's brain could have problems, but how dare he drag him down with him? He immediately led a group of people and hurried to Wu Zhi Shang's residence.

On their arrival, they were greeted with a crooked sign that had "Palace" written on it. Wu Liang Zhi's people beat up the eight soldiers and dismissed the bookkeeper. In addition, Wu Liang Zhi harshly shrieked and warned Wu Zhi Shang. By the end of it, the regime that lasted three days and five hours had been eliminated.

Honestly, the story would have ended. But the problem once again lied with Wu Zhi Shang. That person's IQ must be negative. After getting yelled at by Wu Liang Zhi, he was so resentful that he decided to conspire with his landlord neighbour and spent twenty silver taels (ten each) to find an assassin to get rid of the real Emperor so that he could continue being "Emperor".

Unfortunately for Wu Zhi Shang, the twenty silver taels actually randomly attracted an excellent assassin. The assassin took his deposit of ten silver taels and attacked the Palace. He managed to kill the Imperial bodyguard, and would have successfully killed the Emperor if the Emperor was in his dormitory.

Wow, I wondered how the Emperor would react if he knew his life was only worth twenty silver taels.

When Xiao Lu got to this part of the story, Lin Shan spat out all her tea. Holy shit! Brother, you are damn brave. I never knew someone like this would exist! Eight soldiers? Hahahahahaha....

Lin Shan was laughing so hard, she was almost rolling on the ground. Just then, an eunuch made an announcement at the door; causing her to break out in cold sweats.

“Prince Consort, the Emperor wishes to see you!”

— — —

Lin Shan was freaking out as she followed the eunuch into the Imperial study room. It had been awhile since she had wed Du Ming Yue, but the Emperor had never purposely summoned her. Why was he summoning her today? He suddenly wanted to keep an eye out on me? Or could it be Du Ming Yue...Lin Shan quivered, and couldn't help but feel anxious.

When she arrived at the study, the Emperor was already there with her father, Song Xian, the Kingdom Minister. The Emperor was holding a folding document** and seemed to be having a lot of fun conversing with her father. It appeared that his mood wasn't ruined by the twenty silver taels.

The moment Lin Shan saw her father, she felt much better. She respectfully greeted the Emperor with her head lowered, and carried herself like an obedient son-in-law.

The Emperor was especially glad to see her, and pleasantly granted her a chair to sit. He kindly acted like a father-in-law and smiled at Song Xian: “Look at him, this child is too reserved. He is still referring me as Emperor!”

Song Xian felt a bit guilty, and instantly signaled to Lin Shan: “Luo-er***, you ought to refer the Emperor as Father Emperor.”

Lin Shan was sweating, and hastily said, “Father Emperor.”

“Don't be nervous! I called you in today to discuss about family stuff only. It's rare that the Kingdom Minister is here. Both of you haven't seen each other in awhile. In a moment, you two should catch up.”

It turned out it wasn't anything serious. Lin Shan felt a breath of relief: “Your son would like to thank Father Emperor for his care and concern.”

“Luo-er, you are part of the family. This is not the royal court. There is no need of you to be so formal! By the way, Luo-er, you have been married to Ming Yue for almost a month now, right? Father Emperor rarely asks about you. I'm sorry. Ever since Ming Yue was young, she has always been given her way. I'm afraid you must be having some trouble.”

“Of course not, Father Emperor. Your son and the Princess are getting along very well.” Lin Shan could tell lies without blinking.

“That’s good! My daughter is great in all aspects except for her spoiled nature. I was afraid she would throw tantrums. I’m glad you two are not having any issues. I guess that means we will have grandchildren soon! Song Xian, soon you will have a grandchild!”

The Emperor looked very pleased and happy. Little did he know that Song Xian was drenched in cold sweats from head to toe. Song Xian trembled and nodded: “My son is indebted to the Emperor and the Princess’s generous love.....”

And just like that, within the room were three people -one who was greatly anticipating his children’s future, and two who were suffering from extremely guilty consciences. The conversation went on for almost an hour. By now, Lin Shan had almost fallen asleep. Then, an interesting topic finally came up.

“Luo-er, how do you think we should punish Wu Liang Zhi?” The King’s question brought Lin Shan back from her dazed state. She realized the Emperor was asking for her opinion.

Due to Wu Zhi Shang’s conspiracy, Wu Liang Zhi had also been affected. Not only that, Rong Fei had been thrown into the isolation part of the Palace. Furthermore, her six years old Prince was also taken away from her and given to raise by a different concubine. Everyone who was related to Wu Liang Zhi had been affected. Therefore, although Wu Zhi Shang failed to become the Emperor, he managed to reach his goal: Now, there were no differences amongst him and his cousins -because they were all screwed.

Although sometimes Lin Shan may not think before she acts, she was definitely not a fool. The Emperor had already harshly sent Rong Fei to isolation, there was no way he didn’t want to punish Wu Liang Zhi. Most likely, the Emperor wasn’t just punishing those who are associated with Wu Zhi Shang -he probably wanted to seize the opportunity to get rid of some people once and for all. The Emperor must have intentions if he was asking her.

Lin Shan thought about and said: “Your child mainly stays within the Palace and doesn’t know too much about this situation. Hence, your child does not dare to make any conclusion.”

“It’s okay. I want to hear your thoughts. Be brave. I will not blame you.”

Lin Shan was waiting for that line. Since she wasn’t going to be punished, she didn’t mind sharing her thoughts. She definitely wouldn’t suggest nine familial exterminations.**** However, she felt it was reasonable to search the house and confiscate possessions.

“Your child believes although Wu Liang Zhi was aware of his cousin’s actions, he did not directly participate in the incident; therefore, he should not be sentenced to death. However, before I had entered the Palace, I have heard Wu Liang Zhi doing many evil deeds. He was corrupted and would use his powers to bully others and abuse the laws. He is honestly too rampant. He must be punished in order for the common people to get rid of their anger. Your child would suggest allowing him to suffer from being pressed down (due to loss of power and wealth).

“Oh?” Lin Shan’s suggestion evoked the Emperor’s interest, “Luo-er, what are your thoughts? Please continue.”

“In my opinion, we should confiscate his household wealth, dismiss his servants, make him live elsewhere, and take away all his land. The wealth we confiscate should be shared between those common people he used to bully. Wu Liang Zhi should become a beggar and get a taste of what it’s like to be poor. He should suffer from the bullying of others and be treated with disdain. That way, the common people’s anger would diminish as well.”

The Emperor was pleasantly surprised by Lin Shan’s words. Even Song Xian, who thought he knew his daughter very well was astonished. When did his daughter become so wise?

Deep down, Lin Shan was rejoicing. She was glad she had watched Stephen Chow’s movie “King of Beggars”. If not, how else would she think of this awesome idea? What they say was correct: If you do not have book smarts, you have to have street smarts. If you don’t have street smarts, then watch more TV.

Lin Shan’s suggestion received the Emperor’s approval. The Emperor immediately issued an Imperial edict and announced to the world that they will confiscate all of Wu Liang Zhi’s possessions to give to the impoverished. Wu Liang Zhi will be deemed as a beggar and he must obey the imperial order.

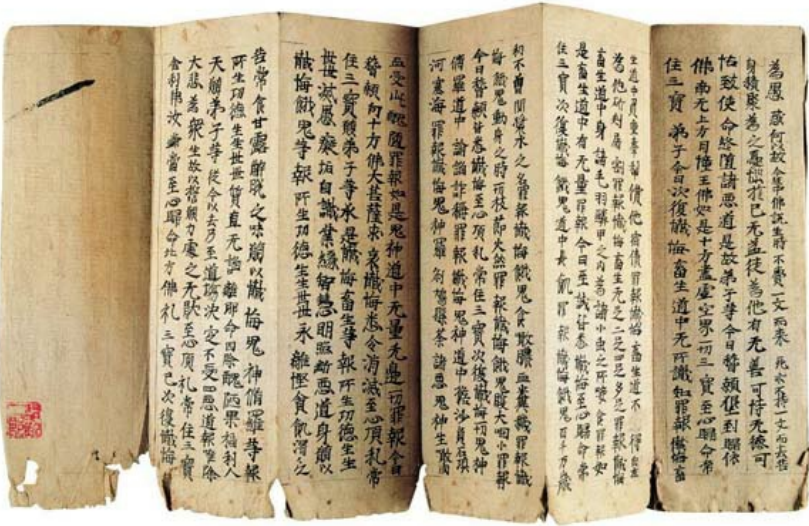
The moment this was announced, the whole city rejoiced. All the common people who had previously suffered from Wu Liang Zhi's actions praised the Emperor. They were truly grateful.

On the third day after the imperial edict had been announced, another decree was made: The Prince Consort was granted the title of a chancellor and was responsible to confiscate the possessions of Wu Liang Zhi alongside with the Crown Prince.

When Lin Shan received the order, she was stunned. After she snapped out of it, she almost screamed: Holy shit! Confiscating possessions! What a cushy job!!

* It's a pun. Wu Liang Zhi also sounds exactly like no conscience in Mandarin (wu = no, liang zhi = conscience).

** This is the folding document. I know it sounds so weird, but I don't know how else to translate it. Folding information? lol. Therefore, I found a picture.



*** the “er” indicates it’s a child or someone younger than the person who is speaking. It’s often used by mothers and fathers (actually, anyone older can use er after your name to call you)

**** This is a very confusing term to translate because it doesn't exist in English. Basically, in the past, if a person were to commit a big crime, his/her family (up to 9 connections) could be sentenced to death. This means, even if the person was the son of their cousin's cousin's cousin's cousin.. (you get the point)..

Chapter 17

To my dear readers,

This chapter was quite difficult for me to translate. It took me 3 different attempts on 3 separate days to finish. Please donate to me if you can because I need more motivation! Even if 10% of you donate a dollar or two to me, it would make a huge difference. You have no idea how hard translating is for me, but I still push myself to translate two pages a day! TWO PAGES.

It may not seem like a big deal to a lot of you, but it is free volunteer work that takes a lot of determination. **This chapter will give me a thousand views or something. But that equals to \$1 and that is only if you guys do not have ad block.** WordPress doesn't pay me until I hit \$100...so you can imagine the pain of a poor translator.

Chapter 17

Lin Shan's first reaction on confiscating items in someone's home was based off of another Stephen Chow movie she had seen previously. In the "Royal Tramp", the characters went to confiscate items in someone's residence. To her, it was one of the most vivid part of the movie.

Thus, Lin Shan was extremely excited.

Trying to pass the Civil Service exam was like trying to cross a single-log bridge with thousands of men and horses. It was so crowded that her remains couldn't be found. Now that she had transported through time and became the Prince Consort, she had been given the great task of confiscating someone's home. That was definitely a much better job compared to a government job. It was at least state level!! Even if she couldn't earn any profit from it, she could still be in the spotlight for a bit.

On the second day after the Imperial edict was announced, Lin Shan made her way to the Wu residence. By the time she had arrived, the whole residence had already been surrounded by soldiers. Aside from Wu Liang Zhi, who was in prison, everyone else in the household were kneeling in the lobby while waiting for their fate to be set.

The Crown Prince hadn't arrived yet. Hence, no one dared to make a move. They decided to give Lin Shan the authority.

Once the Prince Consort makes the command, confiscation will begin.

At this moment, Lin Shan was sighing at the luxurious Wu residence. It looked even more magnificent compared to the Palace. The moment she walked in, everything was dazzling gold. Even the hand rail was made out of gold! It was as if Wu Liang Zhi was afraid people wouldn't know he was rich. This was like a pirated copy of the newly rich!

Why would he make the house like this? Anyone who comes in would know he's a corrupted official! He truly has no IQ!

Lin Shan was at a loss for words. Suddenly, her eyes caught onto the antique shelf in the living room. She quickly scanned her eyes over the entire shelf. Her eyes shone brightly when she caught sight of a golden *ru yi**. Out of everything here, that was the most convenient and easy to carry item!

"Superior, what do you want us to do with the family members?"

The subordinate interrupted Lin Shan's thoughts and brought her back to reality. Lin Shan reluctantly looked away from the golden *ru yi* and realized that there were a bunch of people on their knees waiting in the lobby. The group consisted of the old, the weak, the women, and the children. All of them looked terrified.

Lin Shan had never been in this situation before. She didn't know what to do: "What did the imperial edict say?"

"The Imperial edict only indicated the fate of Wu Liang Zhi. It didn't say anything about the rest."

What? The Emperor didn't do his whole job. She had to deal with all these other people? Even their daily lives? What they eat and drink? That is so annoying! She thought about it and waved her hand: "Since the Emperor didn't say, then just let them go. Let them go where they want to go."

The subordinate was shocked and hesitated for a moment. Then, he carefully worded his words: "Are you sure, Superior? These are the family members of a corrupted official. If we let them go so easily, perhaps the common people will

be angry....”

“Ohh.” Lin Shan shook her head as she mumbled to herself, “You’re right. It’s probably not a good idea if we just let them go...”

“Your subordinate is untalented. Please guide us with your wisdom, Superior....”

“Okay. Then secretly let them go. Use the back door. Don’t let people see. Oh, and also give each person a silver tael as a dismissal fee. No more than that, do you understand?”

The poor subordinate was startled. It took him awhile before he was able to react. He trembled and stuttered: “Superior is wise. Your subordinate shall do as you say.”

Just like that, the family members were free. Usually, under these circumstances, they would have been forever banished as slaves. Now, not only were they free, they were given a silver tael each. From history, I’m afraid our Lin Shan is the first who has ever done something like this.

After this incident, the news would spread to the common people. However, instead of anger, the people would be praising Song Luo for his righteousness and generosity. People would begin spreading his great virtue and Song Luo would gain even more female fans.

Of course, this will occur later on. Right now, Lin Shan’s eyes only had room for the golden ru yi. The family members have been sent away and the rest of her subordinates were busy confiscating items.

While no one was looking, Lin Shan secretly approached the antique shelf as she stared around her surroundings.

The coast was clear! Just like a sinner, she grabbed onto the handle of the golden ru yi.

So heavy! It’s real gold!!

At that moment, a stern voice caused Lin Shan to almost drop the ru yi: “What are you doing?”

Lin Shan was alarmed that she had been caught. She quickly placed the golden

ru yi back onto the shelf as she turned around and tried to smile: “Nothing..just looking.....”

Lin Shan paused in the middle of her sentence. She rubbed her eyes as she focused onto the person in front of her. She was appalled. What? How come it was Lian Feng? Why wasn't he wearing a mask again? Could it be that he had changed from the underground organization to above ground?

Although her heart still felt a bit odd, she also felt relieved and revealed the golden ru yi. A sly smile appeared on her face as she ran towards Lian Feng.

Lin Shan placed her arm around his shoulder and said: “Bro, don't be like this. You scared me half to death...”

Facing her mischievous face, her counterpart frowned. He effortlessly pushed aside Lin Shan's hand and glared at her: “Who are you?”

Lin Shan was caught off guard. Then she remembered that Lian Feng didn't know she had seen his real face before.

He's likely acting. Plus, they somewhat had an argument last time. He's probably still a bit annoyed at her. Oh my goodness, he should just man up. Why does he have to hide the truth?

Lin Shan totally couldn't tell something was wrong. Thus, once again, she placed her arm back onto his shoulder. In addition, she took out the golden ru yi and said: “Bro, based on our relationship, why are you so shy? I'll apologize for what happened last time. Don't be mad, okay? Look at this ru yi, it's gold! Let's hide it and then secretly sell it later. Fifty fifty (50% each)...how come you're not saying anything?

..You want more? Ohhhh you are so black hearted... how about seventy thirty?? Come on.... Eighty twenty??? Hey.. you seem like a decent guy. How come you're so corrupted? Ninety ten? You want to kill me?Hello!?! Say something!!”

Lin Shan still had her arms around her counterpart's shoulder as she kept on talking. It wasn't until after awhile did she realize something wasn't right.

“Why didn't you bring the golden sabre today, huh? This jade pendant....” Lin Shan's eyes caught the jade pendant that was hanging from his waist. For some

reason it looked like the one she stole from Du Ming Yue...

Suddenly, Lin Shan had a very bad feeling..

At that moment, a subordinate came back with the accounting book. He swiftly got down onto one knee and respectfully greeted: "Your humble servant would like to greet the Crown Prince and the Prince Consort. This is what I've found from the Wu residence. Please take a look, your Highness."

It was as if time froze. Lin Shan robotically turned around as she stared into the eyes of a man who had the exact same face as Lian Feng. Her face started to twitch.

"What...what did he call you?"

Their faces were very close to each other. Lin Shan could clearly see his crinkled brows and annoyed expression: "Prince Consort, please get your hand off me while you speak."

Her companion's voice clearly indicated to Lin Shan that she wasn't dreaming. This was not a joke. The person in front of her was truly the Crown Prince, Du Hao...even though he had the exact same face as Lian Feng.

Lin Shan literally bounced off from Du Hao. The golden ru yi spun twice on the ground as she rushed to place it back onto the shelf. Recalling what she had said in front of Du Hao earlier, she knew she was in big trouble. She instantly got down on her knees.

"Your Highness, I know my wrongs. Earlier, I was just joking with you. Please forgive me..." Lin Shan lowered her head while her thoughts were running like a whirlwind in her mind. She couldn't understand why Du Hao and Lian Feng looked exactly the same. Could it be Lian Feng was really Du Hao?

No, that wasn't possible. Du Hao was fighting a war until recently...

Lin Shan's sudden apology surprised everyone. They all looked at her in astonishment. Du Hao, however, did not move. He intently looked at Lin Shan for a moment and then turned his glance towards the subordinate with the accounting book: "Bring it over. Let me see."

Lin Shan's head was still down the entire time. After awhile, her legs started to

feel numb but Du Hao still hasn't taken any action. Therefore, she secretly lifted her head to peek.

What? Where did the Crown Prince go? Everyone else was busy confiscating items. No one even seemed to noticed her kneeling in the corner.

Lin Shan suddenly had a very odd feeling. She felt like she was dreaming and couldn't understand what was going on. She slowly got up to rub her sore knees as she looked around once more. No one was definitely paying attention to her. Du Hao had left without a trace.

What the heck was going on? Lin Shan felt like her brain was about to explode. She massaged her temple as she left the room.

* ru yi -okay, I have nooo idea what this is. I found an image on google but I still don't know what it's used for. However, the word "ru yi" literally means "pleasing to oneself"... here's a picture to show you. You can do the guessing.



Chapter 18

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Myrna Susan Lazuardi** for her donation. Thank you so much. I am honestly grateful for any amount.

In addition, the male MC of this novel is actually Lian Feng. However, the Crown Prince also has a very important role. It's almost like there are two male MC...But what I love about this story is that every chapter is interesting. The author really doesn't waste any time.

Anyhow, I'm going to promote a post: [Should guys pay for the first date?](#)

Chapter 18

Confiscation was still in the process. Numbers were continuously given to Du Hao. With every book he went through, he became increasingly more agitated.

What's going on? Although the Wu residence was decorated like a royal palace, it was like an empty shell. Aside from a couple of ornamental items in the house and jewelry from the ladies' rooms, there didn't seem to be any expensive things.

However, Wu Liang Zhi was known to be a corrupted official. Where's all the money he had gotten from his corruption?

"Gu Zuo, what are your thoughts?" Du Hao asked.

Gu Zuo was Du Hao's trusted aide. Gu Zho had very delicate features and totally looked like a scholar. He had been by Du Hao's side for many years.

"Based on your subordinate's views, Wu Liang Zhi should not be underestimated. Through all these years, no one had been able to grab hold of any information that could be used against him. Most likely, this sly old fox had buried or hidden all his possessions."

Du Hao nodded: "Your views are aligned with mines. I guess we have no choice but to go to the dungeon to find the old sly fox!" As Du Hao spoke, he walked near a window. His eyes caught sight of a small figure squatting next to a tree in

the garden. From where he was, he couldn't tell what the person was doing.

Du Hao narrowed his eyes as he recalled his encounter with Song Luo. He decided to change the topic: "Gu Zuo, what are your thoughts on Song Luo?"

"Please forgive your subordinate for being blunt, but Song Luo does not seem to be as handsome as rumours say he is. In addition, based on his conduct, he acts like a marketplace scammer. He's greedy and perverted, uncivilized, sloppy, and has terrible upbringing."

"You really think so?" Du Hao's eyes suddenly grew deeper. "But did you know that Song Luo released all of Wu Liang Zhi's family members? I was told each person received a silver tael dismissal fee as well."

"Oh?!" Gu Zuo was stunned. He would have never thought a rascal-like person would do such a thing.

"I have a feeling Song Luo is not as simple as he appears to be." Du Hao said aloud to himself. All of a sudden, he was extremely curious about his sister's husband.

"Let's go, Gu Zuo. Let's see what he is up to."

At this moment, Lin Shan was digging tree bark without thinking.

Her heart was very conflicted. She was already starting to miss the golden ru yi from the house. However, she was even more worried about getting in trouble with Du Hao; the man who looked exactly like Lian Feng.

Lin Shan, oh Lin Shan. You really shouldn't think of nothing but personal gain! Use your brain and think. Why would Lian Feng be here? Even if he was here, he wouldn't take his mask off! The man I saw that day at the courtyard must have been the Crown Prince. How could I be such a fool? I've already seen him once, yet I failed to realize he is a different person from Lian Feng!

It's over. I actually went as far as telling the Crown Prince I wanted 50% of the golden ru yi. If I had known who he was, I would have just pushed the entire thing into his hands....

The more Lin Shan thought about it, the more she started to regret. She

released all of her anger onto the tree bark. As she squatted next to the tree, she viciously used her nails and dug. In addition, she also screeched at the same time: “What kind of Crown Prince are you? You’re supposed to announce your arrival. You have no manners! Clearly, you wanted to screw me over. And you made me kneel for so long too... I’m going to dig you to death. Dig you to death!!”

Poor tree bark. It was being torn apart as pieces of the bark started to pile up by Lin Shan’s feet.

At that moment, Du Hao and Gu Zuo were almost right behind Lin Shan. Their expressions didn’t look good -especially Du Hao; the corner of his mouth twitched.

“Your....” Gu Zuo was about to step forward.

Du Hao raised his hand and stopped him. He made a hand gesture showing he wanted silence as they got closer to Lin Shan.

By now, her voice was getting clearer and clearer: “Don’t think just because you’re the Crown Prince you’re all that. And you’re a human, not a ghost! Why were you standing behind me without saying a word? Give me back my golden ru yi...give it back...I’m going to dig you to death! I shall dig you to death!!”

Another huge piece of tree bark fell down. Right after, a stripped of white cloth was exposed through the small crack.

Huh? What is this? Lin Shan didn’t bother to think and immediately pulled onto the strip. She used all her strength to tug, and suddenly, the whole thing came out! But it was just a common sackcloth bag. Although, something seemed to be in the bag, and it was quite heavy....

Before she could react, a hand struck out and roughly took the bag away from her.

Lin Shan was bewildered as she turned around. When she saw the face, her mind immediately exploded. This time, she reacted much faster: “Your Highness, I know my wrongs! Your Highness, I know my wrongs!”

Du Hao ignored Lin Shan and signaled Gu Zuo to come closer.

“Look, what is this?”

Gu Zuo stepped forward and took a look. The white sackcloth bag was stuffed with hundreds of banknotes (with a value in silver). There must be at least ten thousand taels in here.

“Come!” Du Hao ordered his men, “Chop down this tree. I want to know how much this guy thinks he could hide!”

— — —

The confiscation of the Wu residence was finally over. From the garden, a total of three hundred thousand taels were discovered from all the trees. Three hundred thousand taels was equivalent to the state treasury’s revenue for a year.

Once this new was exposed, Wu Liang Zhi committed suicide in his cell by crashing his head against a wall.

Another person who was also crashing her head on the wall was Lin Shan. She was the one who discovered the banknotes! What the hell!! Du Hao was such a scoundrel. Not only did he take away the golden ru yi, he also took away her banknotes.

I was the one who discovered it! Even if you don’t want to give me everything, you should have at least given me one sheet! You could count it as a digging tree bark service fee!

You think digging tree bark is easy? Digging tree barks is very tiring too, okay!?

After confiscating the three hundred thousand taels from Wu Liang Zhi’s residence, the Emperor couldn’t stop smiling. It was an unexpected amount and since they had just fought a war, the country was short on money. However, in order to keep peace amongst the common people, the shortage wasn’t announced to the people. Now that they randomly came across three hundred thousand taels, it was like having a timely rain. How could he not be delighted?

Since the Emperor was overjoyed, he decided to reward those who has given outstanding service. Aside from Du Hao, Prince Consort Song Luo was also rewarded.

Once this Imperial edict was announced, it gave the sullen Lin Shan hope. She finally thought she was going to get rewarded for digging the tree bark. But it turns out that the Emperor rewarded her an official position instead. She went up two ranking; from a military rank to an imperial censor. Her job was to supervise. Thus, not only did she not receive any materialistic reward, she ended up with a job. Lin Shan almost broke down in tears as she held onto the edict.

Oh my goodness, how could you do this to me, Emperor?

“Xiao Lu, go find out for me to see what rewards the Crown Prince received.”

“There is no need to find out, Prince Consort. It has already been spread throughout the Palace. It is said that the Emperor has bestowed the Crown Prince with a thousand silver taels, ten excellent horses, a cart of silk fabric, as well as a pair of golden ru yi. The ru yi is the one confiscated from Wu Liang Zhi’s home.”

What?! Hearing about the ru yi was the last straw. Lin Shan was raging. She violently slams her hand on the table: “Xiao Lu, I have decided!!”

“Prince Consort, what have you decided?”

“I am going to get revenge!”

Xiao Lu: “.....how are you planning to get revenge?”

“I...I...I’m going to go find Lian Feng!” Lin Shan furiously storms up from her chair.

You stole my golden ru yi! I shall scoop out your scandal! I don’t believe there isn’t a inside story behind this. How can you both look exactly the same! Even if there isn’t an inside story, I’ll still feel better stepping on* someone that has the same face!

Just like that, Lin Shan went to find Lian Feng to get “revenge”.

*not literally stepping on. It’s an expression.

Chapter 19

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Joanne Hee, AmeryEdge, and Mai Xiong** for their donations. A few dollars here and there honestly make a huge difference. I am so touched by your contributions. Thank you!! I hope you guys enjoy this chapter. ♥

Chapter 19

Lin Shan found Lian Feng in the stable. He was examining the precious horses that the Western Regions had offered as a tribute. Soon, the Palace will be holding an equestrian archery competition.

From a distance, he could see an angry person storming towards him. Lian Feng was startled and tried to avoid eye contact; he was about to leave.

Oh young man!? You're deliberately trying to avoid me, eh?! Lin Shan quickly dashed towards Lian Feng and grabbed hold of his arm: "You can't leave! I have things to ask you!"

Lian Feng didn't expect Lin Shan to be so forceful. Hence, he had no choice but to remain still. He turned around calmly and asked: "Does Prince Consort require your servant's help? And could Prince Consort let go of this servant before he speaks?"

"You think I'm going to let go just because you say so? The moment I let you go, you will slip away! Don't think I can't tell you're avoiding me!" No matter what, Lin Shan wasn't going to let go. She was nearly leaning against him now.

Lian Feng felt a bit helpless. He thought he was doing a great job at concealing his intention, yet Lin Shan was able to see right through him. He admits, he was avoiding Song Luo. But there was a reason.... he looked down at the person who wouldn't let go of his arm. Although the way Song Luo carried himself was always informal and ridiculous, it couldn't hide the spirited elegant energy of his. Each time Lian Feng sees him, his heart becomes unstable. He doesn't dare to go near him.

Lian Feng had never experienced this type of impulse in his life. Not to mention, Song Luo was a man. How could he not be terrified? He was doing everything he can to avoid him.

Obviously, Lin Shan had no idea what is going on in Lian Feng's mind. She thought about what happened during the confiscation and became increasingly annoyed. She used all her strength to make Lian Feng stay where he was as she heatedly questioned him: "Were you at Wu Liang Zhi's residence?"

"Prince Consort, what are you talking about?" Lian Feng was confused. It was such an odd question to ask.

"So you're implying you didn't go, am I correct?" Lin Shan gritted her teeth. She looked furious.

"I am still recovering from my injuries. I haven't left the Palace. I wonder what the matter is, Prince Consort?"

"If you didn't go, then explain to me why you and the Crown Prince look.... ah!"

Before Lin Shan could finish, her mouth was bounded. Immediately after, the sky spun and Lian Feng speedily brought them both inside the stable.

Lin Shan's mouth was covered as she fought to say: "What are you doing?!" The next moment, Lian Feng struck her acupoint and she wasn't able to speak. Currently, her movements were suppressed and Lin Shan was like a frozen figure inside the stable. A moment passed and two Imperial Bodyguards walked by the stable as they talked and laughed. They were totally unaware of their presence.

After the two guards were far away, Lin Shan finally felt like she could breathe again. Lian Feng released her, but although Lian Feng had a mask on, she could slightly sense his face was turning pale; not to mention his eyes revealed a strange emotion.

Lin Shan wanted to speak, but since Lian Feng struck her acupoint, she couldn't speak nor move. The only thing she could do was lie in this stinky stable as she gave Lian Feng the death glare.

"Mm..." She tried hard to make a protesting sound.

“I can unlock your acupoint, but you must promise me not to ramble.” Lian Feng’s voice was calm, but there was a hint of severity that Lin Shan had never seen before. She was alarmed as she blinked, indicating that she understood.

“Promise me you won’t say anything, you understand?”

“Mm....”

With a blink of an eye, the acupoint was unlocked and Lin Shan felt a sense of relieve from head to toe. She scrambled to get up as she yelled: “Ai ya my mother! You... mm!!!!”

Once again, her mouth was covered. Lian Feng seized her wrist and with a bit of force, she tumbled back down. Lin Shan’s back was against the wooden fence of the stable as Lian Feng’s face got very to close her. The two of them were practically wrapped around each other. Lin Shan could smell his scent of masculinity and it was making her slightly dizzy.

“No matter what you know, you must not tell or ask. Do you hear me?” The voice coming into her ear was low and grim.

Lin Shan felt dizzy and wanted to question him. However, her mouth was still covered. Therefore, she could only nod as a response.

Seeing her nod, Lian Feng released his hand from her mouth. Song Luo’s soft lips on his palm distracted him for a few moments. He somewhat eased his tense attitude: “If you tell anyone, a lot of people will be harmed. Understand?”

Lin Shan remained still and weakly asked: “Would it harm you?”

Lian Feng froze, and then nodded.

“Then I won’t say anything.” Lin Shan instantly covered her mouth, indicating her standpoint. Although sometimes she was very impulsive and did stupid things, deep down she knew what was right and wrong. Ever since she had entered the Palace, those who had been kind to her all had an ulterior motive. Although Lian Feng was stiff and serious, he was the only person who hadn’t tried to gain anything from her.

If a good person will be harmed due to her failure to hold a secret, then she deserved to die. Even if he wasn’t a good person, I must protect him for the sake

of his golden sabre!

Thinking about this gave Lin Shan a surge of pride. She smacked her chest and said: “Don’t worry. I swear on the people of the Communist party, I will not say anything! If you don’t believe me, we can pinky promise!” With a serious face, she took out her pinky finger.

Lian Feng didn’t expect him to suddenly react like this. He was stupefied. As he looked at the tender pinky in front of him, another sweet fragrance seemed to be coming out of Song Luo’s body. He couldn’t help but recalled the moment he had embraced him. As he thought about it, he seemed to have carelessly touched his chest as well. It seemed...

All a sudden, Lian Feng appeared to have realized something. His facial expressions immediately darkened. He hastily stood up.

Lin Shan still had her pinky raised and felt like it was going to be numb soon. She didn’t expect Lian Feng to stand up so abruptly. His expression seemed odd but she didn’t want to think too much.

Lian Feng was worried he would reveal the secret. He got up so quickly that he didn’t pat away the hay that was sticking onto his pants.

“Hey! I said I’m not going to say anything. You’re still mad at me? Hello....”

“It is getting late. If Prince Consort has no other issues, please return to rest.”

Why is it this line again? Can’t you switch it up? You’re always saying it’s late. It’s not late, okay? Stop giving the sky so much pressure!

Lin Shan felt a bit moody. However, when she thought about Lian Feng’s reaction again, she thought: He’s probably traumatized? Or perhaps excessively nervous. As a person with a strong heart, I must learn to understand those who are mentally weaker than me.

Lin Shan felt free again, and bid farewell to Lian Feng. She took one more look at the golden sabre as she hummed: “I’m a little spinach, spinachhhhhhhhh.....” She headed back towards her residence and fully failed to realize that someone has already discovered her biggest secret.

Lian Feng remained where he was as he stared at Lin Shan’s disappearing

figure. He fixedly gazed until she had disappeared from sight. For the first time ever, his heart didn't know what to think.

Chapter 20

To my dear readers,

This chapter isn't too exciting but next chapter will be really good! Unfortunately, I have an autoimmune disorder and I am in a lot of physical pain right now. Hopefully I can finish it on the weekend, but please be patient with me. (if you go through my personal blog posts, you can find out more)

A common question I get asked is, "How did you learn to read Chinese?" I have written a post on it before. If you want, you can take a look: [How to read Chinese](#)

Chapter 20

Three days later, Lin Shan went to the Imperial Censor building to do her job.

The Imperial Censor building was where they supervise institutions in Ancient China. Their job was to present matters, inspect, and propose ideas and give suggestions to the Emperor.

Honestly, this would be considered a cushy job. However, Lin Shan always had the worse of luck. On the first day she took office, they were notified that the someone from the Imperial Court was going to come and scrutinize them. Right now, everyone was trying to get their act together.

You need to understand, the Imperial Censor building was a control institution. The officials were all amazing at bullshitting. Whoever that dared to offend them, they would flip the table; from white to black, dead to living. Therefore, regardless of ranking, most of the government officials did not dare to mess with them.

As a result, those working in the Imperial Censor building have all become obnoxious and proud. Their behaviours had a lot of issues but no one could do anything about it. Now that someone from the Imperial Court was suddenly coming to check on them, they were freaking out. Another issue was, they must find a person to greet and handle the visitor.

Speaking of Lin Shan, her luck couldn't get any more rotten than this. She was going to live as a carefree Prince Consort, but due to the confiscation of Wu

Liang Zhi's residence, not only did she fail to gain a profit, she ended up becoming an Imperial Censor -thanks to the Emperor's Imperial edict. As a modern person, she could only read half of the Ancient text. How the heck was she going to do this job?

While she was busy fuming, a few elders suddenly came to talk to her. They were hoping she would take the responsibility of welcoming and handling the Imperial visitor that shall be arriving shortly.

Lin Shan's eyes lit up. Welcoming someone?? That was definitely way better than staring blankly at a bunch of words she couldn't read! Thus, she gladly took on this task that no one wanted. Right away, Lin Shan became extremely popular amongst all her new colleagues. Whenever anyone saw her, they would respectfully say: Song superior, I wish you well."

Lin Shan felt light and free. All she had to do was lead an inspection. How difficult could that be? Thinking back to her days in the student union, the most important thing was the opening act.

If there is a great show, the visitor will feel well regarded. If the visitor feels good, then getting along will be easy. If we can get along, I can deal with him. If I can deal with him, then everything will be OK!

Just like that, Lin Shan directed a bunch of people to line up in two rows to yell a slogan. She also ordered a table of luxurious feast as a welcoming reception. Now, all they need to do is wait for his arrival.

Just as Lin Shan was feeling pleased with herself, the person from the Imperial Court arrived. The moment he entered, Lin Shan saw a familiar face and knew she was doomed.

Are you f**king serious?! No one told me the person coming was the Crown Prince!? T_____T

Originally, Du Hao was simply planning to patrol around the Imperial Censor building. But the moment he entered the doorway, he was surrounded by ear splitting singing.

Right when he entered the doorway, there were officials standing on both left and right, cheerfully singing: "We welcome you ah! Welcome welcome you wa!

We enthusiastically welcome you, do not go ah! If you have to patrol then patrol wa! Hai yah yi ah! Hai yah yi ah!...”

Lin Shan created her own lyrics of a popular folk song and incorporated dramatic movements along with it. All the officials behind Du Hao were stunned. Even the calm Gu Zuo couldn't utter a sound; he stared as the corner of his mouth twitched.

Lin Shan was the leader of the group. She couldn't help but sweat as she secretly peeked to see Du Hao's reaction. Du Hao only looked astonished for a few seconds, but he quickly composed himself again. He scanned around the area, and within a few seconds, he made eye contact with Lin Shan. Lin Shan instantly looked down.

This situation was not looking good!

I better apologize. Lin Shan was about to say her famous line “Your Highness, I know my wrongs!” when Du Hao calmly said: “Not bad, let us go in and take a look.”

The words that were supposed to come out were stuck in Lin Shan's throat. She almost choked: Oh, so the Crown Prince likes this type of thing!

“Song superior doesn't plan to lead the way?”

There was a bit of teasing in Du Hao's voice, and Lin Shan felt unsure of herself. As she lead Du Hao inside, she felt disgruntled because she couldn't tell what Du Hao was thinking.

Honestly, she was usually quite good at reading signs. For instance, she could totally see through Du Ming Yue. Yet, when it came to Du Hao, she had no idea. He was clearly a Crown Prince. Why didn't he remain inside the Palace to enjoy life? Why must he always meddle in things? It didn't make sense.

Last time, he should have been quite angry at her for the incident during confiscation. However, he acted like nothing has happened.

What are you thinking? I can't see through you!!

Lin Shan was so distracted she didn't paying attention to where she was going. She tripped on an upcoming doorstep and fell down like a pitiful mess.

Ai ya! Lin Shan was on the ground, rubbing her bottom.

“Are you alright, Song Superior?” Du Hao’s voice could be heard from above.

At least you have some conscience. If you help me up, I won’t be bothered. Lin Shan waved her hand and said: “I’m alright. I’m fine....”

“If you’re fine, that’s good. Let’s go, Gu Zuo. We shall take a look inside.” Du Hao lead the rest of the officials into the building and never looked back.

Poor Lin Shan was left on the ground by herself. She couldn’t believe Du Hao just left her like that. She was so angry, she wanted to beat someone with a hammer! Oh my brothers and sisters, this is revenge! Du Hao, just you wait. Last time you took my golden ru yi, this old grandma will get her revenge! Just you wait!!!

— — —

The Crown Prince had always been very frugal. The whole nation was aware of this. Therefore, the luxurious feast that Lin Shan had initially prepared naturally didn’t happen. After Du Hao and his officials were done patrolling, Lin Shan packed up her stuff and prepared to head back to the Palace.

Since she was the Prince Consort, she didn’t have to live in the Imperial Censor building. She was granted a horse carriage that specifically took her from the Palace to her new workplace. Lin Shan was quite pleased with this. Although her job didn’t benefit her much, at least she has her own transportation. It allowed her to experience the treatment of a high ranked official.

Unexpectedly, when she exited, the horse carriage was nowhere to be seen.

What...what is going on?

Lin Shan was baffled. She walked a circle around the entrance but couldn’t even find signs of the horse’s hoof. What the hell? The Palace isn’t too far, but it isn’t close either. Does this mean she has to walk back? Her butt was still hurting from this afternoon, okay?

At this moment, the sound of a horse carriage could be heard. She turned around and saw a luxurious looking carriage that stopped right in front of her. The cloth was lifted and the annoying face of the Third Prince Du Jing popped

out. He cunningly smiled at Lin Shan.

“Does Song brother need a ride back to the Palace? Would you want to join me for the ride?”

Anyone with a brain could tell something was up. Du Jing was scheming something again.

Lin Shan sighed. But she was also curious. What kind of twisted soul was he? As a Prince, not only did he wanted to steal the golden sabre of an Imperial guard, now he took my horse carriage? I’m sure in all of history, no one is as bizarre as you!

At that split moment, Lin Shan really wanted to see what this bizarre person is up to.

Thus, she nodded and smile: “Third Prince, sorry for the inconvenience!”

Chapter 21

To my dear readers,

I'm still quite unwell, but I managed to finish this chapter today. I hope you like it. It was extra long and quite difficult for me to translate. My mom asked me why I put so much effort in doing free work...*sigh* I said, "Hey, you never know. I might get donations this week!" lol ♥

Chapter 21

The luxuriousness of the Third Prince's carriage was comparable to a modern Rolls-Royce!

The interiors of the carriage was all gold. On the seat lied a soft woolen cushion. Du Jing was lying on his side. He was wearing a dark green gown, and his long hair was bind up together by an emerald hairpin* There were a few loose strands that lingered around his neck, attracting attention on his white and delicate collarbone.

As he lied on his side, there was a long table of fine household utensils on the embroidered tablecloth. On the table were dried fruits, pastries, and a white jade wine pot and goblets. Anyone viewing this would feel the extravagance.

The moment Lin Shan looked at her surroundings, she sighed in her heart: What a big sinner!

"Song brother, please sit." Du Jing flirtatiously smiled as Lin Shan got onto the carriage. If the greeters of Leaning Vermilion House saw Du Jing's smile, they would be ashamed of themselves.

"Third Prince, for some reason, every time I see you, I can't help but think of a flower."

"Brother, what type of flower are you thinking of?"

"Sunflower!"

"Do you have a source?"

"I don't have a source, but I've heard of a very powerful martial arts called,

“The Sunflower manual”. After you practice it, not only would you become an ultimate expert, your muscles would be very flexible, your blood would be enriched, and your skin would be nourished. It’s definitely very suitable for you, Third Prince!”

“Woah. This type of martial arts exist? How could I have never heard of it before?”

“It is said that this is an extinct text. I have only heard of it. If it interests you, Third Prince, you should find someone to scout it out. If you find it, even if you don’t care for the fighting aspect, it’s still good to strengthen your body!”

“True. Song brother has such profound knowledge. I admire you.” Du Jing then poured wine into the two goblets and said, “Come, Song brother, let’s drink together.”

“Thank you for your good intention, Third Prince. However, your brother’s body is weak. Unfortunately, I cannot handle the wine. Please accept my apologies.” Lin Shan faked a smile, but deep down she was screeching a hundred and eighty times at Du Jing: Drink your wine? Do you think I’m an idiot? Last time you drugged Lian Feng with aphrodisiac and your sister here hasn’t even gotten revenge yet!

“Does Song brother think I put poison in the wine?” Du Jing was rather straightforward.

“Third Prince, you are too serious! As part of the Royal family, why would you do something as low as drugging the wine? Even if you were to put something, it would definitely be tonic. However, most people drink too much tonic and may suffer from excessive internal heat. One should restrain from drinking too much.”

Du Jing could tell Lin Shan was trying to scold at him indirectly, but he wasn’t angry. In fact, he was amused as he drank the wine on his own. He started to engage in small talk with Lin Shan.

Although Lin Shan’s knowledge of the Ancient world was limited, she had memorized some Tang and Song dynasty poetry in the past. Therefore, she could somewhat deceive her opponent and act like she knew what she was talking about.

But after awhile, Lin Shan became increasingly curious. You took my horse carriage...you wouldn't simply want me to come to drink wine with you, right? It can't be that simple...

Just as she was doubting herself, Du Jing finally brought up the main topic.

"Next month, the Palace will be holding an equestrian archery competition. Song brother, are you prepared?"

An equestrian archery competition? Lin Shan suddenly remembered Lian Feng checking out the horses the other day. It was probably related to this: "I have heard about the competition, but I am not taking part. Why would I need to be prepared?"

Du Jing cunningly smiled: "Song brother is joking, right? Each year, the Imperial Palace holds an equestrian archery competition. Any male who is under the age of thirty and part of the Imperial household must take part. In addition, important ministers must also send their sons to participate. The winner will get a prize at the end. This competition has been taking place for years. It is part of our customs, Song brother must know this, right?"

Are you serious? Are you saying I have to take part too? Lin Shan's heart trembled. But almost immediately, she realized something. Her eyes shone: A prize??

At that moment, Lin Shan felt free again. Finally, she could move on from the loss of her golden ru yi. She has a new target to strive for!

"I wonder what the Emperor would give as a prize?" She slyly asked as she beamed.

Du Jing didn't expect Song Luo to respond so positively all of a sudden. A few seconds ago, he seemed to see him as an enemy. Now, he was smiling and leaning forward. A faint fragrance entered his nose and distracted him a little.

"The prize is only announced at the end of the competition. But it is always something Father personally chooses. He doesn't like to be predictable. For instance, last year, Father bestowed a death exemption gold medal to the Crown Prince. It was the first time in history."

"Death exemption gold medal? That means it's gold! A surge of emotions

swelled inside Lin Shan. She was squirming with joy.

“What? Is Song brother interested in the prize?”

Anyone with a brain would be interested, okay? Lin Shan thought to herself. On the outside, she looked composed and carefully responded: “Haha. Of course not. The most important thing is to take part. Friendship first, competition second!”

“You are correct.” Du Jing coolly smiled.

The carriage suddenly stopped. They have arrived back to the Imperial Palace.

Lin Shan bid farewell to Du Jing with the beautiful dream of attaining the prize. She cheerfully hopped off the carriage. Once she disappeared from sight, a dark strong figure slipped into Du Jing’s carriage.

“Your subordinate Gui Mei, greets you, Master.” The woman had her face covered. She was dressed in all black.

Du Jing sat up from his seat. At this moment, his facial expression had totally reversed. It was as if he had become a different person. He narrowed his eyes and looked down at Gui Mei. He dropped down his voice: “Gui Mei, it seems like we have quite a lot of competitors in our upcoming competition.”

“Master, you are implying that we need to do something before the competition.....?”

“Do I need to make it any more clearer?”

“Yes! Gui Mei accepts your order!” The woman in black bowed and was about to leave.

“Wait!” Du Jing called. “Also, find someone to help me scout a book called “The Sunflower manual”. When you find it, report back to me.”

“Your subordinate will do as you bid!” Then within a second, the curtain** of the carriage spun, and the woman in black disappeared from sight.

Lin Shan decided to practice horse riding.

As a modern person, she must work extra hard in order to have a chance in the

equestrian archery competition. If not, she would be handing her opponent the reward! Lin Shan wasn't a hard working person, but once she had a goal, she would do her very best to reach it. She doesn't give up easily.

In the morning, Lin Shan wore a sturdy outfit prepared by Xiao Lu. When she arrived at the horse range, many were already practicing their skills. The range was filled with the offsprings of many noblemen and the Imperial family. Out of the crowd, Lin Shan recognized a couple of familiar faces; Du Hao was one of them.

Seeing Du Hao gave Lin Shan a headache. She turned around and headed for the stable to find a horse. However, when she got to the stable, all the horses were already taken except for one. The one remaining had shiny black fur but it was taking a nap. Lin Shan went over, yet it wouldn't even glimpse at her.

At this moment, Lin Shan felt like she was going through an interview for her child. It was as if her son was sitting on a special spot; she had a very lousy feeling about this.

Just then, the horse keeper came over. His complexion didn't look too good: "Superior, this horse is very difficult to manage. Are you sure you want this one?"

Lin Shan pitifully looked at him in the eye: "Does it look like I have any other choice?"

The horse keeper looked at his left and right. Then he silently opened the door to lead the horse out. He warned Lin Shan once more: "Superior, please be extra careful. This horse is fierce and very difficult to tame."

Lin Shan wanted to cry. Are you serious? If I had known this would happen, I would have came earlier! She turned to face the horse. No matter how forcefully she pulled the reins, this black horse wouldn't budge. Lin Shan felt miserable. She sadly reached her hand to pat the horse's neck: "Horse brother. It is destiny that we have met. Come on, give me some face!"

The black horse still refused to take a single step.

Lin Shan kept trying to reason with it: "I'm the Prince Consort (fu ma in Mandarin). You are a horse (ma in Mandarin). We are both from the Ma family!

We have to unite and work together!”

The horse snorted and continued to disregard her existence.

From a close distance, Lian Feng heard Lin Shan and the corner of his mouth twitched. He stepped forward and reached out to grab the reins from Lin Shan’s hands. Then, he went up to the horse and whispered something in the horse’s ear. Within a few seconds, the horse started to move.

Woah! Lin Shan was astonished. She looked at Lian Feng admiringly: “You even know how to speak Horse tongue?? Respect.. Respect!”

Lian Feng was already accustomed to Lin Shan’s words and behaviour, therefore he didn’t seem fazed at all. All he said was: “Wu Ying’s temper is quite intense. Are you sure you want him, Prince Consort?”

Oh, so this horse was called Wu Ying? “You think I want to pick him? When I came, he was the only one left!” Lin Shan sharply said. The moment she said those words, it was as if the horse understood her. He hissed at her in a very unfriendly manner.

Lian Feng crinkled his brows as he held the reins tightly to control Wu Ying: “Ok, I’ll go look around to see if there are any other horses you could use instead.”

“Okay! Go!” Lin Shan nodded. Then she made a silly face at Wu Ying.

Wu Ying hissed again. As they looked at each other, they both looked irritated.

At this moment, Du Hao came over with his horse with an unpredictable smile on his face. He said in a clear tone: “Would the Prince Consort give me face to compete a round with me?”

*This is the hairpin. You pretty much stab it in the middle of a bun.



Guys had long hair. I couldn't find one with a hairpin sticking out, but you get the idea.

**This is what I mean by the door curtain. I know it sounds really confusing in English, so I found a picture. (lol, a picture is worth a thousand words, right?)



Chapter 22

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Sandy Nguyen** and **Himme Nguyen** for their donations. It means a lot to me!!! Translating is very hard and when people donate, I feel so appreciated. Thank you. ❤️

Anyhow, I hope you enjoy this chapter. Du Hao is so mean. Are you guys still shipping him and Lin Shan?

Here is a promoted post: [Why you should start an online business](#)

Chapter 22

The news that the Crown Prince and the Prince Consort were going to compete instantaneously spread throughout the range. All the Royal relatives and sons of important officials gathered around the center to witness this rare sight.

Right now, Lin Shan was in the center being surrounded. She felt very depressed.

This is definitely revenge!! He's getting revenge!! Deep down, she viciously cursed at Du Hao as she lifted her head. She stiffly smiled and said: "Your Highness, my skills are inferior to yours. I think we should just let it go..."

Du Hao raised his eyebrows: "So Prince Consort is not going to give me face?"

Lin Shan wanted to burst into tears. He was clearly threatening her. As a Crown Prince, why must you pick on a tiny Prince Consort? You have no manners! She continued to swear at Du Hao in her mind.

Lin Shan placed her hand on her forehead and weakly said: "Aiii ya, I suddenly feel a bit dizzy. So dizzy... I'm going to go over there to sit down..."

She turned around, but was immediately blocked by Gu Zuo, who had a blank expression on his face. He bellowed to the crowd: "Prince Consort. Stop trying to reject and show us what you got!"

"Yes! I heard the Prince Consort is talented and his skills are out of the ordinary. Please allow us to see and experience!"

“We don’t believe what we hear. We only believe what we see. Prince Consort, stop trying to be modest....”

Those are rumours!! Rumours!! Lin Shan could feel the tears coming. Who the hell spread them? I don’t give a shit about being talented or having out of ordinary skills. I just want to keep my life! Lin Shan’s expression looked more dreadful than a crying face.

Du Hao came over and spoke in a harsh tone: “Prince Consort, please lead the way.”

At that moment, Lin Shan knew she was doomed no matter what. She lifted her head and whispered: “Then....can I at least use a different horse?”

Wu Ying impatiently dug his hoof.

“Alright.” Du Hao lifted his head and looked around as he spoke loud and clear: “Is there anyone willing to switch their horses for the Prince Consort?”

Everyone present, including the horses, took a step back.

Lin Shan:

“Prince Consort, you see? I have tried.” Du Hao shrugged his shoulders to show there are no other alternatives.

“Your Highness, I can find a different horse for the Prince Consort.” Lian Feng suddenly stepped out.

“How dare you?” Gu Zuo advanced forward and physically stopped Lian Feng from getting close: “The Crown Prince and the Prince Consort are talking. You have no authority to speak. Get out!”

Lian Feng looks at Lin Shan, and didn’t move an inch.

Everyone felt as if they had swallowed a breath of cold air. They all know that Lian Feng had once saved the Emperor’s life. Thus, the Emperor highly favoured him. Even most important government officials would respect Lian Feng and let him have his way. However, those were only government officials. They didn’t think Lian Feng would dare to set himself against the Crown Prince. Right now, everyone was expecting a good show.

Du Hao narrowed his eyes. He carefully looked at Lian Feng, but his expression

was difficult to fathom.

Lin Shan could sense something was wrong immediately. Lian Feng and Du Hao looked exactly the same. It couldn't simply be a coincidence. Plus, Lian Feng had already warned her never to bring up this topic. Undoubtedly, it was a taboo subject. But now, Lian Feng was openly trying to confront Du Hao. What if something happened to him? What if Lian Feng gets punished?

Although Lin Shan was a gold digger, deep down she was still a good person. She ran between Du Hao and Lian Feng as she lightly pushed Lian Feng: "No need to switch. No need to switch. This horse looks rather alert. You probably have no issues, right?" She turned back to glance at Wu Ying.

Wu Ying dug his hoof and with disdain, he flung his head.

Lin Shan awkwardly laughed and joked: "Not corrupted by wealth. Not shaken by poverty. Good horse! Good horse!"

Everyone:

Since Lin Shan stepped out, the intense confrontation had been broken. Everyone else's attention was now on Lin Shan. Lin Shan totally regretted it now.

Oh my goodness, what ability do I have? I can't even get on the horse. How can I compete? T__T

Lin Shan felt like a tragic soul as everyone had their watchful gazes on her. She summoned up the courage and reached for Wu Ying's saddle. However, Wu Ying suddenly whined and galloped a couple steps; leaving Lin Shan behind.

Right away, those who were hoping for a good show all sighed in disappointment. Seriously? This was the skills of the Prince Consort? The ones spreading the rumours must have been blind.

A person who wasn't afraid to start trouble jeered: "Prince Consort, why don't you get on the horse?"

"Yes. Get on! Get on!"

By now, Du Hao had already leaped onto his horse with ease. This horse was called Chi Mei, and it had accompanied Du Hao during his battles in the desert. Chi Mei lifted its front hooves and neighed. The sound was so dominating that all

the horses around backed off a couple of steps. The only exception was Wu Ying. Currently, Wu Ying had its head down and was chewing on grass.

Lin Shan was flabbergasted: “Hey bro. I know you’re a big shot. You don’t care to compete with others. But look! This horse is looking down on you. Are you just going to accept this?”

Wu Ying ignored her and continued to chew his grass in a carefree manner.

Lin Shan was enraged and slapped the horse on its back: “If you’re a man, let me get on!”

Everyone was shocked by her gesture. There was a lot of murmuring and pointing going on: Is that a male horse? Is it? It’s not, right??

Wu Ying stopped chewing grass and lifted its head. It was as if he could understand Lin Shan.

Lin Shan was beaming: Brother, you have guts. I like!

Lin Shan optimistically climbed onto the saddle as her feet stepped on the stirrup. Wu Ying clenched its teeth and actually allowed her to stay on!

At that moment, Lin Shan felt the pride coming from the bottom of her heart. She turned her head to look at Du Hao in a provoking manner, but saw him watching her with a smile on his face. The way he was smiling at her made Lin Shan shiver and she almost fell off the horse.

Lin Shan quickly wrapped her legs around the horse’s stomach area, but the horse took it as a signal for him to advance. Wu Ying started to gallop and Lin Shan was scared out of her wits. She had both her arms around his neck, and the tighter she held onto Wu Ying, the faster he ran.

Everyone was just watching in astonishment. Although Lin Shan was screaming for help, no one took a step forward.

Lian Feng wasn’t standing too far away, and his eyes revealed his concerns for Lin Shan. He was about to step forward, but Gu Zuo stopped him once again.

“I’m advising you not to get involved, Lian Superior.” Gu Zuo’s voice was cold and menacing. Although he said he was advising him, it was actually a warning.

Lian Feng remained where he was, but his hand was on his golden sabre. Just

as he was hesitating, Lin Shan finally fell off Wu Ying's back. She looked like a pitiful mess.

"Hahahaaha...." Everyone in the crowd burst into laughter. Someone ridiculed: "Oh, so this is what Prince Consort is capable of, eh? You can't even control a horse, how can you control a Princess?"

"The rumours must be false..."

Underneath the cover, Lin Shan was a girl. This fall actually caused her a great deal of pain. It didn't help that everyone else were also laughing and taunting her. Deep down, she felt very wronged and her nose trembled; she wanted to cry.

Lian Feng couldn't hold back any longer. "Get out of my way!" He gravely said to Gu Zuo.

Gu Zuo replied callously: "Lian Superior isn't worried about getting on the Crown Prince's bad side?"

"I'm going to repeat once more. Get out of my way." He growled as he lowered his voice a couple more tones. Underneath the mask, his eyes looked almost beast like. The glare unexpectedly caused Gu Zuo to feel slightly intimidated. Why did those eyes look so familiar?

While Gu Zuo was being distracted, Lian Feng had already appeared by Lin Shan's side.

"Leave me alone!" Lin Shan pushed the hand away from her. "I don't need your pity. I can get up myself!"

At that moment, Lian Feng felt a bit absent minded. This was the first time he had ever seen her like this. Her face showed her stubbornness, toughness, and determination to succeed. It was very different from her usually mischievous self. Although she didn't appear to be frail, something ignited within Lian Feng's heart and he wanted to protect her at all cost.

While Lian Feng was zoning out, Lin Shan had already gotten up on her own. Although she could be lackey at times, once her stubbornness had been aggravated, she will not give up.

The laughter continued, but Lin Shan didn't let it bother her. She used her hand to wipe her dirty face and once again, tried to hold onto Wu Ying's reins to get back up onto the horse.

Wu Ying fervently shook its body and caused Lin Shan to fall off once more.

Painful! So painful! But Lin Shan didn't cry. She was clearly aware of her situation. In this time and age, she no longer has her parents to rely on. She also has no friends to cry to. If she wanted to get up, she could only rely on herself.

With great difficulty, she got up from the ground. Fresh blood was seeping out from her arms. At this moment, the laughter seemed to have subsided a little. The demoralizing glances were also slowly disappearing.

Lian Feng stood on the side. He wanted to help her, but was mesmerized by the determination in Lin Shan's eyes. Thus, he remained where it was.

Just like that, Lin Shan climbed onto the horse again and again. Each time, Wu Ying flung her off. After this continuously happened, Du Hao finally spoke up.

"There's no point in competing. Gu Zuo!"

"Your subordinate is here."

"Head back to the Palace." Du Hao's face stiffened and left without turning his head back. Gu Zuo followed right behind him, but he did turn back to glance at Lin Shan in a curious manner.

Since the Crown Prince left, there was no more show to watch. Everyone else departed as well. Soon, there were only Lin Shan and Lian Feng left.

Lin Shan seemed a bit stunned. It wasn't because she had fallen many times, instead she was having trouble adjusting to the sudden change. After a few moments later, she finally snapped out of it: This means... I don't have to compete!?!

Her eyes shone and the pain from her injuries seemed to have subsided. She lifted her head and made eye contact with Lian Feng. She gave him a foolish smile.

In the future, Lian Feng will ask himself. When did I start falling for this girl? The first thing that would come to his mind would be her smile.

Chapter 23

To my dear readers,

I'm going to link you guys the Chinese version of the novel. If you can read Chinese, you don't have to wait for my translations. If you decide to spoil the story for yourself and then come back to read my translations, don't blame me. My translations are not exactly 100% accurate. I would say around 90%. Sometimes, I just can't translate a sentence because it's honestly too different in English. (Imagine looking at those texts and translating it into something you could understand. Until you actually translate, you wouldn't know how hard it is)

Click here for the [Chinese](#)

Btw, a reader mentioned how I should be using Emperor instead of King. Therefore, I am now using Emperor as King. It is more accurate. I wasn't thinking precisely enough.

P.S. Promoted post: [Shaming](#)

Chapter 23

NOTE: *SONG LIN FENG is not LIAN FENG*. Song Lin Feng is Song Luo's brother. Please do not mix up the two. Their names are very similar.

GUI MEI's master is the 3rd Prince. *CHI MEI* is the Crown Prince's horse. (Just stating in case you get confused)

A month had gone by, and the yearly Imperial equestrian competition was fast approaching.

Lin Shan went to practice daily. Although Wu Ying continued to ignore her, at least he didn't bother flinging her off anymore. Perhaps horses were just like humans. After doing something numerous times, they would also become numb to it. Not to mention, Lin Shan was shameless, she was not going to stop until she reaches the Yellow River.

Under Lian Feng's guidance, Lin Shan's horrid riding skills had improved

substantially. However, Lin Shan was not satisfied. Her goal was to become the ultimate first place winner. But based on her current level, she was definitely not going to win. Hence, she was trying to come up with another tactic.

By the way, this equestrian competition was not an individual competition. It was actually team based. There were four teams in total. The Heaven team was led by the Crown Prince Du Hao; his team consisted of other Princes. The Earth team was led by the Third Prince Du Jing; his team consisted of Princes and the sons of some of the royal uncles. The last two teams were the Imperial officials teams. The leader of the Mystical team was Liu Qin Yun, the son of the Imperial tutor. Lastly, the Golden team that Lin Shan was part of was under Song Lin Feng, her brother.

Logically, based on the skills of Song Lin Feng, coming out as the winner shouldn't be difficult. However, Song Lin Feng was a very cautious man. He'd rather give up the first place than to offend anyone of authority. Thus, Lin Shan could only rely on herself.

Lin Shan quickly examined each leader in her mind. First, Liu Qin Yun. Sources have told her that he had spent his childhood with the Crown Prince and was super loyal to him. Therefore, he definitely wouldn't try to come out ahead of Du Hao. He could be eliminated as a threat.

Next, Du Jing. In Lin Shan's opinion, Du Jing would probably only be a threat if the reward was a beautiful woman. She didn't think Du Jing would be interested in any gold, silver or precious stones. Therefore, she removed him as a threat.

So basically, her only threat was Du Hao.

The thought of Du Hao infuriated Lin Shan. Even if she couldn't get the prize, she was not going to let him get it! For a nobleman to get revenge, ten years is not too long. For a woman to get revenge, she will show you tomorrow*!

Therefore, the day before the competition, Lin Shan used the excuse of practicing to enter the stable and secretly mixed some "condiments" into Chi Mei's pasture.

This "condiment" was something Lin Shan specifically bought from the black market. Apparently, it was a horse stimulant and a tiny dosage could cause a horse to be excited during a competition. The acceleration will make it very

difficult for the rider to control the horse, which in turn will make shooting nearly impossible.

Lin Shan's plan should be flawless, since the horse would only be acting crazy during the competition. No one would be able to tell it was her doings.

But Lin Shan had underestimated an opponent. That person was Du Jing. He may seem like he had no intention of winning the prize, but his goal was definitely to come out first. In fact, he wanted to destroy his opponents so badly that he assigned Gui Mei to drug the horses.

And the drug he gave Gui Mei was the same one that Lin Shan used.

Remember, the horses could only handle a small dosage of the drug. If a lot is used, then the horses will clearly be aggravated. Since Lin Shan and Gui Mei both drugged the Heaven team, a disaster has occurred.

That night, all of the horses from the Heaven team, including Du Hao's beloved Chi Mei, were crazy high. The entire night, they were neighing nonstop. By the morning, all eight horses were exhausted and could no longer move.

Everyone was stunned; especially the cunning Du Jing. Du Jing harshly shrieked at Gui Mei, and poor Gui Mei couldn't figure out what went wrong.

This incident spread to the Emperor's ear, and he was enraged.

What the hell? This competition only occurs once a year. It cannot be delayed or cancelled! Obviously someone had tried to scheme something to affect the results. How dare they? The Emperor angrily announced the dismissal of all the horse keepers and declared he was going to investigate thoroughly on what has happened. In addition, the competition was still going to take place. However, no horses will be used.

So the equestrian competition was now an archery competition.

Lin Shan totally regretted her actions...if only she hadn't put so much "condiments". Now, Du Hao still had the advantage. As for her....Lin Shan took out her slingshot. Why couldn't it be a slingshot competition instead? T__T

However, the sudden switch of the competition was very unattractive to many of the participants. The challenge had decreased tremendously and they lost all

of their initial enthusiasm. What was the point of competing?

The Emperor was frustrated. Originally, the purpose of this competition was to excavate talent! He wanted to nurture a capable individual as well as create a national competition for the youngsters. Now, everyone lacked the fire to participate. How could he not be upset?

Therefore, the Emperor had a discussion with his officials and decided to add something on top of the archery competition. He included a treasure hunt component. Whoever that was able to find the three East China Sea Night Pearls that will be hidden will be the winner of the competition. A grand prize will be rewarded to the winner.

Once this Imperial edict was announced, there was a big commotion.

Lin Shan was nearly hysterical. Woah!!! This is what you call a competition! Who cares about horse riding or archery shooting!?! So typical. Treasure hunt is the way to go! Plus, it could release her potential!! Lin Shan was very thrilled as she listened to her brother's arrangements.

"Yang Master and Li General, you guys will be responsible for this part. Mo brother... you will be responsible for this. As well, Chen brother, you will be responsible for this..." Song Lin Feng assigned tasks to everyone, and lastly his eyes landed on Lin Shan.

Lin Shan was smiling like a fool as she happily waited for her assignment.

"You." Song Lin Feng pointed at his troublesome sister, "are going to be with me."

What?!?! Lin Shan was horrified. Big brother. What do you mean? Don't tell me you want me to be a backup and stay to "guard". No! I want to be a forward! Lin Shan rejected but Song Lin Feng refused to let her out of his sight.

Lin Shan knew she must act on her own. Right before the competition started, she secretly hid a map on herself. Later, she was going to find an opportunity to hunt by herself.

However, Song Lin Feng could see right through his sister. Once the competition began, everyone went inside the forest, but poor Lin Shan was stopped by her brother who had grabbed her by the neck collar.

“Song Luo, if you dare to give me trouble, I promise you that you will never have any good days in your life.” Song Lin Feng harshly glared and warned her. He was showing a side that others never see.

Lin Shan couldn't help but sigh for Du Ming Yue's sake. Oh Princess! You think your ideal man is so perfect? If you know what Song Lin Feng is truly like, would you still keep him in your heart? What a tragic story!? Tragic, I tell you!

Lin Shan shook her head, but Song Lin Feng wouldn't let go of her collar. She was stuck by his side.

The competition started at noon and continued all the way until sunset. Lin Shan couldn't find an opportunity to slip away at all. When the Sun was finally starting to set, Song Lin Feng said: “Time is almost up. Let's go.”

Hello!? Are you nuts? I came here to look for treasure, not to leisurely stroll around. Even if you're trying to go easy on your opponents, you shouldn't be like this!? Lin Shan fumed and mumbled: “I need to pee.”

Song Lin Feng crinkled his brows: “Hold it.”

“No!” Lin Shan angrily retorted. “You're a man. You can pee anywhere. I'm a woman. I've already held it in for the entire day. If I continue holding it in, I will damage my internals. I need to pee. I need to pee... I need to pee!!!!”

“Oh my goodness. You're such a brat!” Song Lin Feng frowned and then waved his arm. “Hurry up and go. Don't even think of doing anything silly. The forest is dangerous at night.”

Lin Shan stuck out her tongue: The competition was almost over. I bet my treasures have already been found by others. Why would I go and look for them now? She thought as she went to a dense part of the forest to relieve herself.

Just as she squatted down, she saw a familiar figure.

Du Hao?!?

Lin Shan froze for a second, but quickly reacted. She quickly finished her business and grabbed her hidden slingshot from her waist.

For a nobleman to get revenge, ten years is not too long. For a woman to get revenge, she will show you tomorrow!!!*

*The author is trying to be funny and punny. Unfortunately, it doesn't work in English. lol

Chapter 24

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank Tiffany Wong for her donation! Every little bit counts and I am grateful you chose to donate to me. ♥♥

Anyhow, this chapter is quite funny. Lin Shan is hilarious. Haha. Unfortunately, I'm unwell again (it's my blood, so my condition is on and off all the time) so you might have to wait a bit longer for Chapter 25. I'll try to finish it by Tuesday.

If you guys appreciate my translations and have the ability to donate, please do. I don't need a lot. A couple dollars from a few of you would make a huge difference for me.

Promoted post: [Daring to Fly](#)

Chapter 24

Lin Shan developed her slingshot skills back when she was a little girl in her grandmother's village. At the time, she would go play with a bunch of other children to capture sparrows. As long as she had her slingshot, she was invincible. Since she possesses this amazing technique, she was full of confidence as she lifted her slingshot. She swears to God that she will get revenge for what Du Hao has done to her the past few times.

The Sun was setting and the sky was starting to darken. Lin Shan was ambushing behind a shrub, watching Du Hao as he paced back and forth. All of a sudden, he stopped to look up at the sky.

I must take advantage of this opportunity!

Lin Shan immediately lifted her slingshot and aimed at a crucial spot. She didn't hesitate at all as she struck.

She expected to hear a cry of pain, but instead, Du Hao disappeared without a trace.

Lin Shan was dumbfounded. Where did he go?

She was very confused. How come he was here a second ago, and disappeared

within a blink? Did he discover her? She felt tense and didn't dare to make another move in case she exposed herself. Therefore, she squatted behind the shrub until she felt like Du Hao was gone.

Lin Shan cautiously stood up, planning to head back and find her brother.

The moment she stood up, there was sounds of rustling leaves and Du Hao reappeared to capture the person that had ambushed him. He placed a dagger on Lin Shan's neck.

Lin Shan was caught off guard and slowly turned around as they both made eye contact. Both of them were appalled.

Du Hao frowned: "How come it's...."

Before he could finish, Lin Shan knew she was in trouble. She loudly yelled: "Look at that!" And while Du Hao's attention was divided, she turned around and ran as fast as she could.

This type of trick would never fool Du Hao. He easily grabbed hold of Lin Shan's collar and pulled her back. He had a devilish smile on his face: "Still think you can run?"

His voice made Lin Shan tremble although she wasn't cold. Currently, all she can sense was danger. They say when dogs are panicking, they may jump over walls. Well, when Lin Shan is panicking, she will also do things she wouldn't normally do.

Lin Shan turned around and without thinking, she lifted her leg like a reflex and ruthlessly kicked Du Hao in the groin.

This kick was definitely the most unforgettable experience of Du Hao's twenty two years. He was in so much pain, he couldn't even stand steadily. However, he wouldn't let go of Lin Shan. He gritted his teeth and exerted all his force and ferociously detained Lin Shan by seizing her by the waist.

This was the difference between a man and a woman. Even if a man was injured, he still had the strength to suppress a woman so that she wouldn't be able to move a single step.

Lin Shan didn't expect Du Hao to grab hold of her. The more she thought

about it, the more frightened she became. She quickly decided to unleash another kick.

But this time, Du Hao had smarten up. He managed to avoid her kick, but his pain from before was still making his legs weak. At the same time, the person he had around by the waist was squirming to escape. This continued for a bit until suddenly the ground gave in and they fell into a trap. Neither of them paid attention and without warning, they both fell into the hole.

Lin Shan was originally struggling to escape, yet suddenly the sky spun in front of her and she felt a harsh impact. All her organs felt like they had fallen out and she was terribly dizzy. One of her legs was in so much pain, it felt numb. But fortunately, her arms were ok. She bit her teeth and felt her surroundings..hmmm?? How come it's so soft???

Below her, a voice growled: "How much longer are you going to touch?"

Huh? Lin Shan quickly opened her eyes. After her eyes adjusted to the dim lighting, she could clearly see Du Hao's extremely annoyed expression. At the same time, she realized that her entire body was on Du Hao, and one of her hands was on his face as she was trying to climb up. Du Hao's handsome face was started to look deformed from her hand.

Lin Shan hastily reacted and lifted both her hands in the air. At the same time, she repeated her famous lines: "Your Highness, I know my wrongs!!"

Du Hao's mouth twitched. He was so angry, he wanted to kill someone. Yet the person he wanted to kill was on his body. "If you know you're wrong, get off! Hurry!"

"Oh oh oh!" Lin Shan clumsily got up, while "accidentally" stepping on both Du Hao's legs. And "coincidentally" stepping on his old injury.

Seeing Du Hao's furious expression, Lin Shan chirped in: "Your Highness, I didn't hurt you on purpose. I know my wrongs... ahhh, watch out!" Right when she spoke, a rock fell down and smashed Du Hao on the head.

Lin Shan wanted to cry for the rock. Rock brother, your self-sacrifice is so touching! I will give you a moment of silence in tribute. Then, she insincerely said: "Your Highness, that was not my fault. I already tried to warn you... ai ya,

watch out!”

Du Hao tried to avoid the rock, but it came from the side. His handsome face had been struck.

Du Hao’s mind was spinning as he heard a voice talking: “I already said to be careful. Seriously... and you’re the Crown Prince...” Lin Shan was trying not to laugh.

An unexpected indescribable anger came rushing up, and Du Hao got up and pressed Lin Shan against the wall.

Lin Shan didn’t expect the injured Du Hao to have so much remaining strength. She froze. By the time she reacted again, her entire body was pressed against the moist and soft soil wall. Du Hao had both his hands on the wall and glared at her very closely.

For a moment, Lin Shan couldn’t tell whether the person in front of her was Lian Feng or Du Hao. However, that moment only lasted for a few seconds. It was immediately clarified by Du Hao’s angry face.

Lian Feng was definitely not this scary! Lin Shan snapped out of it and could see that Du Hao looked at her as if he wanted to devour her. She felt guilty and tried to reason with him: “Your Highness, a nation has its laws, and a family has its rules. Even if you don’t like me, you can’t kill me here. If people find out, they will laugh at you! The Crown Prince of the nation...picking on a defenseless and weak Prince Consort.... ahhhh! Do you want to hit me? Um, just don’t hit the face. I need my face to make money!!”

While Lin Shan was rambling on and on, Du Hao had gotten distracted.

So much resemblance. Truly so similar!

The moment Du Hao saw Song Luo’s face, he noticed the resemblance of a maiden he once liked. Therefore, each time he came across Song Luo, he couldn’t help but noticed all his actions.

However, Song Luo was definitely not the woman he had fallen in love with. In fact, Song Luo was a man. Just because they looked alike, he shouldn’t confuse his feelings. That was not his style.

As a result, each time he saw Song Luo, he purposely picked on him. He wanted to tease and mock him, so that he could forget him. However, the more he tried to forget, the harder it was to forget. At this moment, he had a bizarre thought that Song Luo was the same girl he liked.

The hole was getting dimmer and dimmer. His mind was still dizzy from the rocks that had smashed his head. A non masculine scent went up his nose, and his thoughts were in utter chaos. He couldn't help but wanted to get closer.

Lin Shan was flabbergasted. Not only did Du Hao not hit her, he was leaning in.

Oh my goodness! Could Du Hao be gay??? Lin Shan howled and wailed in her mind. Oh my f**king god, how could I not have realized? He keeps picking on me...because he likes me! Don't little boys pick on girls they like? They refuse to admit, and instead constantly teases the girl. I'm doomed. As a woman, I have created a misunderstanding by pretending to be a man!

"Umm....Your Highness.. I... I don't have this preference.. ah! Watch out!" Lin Shan's eyes widen as they were filled with fear.

Du Hao seemed to have gained back some of his consciousness from Lin Shan's extreme reaction. He frowned: "Don't you know if you try using the same method three times, it loses its effectiveness?" Right after he spoke, he felt a pain on his arm and quickly took out his dagger to cut it away, but it was too late.

The snake fell onto the ground; it had been split in half. Du Hao felt a faint pain running through his arm, indicating he had been bitten.

Lin Shan leaned against the wall and patted her chest: "Oh my goodness. It scared me half to death! I told you to be careful. This time you can't say it's my fault..."

Chapter 25

To my dear readers,

This chapter was so long. It took me forever. The chapters are getting longer and longer and I cannot translate as frequently due to my pain. I'm not sure when the next chapter will be up but I'll try to do it soon. Please be patient because I am trying...T___T

Promoted post: [Social Anxiety](#)

Chapter 25

"This time it's really not my fault. I already tried to warn you. You just didn't believe me. As a person, you shouldn't question others so much...." Lin Shan spoke a jumble of words, then suddenly realized that Du Hao was acting strangely. He gritted his teeth and looked as if he was suffering.

"Hey, what's wrong with you? Hello..."

"Be quiet." Du Hao barked. Then he lowered his voice, "I have been bitten."

"Uh...what??" Lin Shan was stunned. "The snake bit you?" The Sun had just set and the hole they were in was getting darker and darker. Lin Shan never expected Du Hao to be bitten.

Wow, the snake sure has guts. It dares to bite the Crown Prince. It isn't afraid to die?

Wait!! Lin Shan seemed to have thought of something... it....it wasn't a poisonous snake, right?

She wanted to ask, but Du Hao had already sat down crossed legged in a lotus position. There was a faint glowing light coming out from his sack. When he opened it up, it revealed the three night pearls. The light from the pearls lit up the entire hole.

Lin Shan finally realized how poor their situation was. The hole must be at least ten metres in length. It was very narrow and there were no other passageways. The wall was a type of strange rock that didn't look natural.

But at this moment, she didn't care. All her attention was directed towards Du Hao's three night pearls. Her eyes were almost shining as brightly as the pearls.

Du Hao crinkled his brows. He could clearly feel the snake venom spreading throughout his body. If he didn't do anything soon, his life might be in danger. He lifted his head to look at Lin Shan and saw her eyes staring intently at the pearls. He was disgusted. How could this person be the same person as the maiden in his heart?

"Do you want it?" He lifted one of the pearls.

Lin Shan fiercely nodded.

"Help me suck out the snake venom and this is yours."

"Really?!?" Lin Shan looked at him happily, but quickly hesitated. Why would he be so nice? He's not trying to trick me, right? Or.... Lin Shan shrinks her body, "Don't tell me...you have been bitten on the ass...."

The corner of Du Hao's mouth twitched. He patiently tried to calm the rage inside of him: "My arm has been bitten."

"Are you sure... arm and ass is a huge difference...."

"Stop with the bullshit. Do you want it or not?" Du Hao felt like Lin Shan was going to give him an early death at this rate. He frustrated him so much, perhaps his anger will attack his heart.

"I want! I want!" Lin Shan went over like a happy dog and caught the pearl from Du Hao's hands. She placed it by her side, then followed Du Hao's instructions and helped him remove one side of his upper outer garment.

The bitten arm had already started to swell. Two inches above the elbow revealed two bloody dots as streams of blood were oozing out. It was a ghastly sight.

Lin Shan wanted to back off, but when she looked at the lovely night pearl, she grinded her teeth and ripped off some fabric from her clothes to tie on Du Hao's arm.

Right now, she was grateful for the knowledge she had acquired in Primary School. At least she knew the emergency steps of dealing with a snake bite. After

she was done tying, Lin Shan looked around and reached out for the dagger Du Hao had on his waist.

“What are you doing?” Although Du Hao was poisoned, he was still alert. When he fought in the war, he was always exposed and expected constant danger.

“Helping you suck out venom. What do you think? Your dagger is not made from gold.” Even if it was, it’s still incomparable to the golden sabre, Lin Shan thought to herself. Then, she aimed the dagger at Du Hao’s poisoned arm.

After the skin had been split open, black blood starting pouring out from the wound. Looking at it made Lin Shan want to puke.

By now, Du Hao was evidently suffering from the symptoms of being poisoned. His lips were turning purple and his eyelids were starting to droop.

“Hey, don’t sleep!!” Lin Shan was frightened. She didn’t expect the venom to spread so quickly. She no longer hesitated as she lowered her head to suck on his wound.

The black blood was slowly being sucked out from the wound. By now, the hole was reeking of blood. Lin Shan felt like she was also going to be poisoned at this rate.

Fortunately, the blood started turning colour, and the swelling was starting to go down. It gave her confidence to continue sucking.

After a long time, the blood had finally reverted back to its original colour and the swelling had diminished substantially. However, due to the poison and loss of blood, Du Hao looked extremely pale was and very fragile.

“Do you feel a bit better?” Lin Shan asked.

Du Hao nodded, but didn’t say a word.

Lin Shan felt a breath of relief and then realized she herself was about to collapse from exhaustion. When she fell down, she injured her leg. Currently, the numbness had turned into severe pain. She felt a burst of piercing pain, and couldn’t help but shiver and sighed.

“What’s wrong with you?” Du Hao weakly asked.

“What’s wrong with me? You think you’re the only one injured?” Lin Shan sat next to him and rolled up one of her trouser leg and saw that she was missing a chunk of skin on her knee. The blood had already solidify and her injuries were no less than Du Hao’s: “Which asshole did such a terrible deed and dug a hole in such an area? Clearly he/she wanted to cheat someone. Watch you get strike by lightning!”

Rumbling Suddenly, there was a huge clap of thunder coming from the sky.

Lin Shan winced. Hello!? I’m telling you to strike the person who dug the hole. Not me! Wait a minute, it’s raining??

Lin Shan couldn’t believe her awful luck. They were in the middle of nowhere, wounded and crippled. One had his arm destroyed and the other had her leg destroyed. Now, they were going to get a thunder shower? At this moment, Lin Shan wanted to imitate Tarzan and holler at the sky: “Are you playing with me, God?”

While Lin Shan was crouching in the hole feeling depressed with her situation, the Imperial Court had sent out many people in search of the missing Crown Prince. A missing Crown Prince was a very serious issue. The Emperor had ordered the forest to be overturned. The usual calm and empty night forest was now glistening with firelight; shadows of people were everywhere.

“Superior, we have searched the south side. There is nothing.” An Imperial bodyguard rushed over with a grave expression.

“Keep looking! If you can’t find them the first time, look ten more times. They must be found.” Lian Feng’s voice sounded ten million times colder than his usual voice. The Imperial bodyguard felt shivers down his entire body. He trembled and got up to enter the forest again.

A flash of lightning pierced through the night sky. A couple of seconds later, there was a huge rumbling sound. Big drops of rain started falling from the sky.

A bunch of government officials who volunteered to look for the Crown Prince began to whisper amongst themselves: “Have you heard? There is a ghost in the East part of the forest...”

“No way? Perhaps the Crown Prince is....”

“Shhhh! Lower your voice! You want others to hear?”

“Yes yes yes. But we still haven’t found the Crown Prince or the Prince Consort. Do you think something truly happened to them?”

“It’s already so late. Something must have happened! Hopefully the Crown Prince is okay. As for the Prince Consort, he is not the main concern right now!”

“True. The most important thing is to find the Crown Prince. Let’s hurry back. It’s so cold....”

All these private whisperers were heard by Lian Feng. It was making him irritated and restless: “I’m going to look over there.” Then, he led Wu Ying and went into a different part of the forest by himself.

Another sound of thunder rang across the sky, and the raindrops were falling faster and faster. In no time, Lian Feng and Wu Ying were drenched. Wu Ying’s steps were fretful as well.

Even Wu Ying was having difficulties dealing with this weather, how could a maiden handle it?

At this moment, Lian Feng imagined a shivering Lin Shan curled under a tree. Subconsciously, his heart tightened and he pulled onto the reins and continued searching.

At the same time, just as Lian Feng had imagined, Lin Shan was feeling very cold in the deep hole.

Not only was she cold, she was also aching everywhere. Although she had curled her body up, she couldn’t block any of the bitter air. In addition, the rain was pouring from her face into her collar. Her whole body was shaking.

Suddenly, Lin Shan felt something on her body. She realized that Du Hao has taken off his outer garment to cover her. However, the outer garment was soaked as well. Under this situation, it was useless. But since he was pale and weak, Lin Shan decided not to say anything. She leaned her curled body on Du Hao.

Right now, it’s better they used each other than act alone.

Du Hao didn’t expect Lin Shan to lean over. His mind started to fuzz up again

and the two people started to merge as one again. He subconsciously tightly embraced the person in his arm. The rain started to feel less cold.

People say that when you go through struggles together, you develop real feelings/emotions. Lin Shan suddenly felt that Du Hao wasn't a hopeless cause. He actually had some conscience.

While she was thinking about this in a dazed state, she suddenly heard the sounds of a horse and a person calling from above: "Crown Prince, Prince Consort, are you guys down there?"

Lin Shan recognized this familiar voice and wanted to cry. Lian Feng was going to rescue them!

Lian Feng was using Wu Ying to look for Song Luo. However, all of a sudden, Wu Ying stopped and wouldn't move forward. Instead, he led Lian Feng in a different direction. Lian Feng knew Wu Ying must have discovered something.

As expected, there was something. Behind the big bush was a big hole, and there seemed to be movement within the hole. He tried calling out and quickly received a response. Song Luo and the Crown Prince were inside.

Since the officials heard the Crown Prince had been found, they all braved the rain and rushed over with a blanket, hot soup, and umbrella. It was as if they were afraid they cannot contribute. As they reached out their necks, they hoped to get something from their actions.

A few Imperial bodyguards went down with the rope and in a few moments, had rescued the victims.

Lin Shan felt very conscious at this moment; especially when she heard that they were going to be rescued. Although her body was aching, she was filled with the will and desire to survive. As she climbed out of hole, she saw countless of umbrellas and blankets within reach -as well hot soup waiting for her. All of a sudden, she recalled a memory from childhood in which she braved the rain and her mother was waiting by the door for her.

She felt touched and suddenly felt less lonely in this world where she didn't know anyone. Just as she wanted to cry from joy, all the umbrellas left her and all the officials surrounded Du Hao instead. They were considerate with Du Hao

in hundreds of ways, but had totally forgotten about her.

Lin Shan felt her nose tingled, and wanted to burst into tears.

She could feel her tears running down as it mixed with the rain. She felt like she was submerged by the noisy rain and human voices. The firelight and shadows were becoming blurry. Her two legs started trembling and just when she thought she was going to collapse, a person rushed over and steadily supported her by the arm.

“Are you alright?” Lian Feng’s voice sounded unusually concerned.

At least someone remembers me. Lin Shan felt comforted. She used the last bit of strength and smiled with her pale lips: “I’m fine.. I’m good....” Then, she fell into Lian Feng’s arms and lost consciousness.

Chapter 26

To my dear readers,

Long time no see! Sorry for the wait. I have been very unwell. Sigh. Hopefully I will be able to stick with my three chapters this week. However, if I do not, please understand.

Personally, I want to hurry as well because I don't want to take so long to finish the novel. As the novel continues, it gets very physical and romantic *stay tuned*

P.S. I recently broke 300000 views! But I'm still waiting for WordPress to pay me my ad revenue (They only pay me if I hit \$100). I am at \$95 right now (it has been 7 months). Therefore, if you can, please donate to me! A dollar or two can make a huge difference! Anything is better than nothing. ♥♥

Here is my promoted post: [Fear](#)

Chapter 26

After Lin Shan fainted, her fever wouldn't go away. She was unconscious for the entire day and night before she came back from the Hell's entrance*. When she woke up, she realized she was back in the Kingdom Minister (her father)'s residence. Her mother Su Huan and Xiao Lu were by her bedside. Su Huan's eyes were scarlet from all the crying. Xiao Lu's eyes were also red and puffy like a gold fish.

Lin Shan tried to move but felt like all her bones had been taken apart and reconnected back onto her body. Su Huan immediately stopped her: "Luo Er, don't move. You just woke up. Your body is covered in injuries! You can't move!"

Lin Shan didn't protest and obediently nodded her head as she lied back in bed. Suddenly, she felt like everything was unreal.

What happened? Her head hurt and at the moment, she couldn't recall the incident that had led her to this current state. As she lied in bed, she was dazed.

Hearing that his daughter had woken up, the Song Xian who had just finished his imperial duties came rushing in, along with Song Lin Feng (her brother).

“Luo er, you’re finally awake! You scared father to death!” Song Xian only had one son and daughter. Therefore, he treated them like treasures. Although he couldn’t reveal the identity of his daughter, the love the family had for her had never lessen. His daughter’s illness had caused him to aged a few years in just a night. Now that she was awake, how could he not be emotional?

Seeing how the entire household was worried for her, Lin Shan suddenly felt very warm. Although her real parents were far away in a different galaxy and she may never see them again, but at least, in this time and age, she had family who loved her.

It isn’t easy to live two lives. Not to mention, she has encountered such loving families in both lives. What regrets would she have?

Lin Shan shook her head and lightly said: “Father, I’m fine. I’ll be better in a few days.”

“You think you’re okay? Did you know what the doctor said?” Su Huan’s eyes were turning red again. “You are too careless. Your brother told you to stick by his side, yet you didn’t listen. If something happened to you, how are we going to live? Plus, your identity is special. What if someone found out you were a girl? How would that end? Have you thought about it??”

Lin Shan knew she was in the wrongs and held her tongue. She didn’t utter a sound.

Song Xian tried to comfort his wife: “Let it go. The incident has already happened. Don’t blame her anymore. She will be more careful in the future. Luo er, quickly apologize to your mother!”

Lin Shan was somewhat clever and promptly said: “Mother, I’m sorry....”

Hearing her daughter’s weak and cute voice, Su Huan couldn’t keep her heart harden. She sighed: “Fine! You’re a sick patient right now. I’ll leave you alone. You better get well soon! When you’re well, I’ll show you some colours!!” Then, Su Huan went back to her room to rest because she felt exhausted. She had spent the entire night taking care of Lin Shan.

Song Xian lectured Lin Shan a few lines and also left with his wife.

Xiao Lu had no place to lecture, and obediently went to the kitchen to boil

medicine. As she left the room, her steps were light and her face was glowing.

Lastly, there was only Song Lin Feng remaining. However, instead of leaving, he grabbed a seat and sat down. He bluntly poured himself a cup of tea and started to sip on it.

Lin Shan thought his gesture was strange and curiously watched him for awhile from her bed. Once she had enough strength, she asked: "What are you doing?"

"Can't you see? Drinking tea." her brother replied.

Lin Shan was bewildered. There must be something more to this: "Aside from drinking tea, what else do you want?"

"Seems like you have smarten up after getting sick, eh?" Song Lin Feng placed his cup down and scrolled to Lin Shan's bedside. With one finger, he roughly pushed it against her nose, causing her to have a pig nose.

"What are you doing?" Lin Shan was speechless. Who would have thought that all the single ladies' ideal man would treat his sister so badly?

"Asking me why? Think about what you did!" Song Lin Feng's tone of voice was very stern and he wouldn't let go of her nose. "Are you a pig? I told you not to run off. You didn't listen to me. Did you think I wanted to harm you? Now you have suffered. Think about what you did wrong. You're an adult and still acts so reckless. If you're going to be like this, you will be the death of our parents!"

Lin Shan's nose felt like it was going to be deformed at this rate. She refuted: "What? Father and mother are fine. How would I cause their deaths?"

"Fine your head!" Song Lin Feng let go of her nose and used his finger to harshly flick Lin Shan's head instead. "After you were rescued and returned home, your clothes were dry. Who changed them for you?"

Clothes....were dry??

Lin Shan was shocked. After a few moments, she weakly said: "Umm.. Xiao Lu...."

"Xiao Lu said she didn't change your clothes."

Lin Shan felt a bang from within, as if her mind was going to explode.

“I don’t care who it is. So far, you’re lucky the news hasn’t spread to the Emperor’s ears. You better quickly get well and find out who that person is. If not, watch, I will beat you into a man!” Song Lin Feng waved his fist and left. Lin Shan was alone and felt totally confused.

If it wasn’t Xiao Lu, then who was it? Who else knows she is a girl? And who hid her three night pearls? God!! Who is it?

— — —

Lin Shan stayed in bed for three days thinking about the person who had changed her clothes and took her pearls. During that time, she savagely ate her medication and soup. She constantly reminded herself that she must get well as soon as possible so she can hunt the person down. She wanted her pearls.... her pearls!!!!!!

With such a powerful mindset and winning attitude, her condition improved drastically. By the third day, her fever had fully disappeared and she had the strength to get up. She was even able to walk, although her leg was still very sore. When she walked, she had to limp and it wasn’t a pretty sight.

Xiao Lu was trying to coax her: “Master, you have just started to get well. Please do not try and walk around already. What if something happens to you? How would this servant live??”

“Don’t worry about me. Your master’s life is tougher than this. Even if I were to die, I will die with my night pearls!” Lin Shan stated firmly. Then she ordered Xiao Lu: “Go and get my garments. We are returning to the Palace. I need to hunt that person down!”

Poor Xiao Lu. No matter what she said or didn’t say, it didn’t seem to be effective. Just as she was feeling conflicted within her heart, someone from outside came rushing in. He loudly hollered: “Second Master! The Imperial edict is here! The Imperial edict is here!”

Imperial edict?! Lin Shan felt her heart thump. Suddenly, she had a very bad feeling about this. Has she been exposed???

*Meaning she almost entered the world of the dead

Chapter 27

To my dear readers,

This chapter was so FREAKING LONG. It took me so long. I feel like it's almost the size of 2 chapters. I hope you guys enjoy. -_-” This chapter was hard to translate..although you might not be able to tell since I try to make it as simple and easy to read as possible. *sigh* Sorry for making you guys wait so long. I know it must be tough. It is hard for me too. Haha.

Here is my promoted post: [Appearance](#)

Chapter 27

Lin Shan's heart was hanging by a thread as she listened to the Imperial edict. Unexpectedly, it was entirely about something else.

It turned out that she was being rewarded for saving the Crown Prince; as well, she was also announced as the first place winner for the Imperial treasure hunt contest! The Emperor was bestowing her a grand prize.

Lin Shan was dumbfounded. She could understand if she was being rewarded for saving the Crown Prince; after all, she did suck his venom out. But how the heck did she get rewarded as the first place winner? She didn't even know where the night pearls were!!?

She was filled with doubt as she accepted the Imperial edict. She used this opportunity to try to get some information from the experienced eunuch who was congratulating her.

“Sun eunuch, I have some things I am unsure about. Could I ask for your knowledge?”

Sun eunuch had been in the Palace for many years. Whoever that was popular, he would definitely treat courteously: “Your servant is not talented. How could I offer you knowledge? Prince Consort, if you have any questions, feel free to ask, I will do my best to tell you everything I know.”

Lin Shan went straight to the point: “No need to be so courteous. I just want to find out which kind person helped me hand in the night pearls to the Emperor

while I was unconscious. After I am well, I would like to thank him or her.”

“Prince Consort is truly kind hearted. I’m not sure who submitted your night pearls, but I have been told Lian Superior was the one who escorted you back to the Kingdom Minister’s residence. If Prince Consort wishes to find out more, you can get more answers from Lian Superior.”

Lian Feng? As this name appeared in her mind, Lin Shan immediately recalled the night of her rescue. Lian Feng had appeared in front of her and tightly embraced her. It was an odd feeling she didn’t know how to describe. Faintly, she sensed something was different but she wasn’t sure either.

This issue lingered in her mind until the Emperor’s gift had been delivered to the Song residence. Now, all of Lin Shan’s attention was on her reward.

Holy shit! What a big chest! Even if it’s not filled with gold and silver, it definitely cannot be a small amount! I guess the Emperor is quite generous!

Lin Shan was beaming with joy. She ordered Xiao Lu to open the chest. Poor Xiao Lu. It took all her strength to open the chest. They were stunned by the result.

Why was there another chest?

Lin Shan was baffled. She had a very bad feeling about this. She quickly ordered Xiao Lu to open the second chest. As expected, there was another chest inside!

Lin Shan was flustered. The Emperor couldn’t be giving me a set of chests?

With a discouraged heart, Lin Shan opened the third chest. Finally, there wasn’t another chest. Instead, she was greeted with a stone that was wrapped with red silk. On the stone, in bold cursive calligraphy were the words – Peace and Prosperity.

Lin Shan wanted to burst into tears. God, are you playing with me???

Sun eunuch instantly stepped out to congratulate: “Congratulations, Prince Consort! This is the Heaven stone that had been left by our previous Emperor! The words on the stone are hand written by him. The Emperor has bestowed this to you. What a huge honour!”

Heaven stone my ass!? It looks like a piece of the meteorite.

Lin Shan's eyes darkened and she nearly fell down.

Actually, this Heaven stone isn't totally useless. In the future when Lin Shan resumes her female identity again, this rock will come in handy for crushing vegetables. But that is not until later on.

On the same day after she received the Imperial edict, Lin Shan decided to return to the Palace despite her father's objections.

Right now, her goal was to find Lian Feng and ask him exactly what happened.

Xiao Lu was running after her while holding onto the Heaven stone. She was weary and sweating profusely. She complained: "Prince Consort, this is mistreatment of your worker."

Ha! This girl sure learns quick. She even knows "mistreatment of your worker". Lin Shan rolled her eyes and threatened: "If you complain again, watch me send you to the Leaning Vermilion House!"

Xiao Lu giggled on the side: "Master, didn't you say that the people from Leaning Vermilion House wouldn't want someone like me?"

Lin Shan put her hand on her forehead. She was speechless. This was what you call the student surpassing the master. There was always a mountain higher. Since she didn't want others to think she is mistreating her servant, Lin Shan held onto the Heaven stone herself. Unexpectedly, she came face to face to an energetic Du Ming Yue.

Du Ming Yue suddenly blushed but her mouth was foul: "You haven't died yet?"

"Unfortunately for you, I'm still alive." Lin Shan replied.

Instead of remaining angry, Du Ming Yue seemed to hesitate for a moment. Then, she heatedly ordered her servants: "Are you guys blind? Help the Prince Consort carry his items!"

Lin Shan was shocked. Oh my Princess. Are you trying to scare me? Why so giving all of a sudden? Don't tell me, you want this shitty rock??

Du Ming Yue noticed the alert look Lin Shan had on her face and was

frustrated: “What kind of look is that? I... I just want to thank you for saving my brother....” Du Ming Yue pouted and placed all her focus on Lin Shan; her eyes were not scattering everywhere like before.

At this moment, Lin Shan felt like she was being shocked by lightning.

What..... umm... the Princess can't be falling for me, right? Oh my goodness. It's over. Wow. Turns out both the Prince and Princess are gay. This is simply a tragedy!

Actually, Lin Shan was aware that her rescue had spread throughout the entire Palace. There were so many different versions, and they all portrayed her like a godly figure. Not only the Princess, but the old ladies working in the Imperial kitchen would die to be thirty years younger so they could be her mistresses.

As a woman dressing up as a man, Lin Shan had reached celebrity status. She was like an exotic flower amongst the women, and a cucumber amongst the men.*

Du Ming Yue's sudden change in attitude was causing Lin Shan to freak out. She quickly came to the conclusion that she could no longer carry on like this day by day. Eventually, her disguise will be exposed and not only will she be doomed, the entire Song residence will be going down with her. She recalled the confiscation incident at Wu Liang Zhi's residence. If she was going to destroy the lives of her family, even if she lived, she will not feel at ease.

This is the first time she was planning for her future ever since she had arrived here.

While Lin Shan was being upset over her identity, there were also three men who were suffering in the Palace.

First, the third Prince, Du Jing. His plan would have worked if it weren't for Lin Shan. All of his plans were destroyed by her. Originally, he would have easily gotten the Heaven stone. Now that someone else has it, how could he be alright?

“Master, according to your subordinate's research, Song Luo has the Heaven stone. However, since the Princess has heavy security, if we were to go and grab it, we will probably.....”

“I know.” Du Jing cuts her off. “I’ll think of a way to get to Song Luo. Go and report your mission first.”

“Your subordinate accepts your order.” With a blink of an eye, Gui Mei disappeared into the night.

At the same time, in the East Palace, Du Hao was also feeling frustrated with Lin Shan’s situation.

“Gu Zuo”

“Your subordinate is here.”

“Have you done the research I told you to do?”

“Your Highness, ever since we came back, your subordinate has gotten many to search for the lady that you have mentioned. However, we haven’t heard anything back. I have a feeling she might have left the Capital.”

“No. Keep searching.”

“Yes.” Gu Zuo accepted the order but remained where he was.

“Is there anything else?” Du Hao looked at him.

“There’s something your subordinate wishes to say, but isn’t sure if he should.”

“Say it.”

“Based on my opinion, it has been two years since your Highness last saw the lady. Even if she is still in the Capital, she is most likely married. Your subordinate is confused as to why you would want to find her so badly....”

“Say no more!” Du Hao cuts him off. “I know what I am doing. Just do what you’re told. Leave now.”

“Yes.” Gu Zuo knows Du Hao’s temper and decided to say no more and courteously left. As he walked out, his face revealed a hopeless expression. This Crown Prince was not the same as the wise and cool headed Crown Prince he had always known.

Then again, how would Gu Zuo know what Du Hao is really feeling?

Two years ago, he was just twenty years old. Based on talent, EQ, IQ, he was

definitely far from his elder brother Du Ye. Therefore, many Imperial officials had issues about his position as the Crown Prince. Although he was the son of the Empress, they doubted his abilities to become the future Emperor.

Therefore, the Emperor decided to send him to fight the enemy in order to calm the situation. It was a great way for him to train his willpower, as well as increase his reputation in the Palace. In addition, the Emperor also sent Du Ye away in fears that they would destroy each other in the future.

At the time, Du Hao was a spoiled prince who had never been through hardship. When he heard his father's decision. He was so upset he wanted to run away from home. That was when he met the woman who he fell in love with.

That glance helped him endure the two years of army life. He was young back then. It was the first time he had experienced such a stunning beauty. The harsh life of the military made the lady even more unforgettable in his mind.

Two years had gone by, and he had grown up. He had returned in armour and with triumph. He was about to experience the most glorious days of his life, and had forgotten about those hard days, when Song Luo appeared and created a ripple in his heart. It was something that none of the other concubines were able to do.

As someone who had always viewed himself to be highly, he suddenly realized he had feelings towards a man. It wasn't surprising that Gu Zuo thought he lost his cool. It could not be helped.

While Du Hao was having a conflicted battle within his heart, another man with the same face (Lian Feng) was also in distress.

Lin Shan's clothes were changed by him. That day, if he didn't do it, someone else might have found out the secret. The result would have been inconceivable.

Although many days had past, the naked body of a woman remained in his mind. Lian Feng felt extremely guilty. He didn't know how to face Lin Shan.

According to his subordinates, Song Luo had already returned back to the Palace yesterday. She was healing quite well. He felt relieved but at the same time, his heart was very conflicted. Knowing Song Luo, within a day or two, she will hunt him down and question him. If Song Luo knew that he knew her secret,

as well as damaged her purity**, what would she think? Would she still talk to him?

As he was feeling troubled, the Emperor sent an Imperial edict and ordered him to eliminate mountain thieves that were on the increase nearby the Capital. He was told to set off immediately with no delay.

Therefore, when Lin Shan came looking for Lian Feng, she was told he had gone to fight crime.

*This sounds soooo weird. It's because the author is trying to be funny and punny again. -.-"

**Although he didn't sleep with her, by seeing her naked, it's considered "ruined purity". I don't know how to explain it in English.

Chapter 28

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Jonathan Osborne**, **Elita D’cunha-Noronha**, and **Evgeniya Li** for their donations!!!! Every dollar counts and I am grateful for any amount. Thank you!!

I probably won’t be able to finish Chapter 29 until Saturday. I can’t translate daily because it takes too much brain power and I need to rest.

P.S. Guys, do you know how to stop people from copy and pasting on a website? My translations are being stolen but I can’t tell you guys the name of the site because it will give them more publicity. (They copy and paste my work but skips the introduction and my promoted post lollll)

My promoted post: [Conversation Tips](#)

Chapter 28

Ever since the treasure hunt contest, Lin Shan’s popularity had skyrocketed. Many nobles and high ranked officials wanted to get on her good side. This was comforting to her since her spirit had been damaged from the Heaven stone.

“Prince Consort, a few days ago, Imperial Uncle Liu sent a jade Buddha and the Sixth Prince sent a golden Buddha hand. The sale resulted in a thousand silver taels. These are in banknotes. You can count it.” Xiao Lu handed Lin Shan a pile of banknotes.

Lin Shan took the banknotes and her eyes shone. She recounted the amount a couple of times before putting the banknotes inside the embroidered box where she kept all her secret money.

Xiao Lu watched from the side and couldn’t help but blurted: “Prince Consort. Please do not mind your servant. But in the Palace, we never have to worry about food or clothes. Why do you need to have so much money?”

“You don’t understand.” Lin Shan put away her secret box and lowered her voice: “You think I’m really going to remain as a man in the Palace forever? Eventually, my disguise will be revealed. I have to plan an escape route.”

“Are you saying you’re going to leave the Palace?” Xiao Lu looked at Lin Shan shockingly.

“Shh! Lower your voice! You want others to hear?” Lin Shan quickly covered her mouth and whispered in her ear, “Let me ask you, have you ever thought about what would happen to us if my disguise was revealed?”

“Umm....” Xiao Lu was speechless and shook her head.

Lin Shan lowered her voice even more: “These days I have been pondering over this question. If one day I get exposed, not only you, but my parents and brother, plus the entire Song residence will suffer a catastrophe. Instead of sitting and waiting for death, I might as well find an opportunity to leave the Palace. If they think I’m dead or crazy, that’s fine. As long as I am able to prevent them from finding me, everything will be ok. When that day happens, wouldn’t you think money is important?”

Xiao Lu seemed to somewhat understand and nodded: “It’s quite important.”

“So whenever I receive anything that’s worth a lot of money, make sure you sell it for me. We must save a lot. In the future, I want to open my own Leaning Vermilion House. Business will be good!”

Xiao Lu wiped her sweat: “Prince Consort, you have this type of desire.....”

Lin Shan rolled her eyes: “No!? I plan to be the big boss!”

The two of them were very intimate and close as they spoke. Suddenly, the door burst open and Du Ming Yue rushed in. Seeing how Lin Shan and Xiao Lu were so talking so closely, her anger went straight up.

“What are you two doing?” She demanded.

“Talking” Lin Shan replied blankly.

“Humph! You are alone with a woman speaking so closely. What kind of place do you think the Palace is? My people, come and take this shameless servant and hit her twenty times with the rod!”

“Yes!” The two eunuchs behind Du Ming Yue accepted the order and were about to grab Xiao Lu.

Lin Shan could tell something bad was going to happen and quickly stood in

front of Xiao Lu: “Stop! How dare you? You guys dare to ignore the orders of the Prince Consort?”

The two eunuchs were startled as they have never seen the Prince Consort act so serious. They looked at Lin Shan and then at Du Ming Yue. They were not sure who to listen to.

Since Lin Shan stood up for Xiao Lu, Du Ming Yue became even more enraged. Her Princess syndrome started to act up. She pointed at Xiao Lu and shouted: “How dare you, servants? Are you disobeying my orders? I ordered her a punishment, so punish her! Who dares to disobey will be punished with the bitch as well!”

Her words frightened the two eunuchs tremendously and they briskly avoided Lin Shan to grab Xiao Lu.

Xiao Lu was so scared, she hid under the table as she babbled: “Prince Consort, save me! Save me!”

Lin Shan knew she was at a disadvantage. She definitely could not compete against Du Ming Yue. Thus, she pushed aside the eunuchs and went under the table as well.

“Xiao Lu belongs to me. If you have the power, then capture both of us!” Since she couldn’t fight them directly, she will use her shameless ways. Lin Shan rebutted against Du Ming Yue from under the table.

Du Ming Yue was furious.

“You, you you... you two are adulterers! My people, pull them out. If you can’t, don’t even bother coming back out!”

Her words definitely scared everyone out of their wits. In a blink of an eye, a bunch of female servants plus eunuchs came rushing under the table. The little circular table started surge like a tide. Voices could be heard: “Ai ya, my shoe!!!!” “Who’s touching me?” “Hey, don’t pull on my pants!”

Since no one was coming out, Du Ming Yue lifted her sleeves and dug her way in as well.

This moment was truly a spectacular sight. Gu Zuo has taken the Crown

Prince's order to come over, and the corner of his mouth started to twitch despite his usual calm composure.

cough cough.... He coughed.

No one paid attention.

cough cough cough.....

He was still ignored.

cough cough cough cough.... Poor Gu Zuo. He was coughing his lungs out and no one noticed his existence.

Finally, Gu Zuo couldn't hold it in anymore. He gathered his energy into his core and roared: "Is the Prince Consort here?!"

Since Gu Zuo had practiced years of Martial Arts, his voice projection was magnificent. The table overturned and there were at least ten people all mingled together. All the eyes were on Gu Zuo, and then at each other. There were no words exchanged.

At that moment, Gu Zuo was about to crumble despite being used to seeing death on a battlefield. His face remained stiff but the corner of his mouth twitched again.

Out of the bunch, Lin Shan stood up and patted her clothes as she tried to fix her bird's nest hair: "I'm here!! Gu General, we are honoured by your presence. I wonder why you're looking for me?"

Gu Zuo had a tough time remaining stern. It took him a moment before he formally spoke: "Your subordinate has been ordered by the Crown Prince to invite the Prince Consort over to the Eastern Palace for a gathering. He would like to thank the Prince Consort for saving his life. Prince Consort, please!"

Du Hao? Lin Shan was on guard. This gay brother wanted to see me to give me more trouble? Oh my goodness, he even longed for his sister's husband. What a beast! Beast, I tell you!

At this moment, Du Ming Yue stumbled and got up: "I'm coming too!"

"Why are you coming?" One gay was already difficult enough to deal with. You want to hand me a pair? Lin Shan wanted to cry.

“I’m the Princess. Who dares to stop me? I say I’m going, so I’m going!” Du Ming Yue had both her hands on her waist, and wouldn’t compromise.

Lin Shan was speechless. She looked at Du Ming Yue, then at Xiao Lu who had been captured by the servants. She gritted her teeth: “Fine. I’ll bring you, but you must promise to let Xiao Lu go!”

In reality, Du Ming Yue didn’t actually want to hit Xiao Lu. After all, she was Song Luo’s maid. If she made him so angry and he left, it wouldn’t be any good to her. Since Song Luo was willing to negotiate, she will accept his offer.

“Humph. Fine. Today, I’ll let you go. Get out of my sight! All of you, get out!”

In no time, there were only three people remaining in the room; one of them was still struggling to remain stiff. After composing himself, Gu Zuo raised his hand and said: “Princess, Prince Consort, please!”

Chapter 29

To my dear readers,

Sorry I'm so slow. It's around 6:10pm on Saturday for me right now. I hope you guys aren't constantly refreshing my page. Aahahaha... anyhow, I hope you like this chapter. I wanted to finish it earlier today but I couldn't.

As for my translations being stolen, I use the free wordpress site so I do not have protection. I already paid to have my own domain (liveandlearn88.com instead of liveandlearn88.wordpress.com), and I don't want to pay more money for my website since I barely make any money. So, I'm just going to leave it. My brother says if someone wants to copy and paste, they will figure out a way, one way or another (print screen, write some script, etc). I know you guys are quite loyal, so I'm not going to complain lol.

Here is my promoted post: [Friendship](#)

Chapter 29

When Lin Shan and Du Ming Yue had arrived at the Eastern Palace, Du Hao had already prepared a banquet. Lin Shan had always been told that the Crown Prince was frugal; therefore, she was extremely surprised by what she saw.

Tonight, it truly represented a life of luxury. The atmosphere was very intoxicating. A group of revealing dancers were dancing in the middle of the hall. They were captivating.

Not only that, at the end of the hall, in the middle, sat Du Hao. Tonight, he wore a black embroidered golden dragon gown and his long hair wasn't bind up to the greatest extent. There were a few loose strands, which somewhat softened his arrogant complexion. His eyes were circulating around the room, and the whole place was dripping in brilliance.

Lin Shan had already had quite a number of encounters with Du Hao, but she had never seen him like this. Right now, she had no idea what he was thinking.

At this moment, a beautiful woman came out and curtsy at Du Hao.

Du Hao waved his hand, indicating she could proceed. The woman bowed

down her head and went over to Du Hao's side. She helped him fill his wine cup and delivered it to him. Every movement was very flirtatious and charming. The dancers were all overshadowed by her.

Lin Shan was astonished.

Isn't Du Hao gay?? He is suddenly interested in women now? Wow, this is so confusing!

Although she didn't say anything, she continued to gaze at Du Hao. She saw him take the wine cup from the woman and made an intense eye contact with her. Then, he slowly drank the wine and whispered something into the woman's ear. In no time, the beautiful woman blushed and leaned over in desire as she passionately kissed Du Hao.

Did the Crown Prince invite me over to thank me or invited me over to watch a show? Lin Shan was puzzled. At this moment, Du Hao suddenly stopped kissing the woman and lifted the wine cup facing her.

"Thank you for saving me, Prince Consort. Come, let me salute you with a cup of wine."

So nice? There must be a conspiracy going on. Lin Shan couldn't help but became alert again as she responded: "Your Highness, you are too courteous. Too courteous..." As she sipped a bit of the wine, she was careful not to drink too much.

Du Hao seemed to be in a great mood though. He looked pleased and finished his wine cup. Then he reached out and took the beautiful woman into his arms. He was totally portraying a player Prince.

"What's wrong with your bro? Did he get sick and suffered from some type of trauma and became a pervert?" Lin Shan made eye contact with Du Ming Yue and asked through her glance.

Unexpectedly, Du Ming Yue glared at her and responded through her eyes: "None of your business!"

From an outsider's point of view, the glances were signs of playful love. Du Hao noticed it and seemed irritated as he embraced the woman in his arms even tighter. He continued: "Since Prince Consort saved me, I have a present for you. I

hope you will accept my gift.”

Gift? Ohhh finally, we got to the important point! Lin Shan broke off her eye contact with Du Ming Yue and concentrated all her attention on the box that Du Hao had ordered the servant to deliver.

Once the red silk was revealed, two golden ru yi appeared in front of her eyes. Lin Shan was so emotional, she almost cried. Oh ru yi, ru yi!! After going through so much, you’re finally returning to me!!

“Grow up!” Du Ming Yue’s mouth twitched as she scolded at Lin Shan under her breath.

“Do you appreciate my gift, Prince Consort? Do you like it?”

“I like, I like...!!!!” Lin Shan was glowing like a flower. Wow, so it turned out if you get bitten by a snake, you would turn abnormal. If I had known this earlier, I would have thrown a 5kg snake at you!

“I’m glad you like it.” This was the first time that Du Hao had ever been so courteous to Lin Shan. It was honestly poles apart from how he was before.”Yu-er, I heard you learnt a new dance. Could you please demonstrate to the Prince Consort and Princess?”

“Yes, Yu-er will demonstrate. Please excuse my incompetence.” Yang Yu Er got up and smoothly walked to the middle of the hall. She curtsied at Lin Shan and Du Ming Yue, and then started following the music and beats of the drum.

Yu Er’s long sleeves flipped in the air as she gently swayed her body. She was making an intense eye contact with the Crown Prince as she teased him through her sensual dancing.

Pssh, a dance for me and the Princess? Bullshit. She’s dancing for one man, ok?

Seeing this, Lin Shan couldn’t help but sigh. She had watched many television dramas, but now she has finally seen a living vixen.

However, although Yang Yu Er was a vixen, she was a great dancer. Ever since Lin Shan had arrived at the Palace, she had never been so entertained. She couldn’t stop watching and entirely ignored the Du Ming Yue who was beside

her.

But what kind of person was Du Ming Yue? She would never allow anyone to forget about her. She purposely coughed twice.

Seeing how Lin Shan continued ignoring her, she turned irrational. She pretended to pour wine and gasped in surprise as she poured the entire bottle on Lin Shan.

Now, Lin Shan's clothes were soaked. It looked as if she had peed herself.

"Oops. My hand shook. Sorry." Du Ming Yue smiled fakely.

Oh my goodness, Princess. How childish can you be? Lin Shan was speechless and didn't know whether she should laugh or cry.

"Come, my people, bring the Prince Consort to my room so he can change his garments." ordered Du Hao.

"No, don't worry about it. I can change when I get back...."

Lin Shan gestured with her arm saying it's alright, but an eunuch had already indicated her to follow him. He smiled, "Prince Consort, you must not reject the kindness from our Highness. Please."

Wow, even the staffs in Eastern Palace were powerful. Lin Shan had no choice but to follow him into the inner room.

"This is where the Crown Prince normally changes. Please pick a random garment, Prince Consort."

"Ok, okay!" Lin Shan was trying to find something that looked relatively plain and simple. When she turned around, the eunuch was still there. It looked as if he wanted to help her change. She quickly said: "I can change myself. Just wait for me outside."

"Yes." The eunuch politely excused himself and left. Lin Shan went over by the door to secretly listen. Only when it seemed like the eunuch was out of sight did she feel comfortable to change.

After all, this was not her area. She already felt very strange and awkward as she changed. All she wanted to do was quickly get out of there. She needed an excuse to leave. This banquet was too weird. She had no idea what Du Hao was

thinking. Who knows what he will do during the feast?

As she was thinking and rushing, she couldn't help but grumbled: "This is huge. How am I supposed to wear this?"

This wasn't surprising at all as Du Hao was rather tall. Although Lin Shan was not short for a girl, the body of a man was very different from a woman. After putting on his clothes, it felt very spacey inside.

Lin Shan had no choice but to look for a ribbon belt to tie around her waist. Out of the blue, she heard the door being pushed open. Someone came in.

Lin Shan was freaking out. She had her hands tightly around her ribbon belt as she forcefully pretended to be calm: "Who is it?"

No one replied.

Lin Shan was getting more nervous by the second. She was trying to comfort herself.

This is the Eastern Palace. There can't be any issues.

She tiptoed towards the screen* and poked her head out. But the moment she stuck her head out, she smashed into something. She heard a "pong" and felt a burst of pain on her forehead. She saw stars and said, "Ai ya!"

At that moment, Du Hao came out from behind the screen. Needless to say, Lin Shan had crashed into him.

*



This is what the screen probably would have looked like.

Chapter 30

To my dear readers,

Sorry, I was slacking off. Yesterday, I started reading “My wife is a beautiful CEO” and I was so hooked, I ended up reading the 64 chapters that had been released (so I didn’t translate anything). It is so good!! After reading that, I feel like my translations are no match. T___T” (although my novel is set in ancient times so it’s a bit different, due to the language usage) But those sex scenes. Holy moly. This novel is more PG lol..

Hopefully you won’t be disappointed in this chapter. What I thought was “hot” seems very plain compared to what I read yesterday.

P.S. Cliff hanger again. The author is good at torturing you guys.

Promoted post: [Perspective](#)

Chapter 30

“Why are you here?” Du Hao’s eyes appeared to be blurred; he reeked of alcohol.

Why else would I be here? Bro, you’re drunk but you don’t have to be like this? Lin Shan wryly replied: “Your Highness, you’re the one who told me to change into your garments.”

“Oh, I forgot.....” Du Hao was honestly intoxicated. His footsteps were wobbly as he stumbled around. To Lin Shan’s astonishment, Du Hao started taking off his clothes.

Lin Shan was appalled. In her mind, she was howling. Hey! What are you doing?! I’m still here!?! But she didn’t know how to stop him. Thus, she held onto her ribbon belt and tried to sneak out.

“Wait.” Du Hao called.

“Yes.” Lin Shan had no choice but to reluctantly return. Du Hao had already taken off his outer garment. He was currently removing his inner garment. His tan skin was exposed from the gap, and it emitted a strong masculine scent.

Wow, although the Crown Prince's personality might be nasty, his skin is definitely top notch! If I were to sell it, it would definitely be number one quality! (.....wow.... -_-)

"Come, and help me remove my clothes." Although he was drunk, his speech was clear and his tone did not allow for objection.

Lin Shan was baffled. Wasn't he flirting with the woman just now? How did he turn gay again? She couldn't figure it out. All she could do was tighten her waist belt and assist Du Hao.

Aside from helping Lian Feng remove his clothing during the time he was punished, Lin Shan had never helped any other male take off their clothes. Although the two of them looked exactly the same, the feelings she had towards them were completely different.

Around Lian Feng, Lin Shan never felt threatened or endangered. However, around Du Hao, each step she took towards him, she could feel the Emperor aura pressing down on her. It was suffocating.

Lin Shan absentmindedly removed his top and his muscular firm chest was immediately revealed. What surprised her was that there were many scars on Du Hao's body. The deepest one struck horizontally across his chest and looked very brutal.

Lin Shan was slightly overwhelmed. She realized staring at someone's chest was not a good idea, and quickly redirected her glance.

"What? Are you surprised?" Du Hao suddenly spoke up. His manly odour was so overpowering, it caused her to subconsciously take a step back.

"Your Highness, please do not take offense. I have always lived in the Capital and had never seen beyond. You....." Her speech was cut off by Du Hao. He had reached out and was stroking her face.

At this moment, Lin Shan felt like she had been shocked by lightning. It took a lot of difficulty for her to snap out of it, only to see Du Hao passionately gazing at her. Since he fought in the battlefield, his hands and fingers were rough. As his hand gently touched her face, it felt ticklish.

Lin Shan had a horrifying prediction, which caused her to take another step

back. She was about to dash and run.

Next thing she knew, her wrist was tightly restrained. By now, her waist was nearly touching the table. However, Du Hao had one hand on her waist, and the other gripped her hand. A huge force hauled her forward, and just like that, she landed in his arms.

The sense of danger was slapping on her face. She could smell the drunkenness, and she was freaking out. Lin Shan rushed: “Your Highness, you’re intoxicated. I’m Song Luo, your sister’s husband....!”

“Song Luo?” Du Hao was truly stoned. His voice was slurring, and he moved closer. Both his eyes looked disconcerted as he was sizing up Lin Shan for awhile. He murmured, “Look at you, how are you like a man? You’re a woman...aren’t you....”

Lin Shan’s mind felt like it was going to explode. Oh no!? Have I been exposed?

At that moment, Du Hao leaned in even closer; his nose was nearly touching her face, as he thought aloud: “If only you were a woman, that would be wonderful.....” Then, he lustfully kissed her.

Lin Shan didn’t think Du Hao would make a move on her. She tried to escape from his grasp, but he held on so tightly that she couldn’t move. All she could do was try her best to pull back and avoid his “attack”.

Du Hao was annoyed that Lin Shan was shifting away. Thus, he released her hand to grab hold of the back of her head and continued making out with her.

Lin Shan felt like she was being devoured, and was frightened to death. She clumsily used her two hands to touch around and finally found an item.

Without thinking, she smashed it onto Du Hao’s head.

A *Pa* sound was heard and Lin Shan froze.

Oh my goodness, how could she didn’t pick a good item? She smashed an ink slab onto Du Hao’s head, and she used a lot of strength! Du Hao’s eyes rolled back and he fainted directly on top of Lin Shan.

Lin Shan felt as if her waist is going to snap. It took all her strength to get Du Hao off of her. She felt as if she was moving a stone.

He should be ok, right? Lin Shan's heart was hanging by a thread as she reached out her hand to check Du Hao's breathing from under his nose.

Good. His breathing was still strong. It was as if he had lost consciousness from overdrinking. But the problem was, she smashed him....what if he woke up and wanted to punish her?

Thinking of this, Lin Shan started to feel anxious. After hesitating for awhile, she decided the best solution was to flee from the scene. After all, if she told others about the sexual assault, Du Hao would lose face. Plus, he was so drunk. Perhaps after he woke up, he wouldn't remember a thing.

Lin Shan quickly put the ink slab back in place and fixed up the garment she just changed into. Then she sneaked out like a guilty thief.

Huh? The eunuch wasn't there! There was actually no one guarding the outside.

Lin Shan was surprised but didn't want to think too much. She stepped out and as she was closing the door, a sharp sword was placed on her neck.

A low threatening voice appeared in Lin Shan's ear: "Tell me immediately where the Crown Prince is!"

Lin Shan was stunned. At this moment, her mind was flashing the word "assassin".

Was she really this unlucky? First, she bumped into a drunkard. Now, she bumped into an assassin? What the hell? In her heart, she yelled at God.

Lin Shan stuttered: "T-the... Crown Prince went out... he is not back yet...."

"You punk, don't you dare lie to me!" The sword was inching closer to her face. The killer's attitude was cruel, and she could feel the aura of death.

Lin Shan was so scared, her legs were going soft. But thinking about the unconscious Du Hao, she knew if she allowed this guy in, he would die for sure. She felt her heart softened and she grinded her teeth: "Hey Mister. I'm telling the truth. Why would I dare to lie to you?"

"I bet you wouldn't dare!" Then the person lowered his voice, "Who are you to the Crown Prince?"

Lin Shan wiped her sweat: “Mister, I’m just a person doing odd jobs. Not anyone important to the Crown Prince.”

“Ha! *spitting sound* If you are the Crown Prince’s important person, I would slaughter you!” This person had a cloth wrapped around his face and his language was crude. His eyes revealed the killer gleam, and was extremely intimidating.

“Mister. If you want to find the Crown Prince, perhaps you should walk around the Imperial garden. The Crown Prince likes to take walks.....”

“Really? Don’t you dare lie to me. Or I will chop your brain off!”

“I don’t dare, don’t dare....” Lin Shan mumbled.

“Alright. For every debt, there is a debtor. Since you don’t know where the Crown Prince is, you can leave!”

“Thank you, Mister!” Lin Shan felt relieved and quickly turned to escape. But within a few steps, she felt a pain on the back of her head and fainted.

The masked person laughed: “You sissy. Your waist belt has a dragon on it. You think my eyes are used to take a dump? You’re clearly the Crown Prince. I’m going to tear your skin off later!” Then, he placed Lin Shan on his shoulder and flew into the air and disappeared from the night sky.

Just like that, the ribbon belt caused poor Lin Shan to be mistaken as the Crown Prince and kidnapped from the Palace.

Chapter 31

To my dear readers,

This chapter took me forever to translate even though it looks simple. I'm losing motivation because it is so hard for me T____T. Your comments do help, though. I had to carry on because I didn't want to disappoint you guys. *sigh* There aren't tenses in Chinese, and the sentence structure is totally opposite, so it is very difficult for me to translate in English. I kind of have to choose whether to use present or past, and sometimes I might mix the two.

Anyhow, this is my promoted post: [A true athlete](#)

Please donate to me if you can! I have spent so many hours on this..:'(. My mom told me to keep going because she says you guys are such nice readers. (She used to tell me not to translate because she thinks it's a waste of brain power and time, but she likes the story too. Haha) Note: She uses google translate to read my blog, but she has read the raws & she told me to hurry and not make my readers suffer. :p

Chapter 31

The person who kidnapped Lin Shan's surname was He, and he was the 3rd child in his family. Therefore, he was known as He Lao San (meaning: He the third). Ever since he was little, he had an innate talent and ability for martial arts. After being instructed by a talented instructor, he became even better.

When he was thirteen, he decided to sign up for the army to show devotion to his country. However, due to his young age, no one took him seriously. He was given odd jobs and ordered around. Therefore, the proud and arrogant He Lao San left the army in a fury and became a mountain thief. Next thing you know, it had been over ten years.

Logically, mountain thieves should not mess with people from the Imperial Court. However, this recent Spring, on the outskirts of the Capital near the Black Dragon Mountain, appeared a few mountain thieves who used their "Black Tiger" reputation and looted government official money wherever they could. Therefore, the Imperial Court decided to send troops to eliminate all mountain

thieves.

A few days ago, due to the Crown Prince's suggestions, the Emperor himself personally wrote an Imperial edict and sent his Imperial bodyguard, the owner of the Golden sabre, Lian Feng to complete the task. The Black Tiger Gang was their main target.

Since He Lao San had been with the gang for years now, he wanted to help his big boss Wang Hei Hu deal with some of his stresses. Seeing how the big boss was distressed about the troops eliminating their people, plus his previous resentment towards the army, He Lao San decided to head to the Capital and barge into the Palace to kidnap the Crown Prince so they could bargain with the Imperial Court.

He Lao San did this because he was confident of his martial arts abilities. He didn't even discuss it with anyone.

Honestly, He Lao San was the type that had the guts but no brain. He was truly fearless, and his martial arts skill was spectacular. But who would have thought he would charge into the Imperial Palace on his own to kidnap the Crown Prince?! Even though we all know that he had made a mistake.

As for Lin Shan, after being kidnapped by He Lao San, he conveniently found a sack bag and placed her in it while she was unconscious. That night, he rapidly left the Capital and ran back to his home, the Black Tiger Gang. When he arrived back at his campsite, he rudely dropped the sack bag onto the ground.

Wang Hei Hu, the big boss of the gang was stressing over the elimination of his gang. Suddenly, he saw He Lao San who had been missing for a day, threw a sack bag down in front of him. There was movement in the bag. Wang Hei Hu hesitated and asked: "Lao San, what did you bring back?"

"The Crown Prince." He Lao San replied.

"The Crown Prince? What are you talking about?"

"The Crown Prince is the Crown Prince. The Emperor's son. The future Emperor! You don't understand? Big brother, your mind isn't working!"

"Oh, these days I have been so stressed. Blame the Imperial Court for trying to eliminate us....wait..what!?!?!" Wang Hei Hu suddenly seemed to understand

the words being spoken: “WHO did you say is inside this bag?!?!?”

He Lao San was surprised by his big brother’s reaction, but he was still calm: “The Crown Prince. Didn’t I already tell you?”

Wang Hei Hu slapped his thigh: “Lao San, you...you are crazy!” Then, he immediately bent down to untie the rope around the bag.

After being knocked unconscious and jolted for the entire night, Lin Shan was super dizzy. Suddenly being exposed to bright light made it even worse, and she couldn’t help but vomited all over Wang Hei Hu.

At this moment, everyone was shocked and turned to their big boss. They could see their big boss turning green and white, green and white. It took awhile before he appeared to be normal again. His face was stiff as he questioned: “You’re really the Crown Prince?”

“Yes....! No....” Lin Shan was so dizzy. She nodded, and then shook her head, confusing everyone around her.

“So are you or are you not!?”

“I’m not!” Lin Shan finally managed to focus. Her eyes scattered around the room and she realized she was surrounded by a bunch of men with big bellies and thick waists. On the side stood a very mean looking man, he seemed to be the guy that kidnapped her from yesterday.

“Lies!” He Lao San cuts her off, “Big brother, look at his waist belt. There’s a dragon on it. Only the Crown Prince would dare to wear a dragon belt. You sissy, how dare you try to fool my brother? I’m going to beat you to death!” He Lao San lifted his fist and was about to strike Lin Shan. However, Wang Hei Hu stopped him.

“Lao San, you want to die? He is the Crown Prince! If something happens to him, we’re all dead!”

“Big brother, when did you become such a coward? Look how the Imperial Court has treated us? We’re just trying to earn a living. We never take from the poor, and now they are sending troops to eliminate us! If we’re going be burned regardless whether we are jade or common stone, we might as well be a courageous person!” Then, he pulled out his sword and was about to stab Lin

Shan.

Seeing how she was about to be stabbed, Lin Shan rushed: “Don’t kill me! I’m really not the Crown Prince! I’m a woman!!!!!! If you don’t believe me, just look!” Immediately, she unpinned her hair, and her fine black hair flowed out like spilled ink. It was a dazzling sight, and all the men were amazed.

Mountain thief A patted thief B: “Look, I think it’s a woman...”

Mountain thief B patted thief C: “Hurry and look! A woman....”

Mountain thief C patted thief D: “Look!! A woman.....!!”

The mountain thieves were dumbfounded for awhile, when suddenly, they all seemed to have snapped out of it and ran out of the building screaming like maniacs: “Buddha! Bodhisattva! The founder of Taoism! A woman has entered our campsite! It’s real!!!!!”

Lin Shan: “.....”

He Lao San couldn’t believe the Crown Prince he had went to capture had suddenly became a woman instead. He was speechless and widened his eyes as he carefully inspected Lin Shan.

Wow, it was actually a woman. And a fine looking woman.

He Lao San had been a mountain thief since he was thirteen. He was now twenty four but he was still an innocent pure virgin. Currently, he was bashful as he blushed. He coyly said: “Hehe. Miss. It’s all a misunderstanding. Misunderstanding...wait. No! It’s fate. Fate!!!”

Lin Shan’s face darken.

Seeing how the second boss didn’t kidnap the Crown Prince, Wang Hei Hu felt a breath of relief. He then looked at the woman and felt alert: “Speak. Who are you? Why are you wearing the Crown Prince’s clothes?”

Now that Lin Shan was confident that they weren’t going to kill her, she felt a bit more relaxed as she analyzed her situation in her mind. If she took this opportunity to disappear from the Palace, then no one would know she had disguised as a man, and her mother and father would be alright.

Lin Shan immediately created a dramatic television story in her head. First, she

told them how she was forced to enter the Palace by her parents.

Then, the Crown Prince saw her beauty and attempted to assault her.

She also told them how she striked Du Hao unconscious so she could escape....

For more dramatic effects, Lin Shan even busted out a few tears during the touching parts. Since the men from the Black Tiger Gang rarely came in contact with women, how could they hold back when they see such a beautiful young lady telling them a sad story? All of them were emotionally touched, especially He Lao San; his tears and nasal mucus were about to come out. At that instant, he felt like he had found a soul mate.

He Lao San patted his chest and firmly said: “My dear, don’t be upset. No one cared about you in the Palace, but now you are at Black Dragon Mountain. This is under our rule! Don’t worry, as long as you stay with us, whoever that dares to mess with you will have to deal with me!”

Just like that, Lin Shan went from being a hostage to becoming the first female mountain thief. What a difference.

Chapter 32

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **Anna Mariflor Diaz** for her donation! It really means a lot to me. I know most of you are young and do not have the money or a credit card to help support me. But even if you can, I know most people just want to read for free. Therefore, I am grateful for anyone who is willing to donate any amount to me. Thank you so much.

This chapter took me SO LONG. I have began splitting up the chapters now. So, if you're reading the Chinese raws, my chapters will not be exactly the same although the content is the same (I try to make it as close to the Chinese version as possible). Nonetheless, I hope you enjoy.

Promoted post: [Speed Dating](#)

Chapter 32

Since
the

mountain thieves made such a big commotion, almost all the men from the Black Tiger Gang immediately knew there was a woman in their campsite. Right away, the gang seemed to have came back to life. For awhile now, they had been wrapped with fear from the Imperial Court. Now, all the men were recharged and excited. All of them were discussing amongst themselves. They wanted to see what the woman looked like.

But He Lao San just stated, he would tear the skin off of whoever that dared to mess with Lin Shan. Therefore, the rest of the mountain thieves were too afraid to come in. All they could do were watched from afar, as they stretched their necks to peek in.

A little while later, He Lao San appeared wearing a different outfit. He was beaming from ear to ear, and his hand was holding a folding fan.

All the mountain thieves started analyzing amongst themselves.

“What happened to second boss? He is smiling like a blooming flower!?!”

“Look! He’s holding a fan, and there are words on it!”

“What does it say?”

“Distinguished and elegant...”

“No, graceful and confident!”

“You’re both wrong. It must be handsome and free!”

“Second boss, what does your fan say?” Someone asked.

He Lao San glared at them: “How would I know? I just copied from the book. It can’t be wrong!”

“Second boss, is that woman really a woman?”

“Nonsense!” He Lao San snapped.

“Is she beautiful?”

He Lao San blushed: “Beautiful! More beautiful than a Goddess!”

“Second boss. You must work hard and marry a beautiful Goddess wife for us!” Everyone chirped in.

He Lao San’s face was turning more and more red. He started fanning himself with his fan and pretended to look calm: “Not a problem, not a problem....”

At this moment, Lin Shan came downstairs. She had just changed into a woman’s outfit. This was the first time she had ever dressed as a woman in this world. She was not used to it. She was afraid she would trip over her skirt, when she noticed a bunch of men staring at her fixedly. The way they gawked at her looked as if they hadn’t eaten in years. It was giving her goose bumps.

He Lao San knew Lin Shan was beautiful, but he didn’t expect drop dead gorgeous! After Lin Shan had changed into a woman’s attire, she looked even more alluring. His heart felt like it was going to pop out .

He straightened out his clothes and twirled his folding fan as he walked up to Lin Shan.

“Dear, are the clothes suitable?”

Lin Shan nodded: “It fits well. Thank you, third brother.”

Oh my goodness! A hot babe called me third brother! He Lao San turned

scarlet: “Dear, do you notice anything different about your third brother?”

Lin Shan looked left and right, up and down, and shook her head.

“Look again!?” He Lao San was anxious. He purposely washed his face, combed his hair, changed his outfit, and took out a fan from the bottom of a chest. He even copied some words onto it.

Lin Shan stared again but she was still clueless. Then, she looked at the fan that He Lao San was spinning around and suddenly came to a realization: “Oh! I know!! One of the Chinese characters is missing a stroke! And where did you buy this fan? Horrible writing, and the words are backwards*! You got cheated!”

He Lao San’s expression turned stiffed as he awkwardly smiled: “Dear, good eye, good eye....”

Behind him, all the brothers hollered in laughter. After this incident, whenever someone saw He Lao San, they would tease: “Third brother, you didn’t bring your fan today?”

There was a saying that behind every successful man is a woman. But actually, behind a successful mountain gang also required a woman; especially a very fine looking woman.

Ever since Lin Shan joined the Black Tiger Gang, the spirits of the men have changed completely! How could it not? After all, most of the mountain thieves were thieves because they felt like they had no other choices in life.

Imagine. A group of men joined together on the mountain and had no one to rely on for food and other things. There was no one for them to impress. Sometimes, they didn’t even bother to put on clothes.

But now it was totally different. There was a woman on the mountain. Not only that, it was a stunning woman! How could they still act the way they did before? No matter what, they must make some effort to look clean!

Hence, all the men started to become hardworking. They started washing their clothes and tidying up their rooms. Within a few days, the whole campsite looked brand new. Even the crude members have become more refined.

Wang Hei Hu was so overwhelmed by the change, he nearly cried as he looked

at Lin Shan: “Miss, if you only came a couple years earlier, what a difference it would have made?”

Actually, Lin Shan’s appearance not only changed the gang’s spirit; their meals also took a big leap.

When Lin Shan had first arrived here, she discovered that the food was not made for humans. The men would randomly hunt a wild boar or pheasant to eat, but the meat would only be half cooked. How was that made for humans?

Therefore, on one hungry night, Lin Shan decided to take control and cooked the chicken using her own method; known as the Hua Ji method.

Initially, she only planned to fill her own stomach. But the smell of her chicken awakened the entire gang and by the time she was done roasting it, she was surrounded by a pack of weasel-like eyes. Lin Shan was startled, and asked: “Do you want some?”

Before she was done talking, her chicken was already finished. She watched the half naked men fight over the chicken. Once in awhile, someone would exclaim: “Mother! This is too good!” “Mom, your son must be dreaming!!”

Lin Shan watched as sweats started to drip down. It’s just a chicken, guys...

After that, Lin Shan was responsible for the meals of the gang. Although she was responsible for the meals, all she had to do was cook. All the other tasks such as chopping firewood, lighting a fire, washing the dishes were arranged for others to do by He Lao San. She was definitely given special treatment.

After a few days later, Lin Shan came to the conclusion that although she lost her position as a female Prince Consort, being a female mountain thief was quite satisfying too.

But it didn’t last long. Soon, she was very troubled.

The issue was He Lao San. Lin Shan honestly believed he hadn’t come across a woman in eight hundred years. He was extra attentive towards her, and expressed his adoration for her everywhere.

In fact, all the brothers knew He Lao San was interested in Lin Shan, and they supported him by calling her “sister in law”. It was stressing Lin Shan so much,

she felt constipated.

Although He Lao San looked alright after he washed himself, he was definitely not Lin Shan's cup of tea. Lin Shan wasn't too picky with love, but how could she be with someone for the rest of her life if she had no feelings towards that person?

Therefore, Lin Shan was distraught and decided to find an opportunity to leave the gang.

The opportunity occurred about half a month later. Since the Imperial Court had been pressing down on the gang so harshly, the Black Tiger Gang hadn't left their site to loot for a long time now. This was starting to become an issue as there were nearly a hundred mouths to feed in the gang.

At that moment, news spread that on the fifth of the month, the Capital's richest man was going to transport a batch of valuable goods into the Capital. In addition, they will be passing by Black Dragon Mountain.

The entire gang felt a surge of energy. They had been oppressed by the Imperial army for too long. Wang Hei Hu could barely sit still. If they were going to die regardless they steal or not, they might as well go for it.

That night, he gathered everyone to scheme how to seize the goods.

Since Lin Shan was now part of the gang, she was also in the meeting. As she listened, she realized that while the gang was busy looting, it was the perfect opportunity for her to escape. Thus, deep down, she was plotting...

On the fifth of the month, all the brothers were fully armed. Wang Hei Hu and He Lao San were going to be leading them down.

However, before heading down the mountain, He Lao San didn't want to part with Lin Shan. He grabbed onto her hand and wouldn't let go. He touchingly stated: "Dear, don't worry about brother. Nothing will happen to me! Wait for me to come back!!"

Lin Shan's face twitched. Who said I was worried about you? I'm worried whether I can escape or not, okay?

After He Lao San and the group left, Lin Shan went back to her room to gather

all her things. Since she was kidnapped, she didn't have much luggage. All she had was Du Hao's garment and his embroidered golden dragon ribbon waist belt.

Why wasn't this an embroidered chicken or goose? Why must it be a dragon? I can't even sell it because no one would dare buy it! Lin Shan spat on the waist belt and threw it on the ground as she harshly stepped twice on it. She yelled: "Crown Prince, eh? You took advantage of me again!"

She gathered a few of the female outfits He Lao San gave her and wrapped it into a bag as she slipped out.

Since all the strong men went down to rob, all the remaining gang members were the old and sick ones. Therefore, it was very easy for Lin Shan to avoid their sight as she left from the back door.

Along the way, it was a beautiful spring day on Black Dragon Mountain. The scene was enchanting and this was the first time Lin Shan had worn a female outfit roaming freely outside. Although she didn't have a single dollar on her, and her future was uncertain, she still felt very optimistic and cheerful.

She was humming a song as she walked down the mountain. When she reached the bottom, she turned around and glanced at the path she just came from. Inside, she whispered:

Farewell, Palace. Farewell, Song Residence. Farewell, Xiao Lu. Farewell to that asshole Du Hao. Farewell to the golden sabre and your owner Lian Feng.... as of today, I, Lin Shan, will no longer have to hide. I'm going to be a proud woman and find a good looking man to live the rest of my life!!

Although she said those thoughts in her mind, she couldn't help but feel slightly reluctant to go. She looked at the path for a long time before she sighed and turned around.

Just as she turned around, she heard "Kill!" coming into her ear. Then, she heard people and horses fighting and screaming. Dust was flying and the ground was shaking.

Poor Lin Shan never expected her chosen path (the least used path) was the one that He Lao San and them were ambushing from.

From a distance, the gang saw a couple chariots coming. They thought their targets have arrived. Therefore, they immediately rushed down the mountain.

But the people leading the chariots did not seem to be afraid. In fact, they accelerated towards the gang.

He Lao San knew they had fallen into a trap, but it was too late. Soldiers have already started coming out from the chariots. They raised their arrows and bows, and aimed at the mountain thieves coming down towards them.

He Lao San and his group froze, and stared at the person who came out from the centre of all the soldiers. That man was wearing a black outfit, and his aura was overbearing and confident. His footsteps were strong, and he had a very unique mask on his face. On his waist, was a golden sabre that reflected brightly from the Sun.

He coldly uttered: "Surrender or die. Make your choice."

*It wasn't until the 20th century that Chinese characters were written from left to right. In the past, it was always right to left. I have a feeling Lin Shan didn't know this...lol

Chapter 33

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Joanna Hee** for her donation! Joanna has donated to me before, and I'm so touched she is willing to donate to me again!! It means a lot to me. Thank you for your kind message as well. ♥♥

I struggled so much with this chapter. I was translating at the pace of a snail. My brain just wouldn't move as I looked at the Chinese characters. *sigh* I hope you like this..

Promoted post: [The Little Prince](#)

Chapter 33

He Lao San loved to brag about his innate strength and unrivaled martial arts. He could sweep across Black Dragon Mountain with his double blade in one breath and not be tired at all. However, he had never met an opponent such as Lian Feng. He hadn't even fought him yet, but he could already feel a slight chill in his heart.

He knew this was going to be a fierce battle, as he tightly held his double blade and looked at Wang Hei Hu.

Wang Hei Hu was very conflicted. He was not afraid to die, but at this moment, there were so many arrows pointing at his brothers who would go and have gone through fire and hell for him. How could he allow them to all die in front of him? As the big boss of the gang, he was responsible for their safety.

Wang Hei Lu gave He Lao San a warning glance as he dropped his blade.

Since the brothers saw their big boss surrendering, most of them also dropped their blades despite the raging anger inside them.

Now, out of the hundred or so members, only He Lao San and a few other impulsive brothers still had their weapons on hand. He Lao San was viciously glaring at Lian Feng. He wasn't planning to surrender.

Lian Feng lifted his hand and signaled as a path was created for him in the

middle: “Those who drop their weapons can leave. Those resisting, die.”

The last few words were said so icily that everyone felt their hearts tremble.

“Lao San, as long as we can stay on the green hill, we do not have to worry about having no firewood*. Don’t be rash.” Wang Hei Hu urged He Lao San.

“Big bro, you guys can leave! But I’m definitely not going to surrender to these Imperial dogs! I know you don’t want our brothers to die with you. But I’m different. Ever since I was young, I had no parents. This is my home. I’m not going to stare blankly as my home is being destroyed!! Today, as long as I, He Lao San, is alive, I will prevent anyone from touching our home!”

He Lao San’s righteous words touched all the brothers. Wang Hei Hu’s eyes immediately turned red as he grabbed onto He Lao San’s hand: “Lao San. You are right. This is our home. I’m not leaving either!”

Then, Wang Hei Hu picked up his blade and bellowed at his brothers: “My brothers, if you want to leave today, I will not be stopping you. But if you want to stay behind, stand next to me!”

Shortly after, someone picked up his weapon. One, then two, then three... everyone stood by Wang Hei Hu’s side; their eyes were glowering.

Seeing this did not bother Lian Feng at all. He signaled again, and all the arrows pointed directly at Wang Hei Hu and his gang.

At this life and death moment, suddenly a small black shadow tried sneaking away with a bundle. The person was crouching down and taking tiny steps as she tried to go off unnoticed.

Lian Feng sensed the movement and signaled. An arrow flew in the air and landed grimly above Lin Shan’s head, on the tree behind her.

“Ah!” Lin Shan hollered as she fell down and landed on the ground. Her eyes fearfully stared at the direction of the arrow, and she made eye contact with Lian Feng. Both of them were stunned.

Lian Feng recognized Lin Shan right away. It had already been a month since she had been gone. She was on his mind, day and night. Now that she had suddenly appeared, it was like a miracle. Not only that, she was wearing a female

outfit, which made her look much more delicate compared to her male outfit.

Lin Shan's clear pupils reflected the sunset, which accentuated her beauty even more. All these nights, he had imagined what she would look like as a woman. Now that she was within his grasp, it felt like a dream.

At the same time, Lin Shan also felt like she was dreaming. Just a moment ago, she had decided to forget about the past and start fresh. Now that she had encountered Lian Feng again, she was in awe. As he stood there, behind him was the red sunset. Sand was blowing faintly around the path, and his clothes were also swaying with the wind; his silver mask was shining under the light.

Wow, what a scene. Lin Shan felt slightly dazed. By the time she snapped out of it, the sunset was blocked by Lian Feng's shadow. She felt bewitched as she stared at him with his mask on. Time seemed to have paused. The birds were quiet, the air was still, and even the white clouds seemed to be silently watching....

A hand reached out in front of her; a hand that held a sabre all year round. It was clean, generous, and there were calluses on the palm..his slender fingers were very evident.

Lin Shan felt like she must be possessed, because she didn't even hesitate as she extended her hand. As her hand made contact with his hand, Lian Feng tightly held onto her and she felt a surge of strength pulling her up from the ground. The warmth from his hand made her reluctant to let go.

He Lao San didn't expect Lin Shan to leave the mountains and suddenly placed herself in this dangerous position. In addition, he was shocked that the Imperial army leader ran towards his beloved Lin Shan to pull her up.

Are you kidding me? That tender, snow white little hand. This old man right here didn't even dare to look at it while helping out in the kitchen for half a month! How dare you come and touch it on the spot?!

At that moment, He Lao San felt a raging fire inside of him. It was surging and exploding! He firmly held onto his double blade and leaped towards them. He shrieked: "You dog, let go of my woman's hand!" He was about to chop Lian Feng's hand.

Lin Shan was flabbergasted and wanted to interfere, but Lian Feng pushed her aside. He took out his golden sabre and the aura of death was present.

Sand and stones flew, and leaves were continuously falling. With one move, he managed to block He Lao San's violent attack and forced him to take a couple steps back while they were still a few metres apart from each other.

As expected, he was a skillful fighter. He Lao San sighed inside, there were not many people who could block his attack. This guy even managed to force him to take steps back.

It seemed like he had truly met his match today. If he was going to fight and die like a man, then so be it.

He Lao San decided to give it his all. He leaped towards Lian Feng again as he swung his blade.

The Black Tiger Gang didn't expect their second boss to suddenly start fighting the leader of the soldiers. The brothers exchanged eye contacts with each other and decided: Well, what are we waiting for? They all raised their weapons and started to charge towards the soldiers.

The opponents also raised their arrows.

"Don't release the arrows!"

"Don't move!"

Lian Feng and He Lao San nearly said those words in unison. At the same time, they both looked at Lin Shan. They didn't want her to suffer from any harm.

"Damn it! How dare he look at my woman's hand?" He Lao San didn't expect Lian Feng to react the same way he did, and instantly drowned in jealousy. He swung his blade again.

Although Lian Feng's blade was fast and his style was sharp, he was not physically as strong as He Lao San. After a few moves, neither of them were winning.

Just like that, the two of them fought and fought. Lin Shan watched from the side and felt like she was watching an ancient drama. All she could see were the reflection of the blades and the sounds of metal hitting against each other. Bing

bing bing bing. It was so magical.

Suddenly, she seemed to have realized something and slapped her thigh: Oh my goodness! At this rate, the golden sabre will be damaged!!!!

She quickly shouted: “Stop fighting! Stop fighting!! I’m telling you to stop!!”

Hearing Lin Shan’s voice distracted Lian Feng, and his movement slowed down slightly. He tried to avoid He Lao San’s blade, but he was one step too late. His arm got slashed, and fresh blood started spilling out.

Seeing Lian Feng injured, all those soldiers who put down the arrows immediately raised up their arrows again; facing He Lao San. If He Lao San dares to take another step, he will most likely end up looking like a hedgehog.

The situation was tense, and the gang members couldn’t hold back either as they raised their weapons.

At this crucial moment, Lin Shan went in between He Lao San and Lian Feng.

“Are you alright?” Lin Shan was panicking. Originally, she only cared about the golden sabre, but seeing Lian Feng injured, she was even more worried. She didn’t have second thoughts as she rushed towards him.

“I’m fine.” Lian Feng shook his head, as blood continuously poured out from his wound.

“What? How are you alright? Look at how much blood you’re losing?!!” Lin Shan was so worried, she wanted to cry. She ripped off a corner of her clothes and quickly used it to wrap around his wound.

What an astonishing moment. Underneath the sunset, between the sharp blades of two groups of men, was an unarmed and defenseless girl who was wrapping up a wound for a man. Her movements were clumsy, and her hands were shaking, but she did not back off at all.

Lian Feng felt like it was surreal. He was used to seeing blood, and he had slaughtered many with his blade; but the woman in front of him has never dealt with blood, and probably never came across death. Yet, she was trying so hard to overcome her fear as she tried to help him stop the bleeding with her clean hands.

At this moment, Lian Feng felt like his injury was worth it.

*This is an idiom. It basically means, as long as you're alive, you can always come/fight back in the future. There will be opportunities.

Chapter 34

To my dear readers,

Sorry I took a break from translating!! My brain needed to recharge. I hope you haven't been checking constantly for my update. My mom has been nagging me to translate every morning and night. I'm like, "I need to rest my brain." She says, "You're making your readers suffer! Hurry up!" -_- She cares more about you guys than me.

Anyhow, I would like to thank **Rachel Her** and **Rini Fatmawati** for their donations! Thank you so much for your support. I honestly appreciate it so much. Translating is so hard and I get discouraged at times. Donations honestly make me feel more appreciated.

Promoted post: [Don't judge a person by the cover](#)

Chapter 34

He Lao San was holding on his breath. From the moment the leader of the soldiers held Lin Shan's hand, he was already resentful towards him. Now that Lin Shan was helping that guy wrap his wound in front of everyone, it was a severe blow to his self esteem.

He couldn't take it anymore, and rushed towards Lian Feng with his blade despite the fact Lin Shan was by his side.

Seeing He Lao San attacking again, Lian Feng quickly used his uninjured hand to push Lin Shan behind him. He tightly held onto his sabre as he blocked He Lao San's attack. Immediately, fresh blood seeped through the wrapped wound.

Lin Shan was furious and came out from behind Lian Feng as she screeched: "Stop fighting this second!"

Her tone frightened He Lao San and he actually stopped attacking. He turned and looked at Lin Shan astonishingly.

"Fight fight fight! All you guys know is how to fight! What's the point? What if you win? Are you guys honestly planning to be mountain thieves forever? Mountain thieves in your teens. Mountain thieves in your twenties. Perhaps by

the time you guys are in your seventies and eighties, you'll still be mountain thieves! Even if you're proud, others do not know how to react. Come on and use your brains! Stop complaining and whining you cannot find wives. What kind of woman would want to marry a mountain thief? This is common sense. You guys are not getting any younger!"

Lin Shan's words seemed to have caught the gang off guard. All of them looked dumbfounded; especially He Lao San; all his remaining self esteem had thoroughly been wiped out.

As for Wang Hei Hu, he had been a mountain thief for years. Based on his experiences, he could tell right away Lin Shan wasn't simply a female servant. He was impressed by her and asked: "Then tell us what we could do instead?"

"Enlist in the army for forgiveness!" Lin Shan blurted out.

"Enlist in the army for forgiveness?"

"That's correct. There are nearly a hundred gang members who are physically strong and able. None of you are missing an arm or a leg. Why must you guys be mountain thieves? Why not become soldiers? You can choose to defend your country or rob and steal. Which do you think is the better choice?"

Lin Shan's words caused Wang Hei Hu to ponder deeply. When he first started out as a mountain thief, it was because he had no other option. For the last couple of years, he had constantly been worrying for the gang's future.

If they must be sneaky and live in fear for life, why not do as Lin Shan says and choose a peaceful path instead?

"I can consider your suggestion. But even if we are willing to enlist in the army, would the Imperial Court accept us?" Wang Hei Hu turned his glance towards the silent Lian Feng.

Lian Feng didn't directly respond, but turned to look at Lin Shan; he wanted to see her perspective.

Lin Shan nodded, indicated that he could trust them. She had been living with the gang for half a month. She knew that deep down, they were not bad people; most of them didn't purposely choose to become a mountain thief.

“Alright.” Lian Feng calmly replied: “If you guys are willing to change and help our country, we would not treat you unfairly.”

“Allow us to discuss with our brothers for a night. Tomorrow morning, I will come down by myself to give you an answer. Fair?”

“Fair. But I’m taking her with me.” Lian Feng grabbed onto Lin Shan’s wrist. He grasped her so tightly that Lin Shan lost balance and took two steps back; her body was against his now.

“No!” At that moment, He Lao San seemed to have snapped out of his misery and ran towards them. He couldn’t bear to see Lian Feng take away his Lin Shan, and was ready to fight.

“Lao San!” Wang Hei Hu hollered. “Don’t allow your recklessness to destroy everyone else’s lives!”

Since the big boss spoke up, He Lao San released his blade, but he was still boiling from anger. He gave Lian Feng the death stare as he unwillingly backed off.

Seeing He Lao San retreat, Wang Hei Hu faced Lian Feng and spoke in a very calm manner: “Sir, it’s not that we do not trust you. However, I’ve been in this field for years now. We cannot afford not to watch out for ourselves. Therefore, we are going to tell Miss Song to return with us. Tomorrow, I will personally bring her back down to see you after our discussion. Alright?”

“No!” Lian Feng firmly stated, “I’m not going to lie to you guys. And she is not leaving with you guys. There is nothing to talk over.”

Lian Feng’s words caused Wang Hei Hu’s facial expression to change. Lin Shan could tell things were heading down the wrong direction. She quickly spoke up: “We can talk it over! Talk it over!” She awkwardly smiled at Lian Feng and said, “Just let me return. I’ve been living with them for half a month now. The brothers treat me well. They’re not bad people. Don’t worry about me!”

“No means no!” Lian Feng coldly replied. His mind was set as he firmly held onto her hand and wouldn’t let go.

“Hey, what’s wrong with your brain? I already said it’s fine!” Lin Shan was annoyed. “Look at you, you’re hurt! You still want to fight with them? You’re not

going to have an advantage anyway! So why don't you just let me go back? If Big bro Wang eats his words, he will never be able to find a wife, ok?"

Wang Hei Hu's mouth twitched as he stiffly nodded.

"See? Big bro Wang is thirty five years old and he has the courage to make such a cruel pledge. It'll be fine." Lin Shan consoled Lian Feng.

At this moment, there was just a tiny bit of sunset left. The sky was filling up with stars, and the gorgeous night was reflecting off Lin Shan's watery eyes. The sight caused Lian Feng's heart to soften.

"Fine." He nodded. However, he still wouldn't release her hand. "But I'm coming with you."

Since Lian Feng was so persistent, Wang Hei Hu decided to let him have his way and allowed Lian Feng to come up the mountains with them.

However, Lian Feng's subordinate Yang Xin was very worried.

"Superior, this is extremely dangerous. Please do not allow a woman to ruin our duties!"

"I know what I'm doing. Do not worry, I'll take responsibility for whatever happens." Lian Feng replied. Then he looked at Lin Shan and said: "Let's go!" He didn't hesitate at all as he went up the mountain.

Yang Xin shook his head from below as he lightly sighed: "A beauty can destroy us all... a beauty can destroy us all....."

Anyhow, Lin Shan was feeling extremely uncomfortable at this moment. Honestly, she would feel less nervous if she had just gone back with He Lao San and the others. For some reason, now that Lian Feng was by her side, she felt very tense.

The moment Lian Feng saw her, she could tell he had recognized her immediately. How could he recognize her so quickly from a glance?

There could only be one explanation. He must have known she was a woman early on.

This caused Lin Shan to think back to the Du Hao incident. That day, Lian Feng must have been the person who helped her changed clothes. Thinking of this,

she turned scarlet.

Lian Feng was following Lin Shan when she suddenly stopped and turned around to glare at him. He was confused, but he noticed her flushed cheeks as they made eye contact.

Lian Feng couldn't help but noticed how cute Lin Shan looked as a woman. He felt helpless as he didn't know how to react.

This slight moment caught the eyes of He Lao San and he was super jealous. That f**ker. How dare he try to send love signals along the way? He simply didn't care about my existence? Thus, he rushed ahead and eagerly said to Lin Shan: "Dear, the mountainous roads are not easy to walk on. Please watch out."

Umm, my body had already been seen by someone! Watch? Watch your ass! Lin Shan didn't say a word but gave him a death stare as she ran up, leaving poor Lao San by himself. Once again, his self esteem was shaken. Then, he turned and grabbed hold of Lian Feng, who was trying to avoid contact with him.

"I'm telling you, don't you dare hit on my woman! Or else..."

"Get out of my way." Lian Feng icily responded. He used his internal strength and pushed He Lao San's hand off himself. Lian Feng didn't take another glance at him as he followed Lin Shan.

Poor He Lao San. It was as if his self esteem had evaporated. Yet, Wang Hei Hu wouldn't let him fight back: "Big bro....." he whined.

"Bro what?" This is a crucial time. Don't allow a woman to cause trouble for us!" Wang Hei Hu yelled as he walked away.

Behind him, a bunch of the brothers took turns patting He Lao San on the back:

"Second boss, don't be too sad. That guy looks better than you with a mask on. Just accept it and move on."

"Second boss, put the fan in a safe spot. I'm sure it will be useful in the future."

"Second boss. You should be more like big boss. He's thirty five and not in a rush. Why are you rushing?"

Wang Hei Hu heard them from the front, and almost fell flat on his face.

By the time they got back to the campsite, the sky was totally black. Although Wang Hei Hu had poor upbringing, he was an honest man and kept his word. He also treated Lian Feng very politely.

“Superior. We brothers do not live as well as you Generals. Tonight, I will have to trouble you to stay in my room. Tomorrow morning, after we have our discussion, I will personally send you both down the mountains.”

“Big boss, thank you. But tonight, I’m staying with her.” Lian Feng replied as he looked at Lin Shan.

Chapter 35

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **Sweet Ling Ong** for her donation! Thank you so much! Any support you guys give me are appreciated.

Promoted post: [The Tiny Frog](#)

Chapter 35

What? Lin Shan was appalled: “Y-you you... why are you staying with me? I need to sleep!” She thought about how Lian Feng changed her, and her two cheeks turned pink.

Wang Hei Hu felt awkward: “Superior, logically you can sleep anywhere you want. But you and Miss Song....”

“No need to say anymore. It has been decided.” Lian Feng cuts him off. Before Lin Shan could object, he grabbed her by her hand and led her up the stairs.

“Hey! Big bro, you can’t let them....” He Lao San was furious and about to rush up with his blade, but he was blocked by Wang Hei Hu.

“What are you doing? Put the blade down!”

“Big brother!” He Lao San was so anxious, he wanted to cry, “C-can’t you see that Lin Shan is unwilling?”

“Willing or not, it’s not up to you! This is call flirting! The little Miss likes her man bossy and controlling. Unlike you. You turn red just looking at her! Plus, you stutter so much. What kind of woman would want to marry you!?”

“Oh....!” The brothers exclaimed as they all seemed to be enlightened.

So this was what flirting is like! Big Brother sure had lots of experience. He didn’t waste his thirty five years after all!

“Let go! I’m telling you to let go!” Lin Shan had known Lian Feng for awhile now, but she had never seen this side of him. She was irked because he refused to let go. Therefore, Lin Shan threw herself on him as she bit his hand.

She didn't bite lightly. Bloody veins were visible, but Lian Feng seemed to disregard it. He still refused to let go.

Finally, Lin Shan gave up as she whined: "Lian big brother. Lian Superior. Lian big boss. Please let go?? My hand is about to break off...."

Before she could complete her sentence, Lian Feng miraculously let go as he turned around to look at her.

As Lin Shan was massaging her wrist, she was cursing. Suddenly, she felt a glance and she lifted her head to see Lian Feng openly staring at her. It looked as if he was trying to see right through her.

Lin Shan felt a bit guilty and her facial expression was stiff. She pointed up ahead and said: "My room is that way!" Then, while Lian Feng was slightly distracted, she ran towards the door to get herself in.

Before she could close the door, a hand stopped her. Her bitten teeth marks were still visible, and Lin Shan felt even more guilty. Next thing she knew, the door was flung opened and Lian Feng walked right in.

Lin Shan was shocked, and she took a couple steps back. She wanted to run but she was too slow. Lian Feng seized her by the collar and using hardly any strength, he easily pulled her towards him.

Lin Shan felt her waist tighten as her body spun in the air. Behind the entrance, she was firmly pressed onto the ground.

Since the floor hadn't been fixed in years, it made a creaking sound. Lin Shan felt a scorching heat within reach. Lian Feng's two long legs were inching closer, and she was entirely covered by his shadow.

The silver mask looked very cold in this unlit room. It was exactly the opposite of his fiery eyes. There was a distinct contrast.

At this moment, Lin Shan thought to herself: This old grandma is going to give herself to you. If you dare to kiss me, I'll let you have me!

With a giddy heart, she shut her eyes.

Lian Feng didn't expect Lin Shan to suddenly shut her eyes. He felt a bit helpless.

There was a bit of light seeping in from the door, and it made Lin Shan look a bit hazy. Having never experienced love, Lian Feng could feel his heart stirring. It was trying to push its way out. He honestly wanted to kiss her, but his logical side was trying to restrain his urge.

Kiss me! Why are you not kissing? If you're not going to kiss me, watch, I'm going to kiss you! Inside, Lin Shan was yelping. Finally, she couldn't wait any longer and opened her eyes.

The second she opened her eyes, Lian Feng had released her and turned to the table to light the lamp.

Once the lamp was lit, the entire room was bright. The lust Lin Shan felt was immediately replaced by rage. What the hell!?! First you changed my clothes, and then you hid from me. Now, you took advantage of me, pushed me onto the ground but didn't kiss me? Do you f**king like me or not??!

There was a saying that understanding a woman's heart was like looking for a needle under the bottom of the ocean. But Lin Shan believed that statement should be used to describe men instead.

You can't fish it up, and you can't feel it. Just when you think you have caught it, it slips away in a blink of an eye.... what is that feeling?

She couldn't even explain it herself. All she felt was frustration. It annoyed her that she couldn't read any of his expressions with his mask on.

"I'm tired. I need to sleep." She angrily stated.

"Alright." Lian Feng abruptly replied.

"I said I need to sleep!" Lin Shan raised her voice. "Please get out."

"For your own safety, I'm not leaving this room." said Lian Feng calmly.

Lin Shan was even more agitated by his calm response as she refuted: "You are a man. I am a woman. There is no relationship between us. Why are you in my room if I'm sleeping? Please get out!"

"You still remember you're a woman?" Lian Feng countered, "You weren't afraid of living with a big group of men for such a long period of time. Yet, you're afraid of me?"

“You!” Lin Shan was so irritated that she couldn’t think of any arguments. “Fine! If you want to stay, then stay! Stay as long as you want! I don’t care about you!” Then she stormed off to her bed.

It was very difficult for Lin Shan to fall asleep because there were so many people living underneath the same roof. Plus, the moment she closed her eyes, she would think of that particular person. After tossing and turning for a long time, she tried to hear movements with her ears.

Finally, she couldn’t fight her curiosity anymore and opened her eyes to look at her surroundings.

Lin Shan saw Lian Feng sitting by the table in an upright position. It looked like he was asleep, because he was motionless.

Oh you jerk! I can’t sleep because of you, yet you can sleep sitting down! Sleep, sleep, sleep! Sleep to your death! Lin Shan made a face at him and she wanted to throw her pillow at him. But thinking how she only has one pillow, it wasn’t a good idea.

After contemplating for awhile, she madly turned around with the pillow: Humph! If you can sleep, I can sleep! Let’s see who’s the better sleeper!

Her “bet” actually allowed her to fall asleep.

Lin Shan was dreaming. She dreamt that she had become a donkey and was chasing after a carrot. Run, run, run! She ran until she exhausted all her strength. Finally, she threw herself onto the carrot and caught it!

She was so happy. Just as she was about to bite onto the carrot, she noticed that there was a string attached to it. And the person holding the string was Lian Feng. He was waving at her.

Holy shit! Lin Shan woke up from her dream in astonishment. When she opened her eyes, the sky was starting to light up. She got up from her bed and looked at Lian Feng.

Lian Feng was still in the same position as he was last night. It looked as if he didn’t move an inch. By his side was his golden sabre that never leaves his hand.

Perhaps it was because of the lighting or due to her being half asleep, Lin Shan

suddenly felt like the sabre was an enormous carrot. She wanted to get closer to see if she was seeing things...

While Lin Shan was dreaming, Lian Feng also had a dream. He dreamt of last night's scenario. The face he had been thinking day and night was inching closer and closer; her eyes were tightly shut, and her small and exquisite nose was creasing due to nervousness; her mouth was slightly parted and pouty.

It was too inviting and irresistible. Lian Feng couldn't hold back any longer. He gently kissed her.

What a beautiful moment. Oh, those soft, moist, sweet lips. It honestly didn't feel like a dream. He had never kissed a woman before, therefore, he lightly tested with his tongue. The tip of his tongue quickly came across those pearly white teeth as he slowly pry them open....

"Mmmm" A moaning sound entered his ear. Lian Feng instantly opened his eyes and realized he was actually kissing Lin Shan in real life!!! He was stunned and quickly pulled back.

Lin Shan was originally focusing on the golden sabre, but somehow, her eyes ended up on Lian Feng's face. At that moment, he suddenly leaned in and that was how their first kiss naturally happened.

There was no resistance at all. There was only bliss. This was how it was supposed to happen! But Lin Shan didn't expect Lian Feng to end the kiss half way. Losing that luscious kiss annoyed her to the max.

Lin Shan was truly Lin Shan. She wrapped her arms around Lian Feng's neck and without the slightest hesitation, she savagely kissed him.

Chapter 36

To my dear readers,

I lack willpower...T_T” I hope you like this. It is so hard for me to stay motivated. Sigh. But I will keep going... I don't want to quit half way..:(Ohh by the way, I reanalyzed all the chapters. I have an additional 10 chapters for you guys from the extended ending. That is good news for you but a lot of work for me.

This is my promoted post: [Reality vs The Internet](#)

Chapter 36

Lian Feng didn't expect Lin Shan to voluntarily kiss him. He was taken aback, but was able to adapt quickly. All the emotions he had suppressed for so long suddenly erupted. He didn't want to hold back any longer. His next move was something that even Lin Shan herself hasn't thought of yet.

He placed one hand around her waist, and the other on her neck as he pulled her closer.

Lin Shan was surprised by his boldness as her body soften. She took this opportunity to sit on his lap as her breasts touched his chest. Her entire body felt like it was on fire.

Although she was from the future, the intensity of this gesture caused her cheeks to flush and her heart to skip a beat. Her body was reacting as if the kiss was going to suck everything out of her. Her mind started to fuzz, and all of her four limbs were going soft.

To prevent herself from going limp, she tightly held onto Lian Feng's clothes.

Just like that, their kiss deepen. From the looks of it, there was no turning back. Suddenly, there was a knock at the door. Immediately following was Wang Hei Hu's voice.

“Superior, Miss Song, are you guys awake? I have something to discuss with you two.”

The moment Lin Shan heard the voice, she bounced from Lian Feng like a guilty thief. Her head was lowered and she couldn't stop blushing.

"Alright. Give us a moment." Lian Feng replied. His eyes never left Lin Shan as he reached out to straighten out her clothes and gently fixed her messy hair. When his finger brushed against her flushed cheeks, both of them were stumped for words. Lin Shan's cheeks turned even more red, like a flower about to burst open.

"Umm. err... I-I....." She stuttered.

Lian Feng smoothly placed his finger on her lips: "Anything you want to say, say it when we're off the mountains."

For some strange reason, the words coming out of his mouth were very convincing and Lin Shan didn't even think as she nodded. Lin Shan then realized she was still sitting on his lap! She rushed to get up, but before she could, she felt her waist tightened as her body was being lowered to the ground. Next thing she knew, she was standing steadily facing Lian Feng.

Lian Feng was fixing her clothes again. He made sure her neck didn't expose anything before he said: "Let's go."

"Okay." Lin Shan agreed. Lian Feng reached out his hand and like an automatic reflex, she placed her hand in his. She felt a warm current going through her palm all the way to her heart.

Is this what being in love feels like? Lin Shan has lived two lives, it wasn't that she had never experienced young love. However, at the time, she was only curious and thought it was fun. It wasn't until now that she truly felt like she was in love.

Lian Feng led Lin Shan down the stairs, and her face couldn't hide her bashfulness. Wang Hei Hu could read the whole situation with one glance. He couldn't help but sigh for He Lao San.

Brother, you should just follow me. A man in his thirties is like a flower. I'm sure there will be a tree we can hang ourselves to death somewhere out there.

When Lian Feng came downstairs, he saw a few new faces beside Wang Hei Hu. They looked different from the other members of the gang. In fact, they

appeared even more rough and ferocious. He couldn't help but set his guard up, as he pulled Lin Shan behind him and tightened his grip on his sabre.

Wang Hei Hu could tell his reaction was off and instantly explained: "Superior, do not be mistaken. Let me introduce you. These are a few of the bosses from around the mountains. After speaking with my brothers last night, we came to the agreement that Miss Song's suggestion was a good choice for us. Hence, we contacted all the gangs from around our area. They are willing to work alongside with the Imperial Court. Based on my calculations, we should have more than a thousand people."

More than a thousand? Lian Feng was flabbergasted on the inside. When he arrived, he thought there would only be around five hundred mountain thieves or so. He didn't think the number would go beyond six hundred. He was shocked that the numbers are so much higher than what the Imperial Court had predicted.

Thanks to Lin Shan, many lives were probably saved. It would have been disastrous if they hadn't come to an agreement.

Although he was bewildered on the inside, his face showed no indication. Lian Feng calmly replied: "Please do not worry. As long as you're willing to be loyal to us, the Imperial Court has no reason to go against you guys. Once I leave the mountains, I will quickly send people to report back to the Emperor. I will be able to give you guys a satisfying response in three days."

"Frank and straightforward! I like!" Wang Hei Hu smacked the table. "Alright then, for the next three days I'll be here waiting for your reply. Come, allow me to bring you two down the mountains!"

"Wait!" The sullen He Lao San couldn't control himself any longer. He didn't care if Wang Hei Hu objected as he ran up to block Lin Shan from leaving. His face showed how much he wanted her to stay. He pitifully asked: "Dear, do you really have to leave?"

Psssh, what do you think? Lin Shan looked at Lian Feng and firmly nodded her head.

"But dear, I...I can't bear to see you go..." He Lao San's eyes were turning red. This wasn't surprising considering how he had lived twenty five years of his life

before he fell in love. And now, the woman that touched his heart was leaving with another man while holding his hand. How could he not be sad?!

Lin Shan felt bad. She could only comfort him by forcing a smile: "Third brother, don't make it sound like it's a farewell for life. I'm sure we will see each other in the future...."

He Lao San cuts her off: "No need to say anything else. I know after this, I may never see you again. I have something I want to say to you. Come over for a second."

Lin Shan was about to follow but Lian Feng pulled her back. He gave He Lao San the death stare.

Not this again! Lin Shan quickly shook her head, indicating that it was alright. Lian Feng finally released her hand, but his glare remained.

He Lao San felt goose bumps from Lian Feng's glance. He knew the people working for the Imperial Court were fierce, but he didn't expect them to look so scary. Oh no! Lin Shan is going to suffer in the future!!

"Dear, if he treats you badly. Come and tell me and I'll deal with him!"

"Okay." Lin Shan nodded. But inside she was thinking: If he dares to treat me poorly, I don't need you to help me. I'll personally chop his testicles off!

"Also, I actually found out your identity long ago. You are..." He Lao San whispered in Lin Shan's ear as he lowered his voice.

Lin Shan's mouth twitched: "Third brother. Actually, I'm...."

"Dear. No need to say anymore. Go! If I have an opportunity, I'll come see you!" He Lao San waved as he confidently turned around with a fan. On the fan, written with terrible handwriting was the word: loneliness.

Lin Shan almost choked from shock.

"What did he say to you?" After they were off the mountains, Lian Feng asked Lin Shan.

Lin Shan mumbled: "He saw my pendant. He thinks I'm the Princess....."

"Pendant?"

“Yeah.” Lin Shan looked to her right and left. Once she confirmed that no one else was around, she took out the jade pendant she had stolen from Du Ming Yue. She whispered: “Look! It’s jade. It’s worth a lot of money.....”

Before she was finished talking, Lian Feng took it from her.

Lin Shan was anxious: “Why are you stealing my stuff?” That was the only worthy item she had on her.

Lian Feng didn’t give her a reason. All he said was: “I’ll help you keep it.” Then, he stuffed the pendant in his clothes as he continued walking straight ahead.

“I don’t want you to keep it! I can keep it myself! Give it back!” Lin Shan was trying to grab onto Lian Feng’s neck to stop him. But she used too much strength and ended up ripping off the wrapped wound.

The blood had solidify and the wound looked gruesome. The cloth had blood stains on it.

“I...I’m sorry! I didn’t mean to do that. Let me help you rewrap it...” She was afraid he would be in pain, so she quickly tried to fix her mistake. At this moment, Lian Feng suddenly grabbed her shaking hands.

Lin Shan was astonished as she looked at Lian Feng questioningly. His pupils were dark and he looked very serious. The way he was gazing at her reminded her of this morning as they kissed while she was sitting on his lap. Lin Shan couldn’t help as her cheeks started to burn from embarrassment.

“Umm... can you...give me back the pendant..?” She was clearly trying to avoid the awkwardness as she stuttered.

“No.”

“W-why not?”

“Dowry.” Lian Feng had no expression as he released her hands. But as he turned around, there was a smirk on his face. He continued walking.

Dowry???

That word repeated in her mind more than ten times until she finally realized she was being taken advantage of again! She violently smacked her thigh: Dowry? Who said I wanted to marry you?! I didn’t even ask you to give me the

golden sabre as a betrothal gift and yet you want my pendant as the dowry?
You... you evil soul!!! T____T

Chapter 37

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Tanzin Bushra** and **Roberto Recinos** for their donations! I'm not sure if Roberto reads Your Highness (I think he read my Zui Wu Dao translations). However, regardless of what you read, I appreciate the support!! It means a lot to me. ♥♥

This chapter took me so many attempts and two days because it was so hard. I hope you guys like it. The next chapter will be very funny, and the chapter after that will be very enjoyable *wink wink HINT HINT* LOL

Promoted post: [Helping the homeless](#)

Chapter 37

Lian Feng's mission was very significant.

Firstly, the Capital had always been the core of the country's politics, economy and culture. In order to get to the Capital, everyone must pass through Black Dragon Mountain. Therefore, creating a clear path without obstruction would greatly affect the whole country's development.

Secondly, there was a high number of mountain thieves. The initial count was already more than a thousand. These people knew martial arts, had good physique, were able to bear hardships, and most importantly, were familiar with the region. They only require a little bit of training, and they could become the mountainous region combat squad.

They would be guarding the path to the Imperial City. If things go well, solely one person would be able to fight off a hundred.

Due to the two reasons mentioned above, the Emperor was exceptionally pleased with Lian Feng's performance. The moment he received the document from the messenger, he immediately handed down an Imperial edict appointing Lian Feng with total authority over this matter.

The Emperor wanted Lian Feng to thoroughly settle this dispute with the mountain thieves; it had been a troublesome issues for decades.

Once this Imperial edict was handed down, Lian Feng became the talk of the town again. In addition, he also became super busy because he was responsible for a variety of tasks; including checking the numbers of recruitment and having discussions with the gang members regarding future plans.

Lian Feng was constantly on the move. He didn't even have time to eat.

As a result, Lin Shan, who had just experienced the first taste of sweet love, felt abandoned. She was upset and wanted to join in the fun. However, Lian Feng refused. His reasoning was that he wasn't going to a brothel, but seeing big hairy men.

After pondering for awhile, one day, Lin Shan came to a realization.

What the hell? Why do I have to be so obedient for? I can go watch secretly!! If I'm too noticeable as a woman, I'll just dress as a man! Lin Shan oh Lin Shan. Don't allow a man to control you just because he's hot. A man can't always get his way!

Just like that, Lin Shan secretly sneaked into the troop the next morning when Lian Feng was about to lead the group up the mountain. An unlucky dude had gotten his uniform stolen by her.

Today, Lian Feng's objective was to deal with the "Black Moon Gang". There were only seven members in that gang, yet they were the most difficult to deal with. All the other gangs have agreed to following the order of the Imperial Court. However, the Black Moon Gang refused to compromise. Not only that, they were also provoking other gangs to go against the Imperial Court.

You may be wondering why seven people have such power? There was only one reason. All of the seven members were women.

What? We're going to find the Black Moon Gang? The moment Lin Shan heard the news, she staggered.

When she was staying with the Black Tiger Gang, Lin Shan had heard rumours about the Black Moon Gang. It was said that the boss of the gang is Liu Qiao Yue, and they were a group of seven. They were known as the "Black Moon seven women thieves". However, don't estimate this seven women army; they were much more vicious compared to the male thieves.

Money wasn't the only thing the Black Moon Gang seized by force. They also wanted sex. It had been said that many young masters passing by the Black Dragon Mountain have been raped by them.

Even the thirty five years old gangster Wang Hei Hu was afraid of them. You can imagine how frightening they were.

Thinking of this, Lin Shan couldn't help but panicked. Umm... this was more dangerous than Lian Feng going to a brothel! In a brothel, you have to pay to order get women. What if these seven women were like hungry wolves and wanted Lian Feng? Lin Shan instantly felt her blood boiled.

I don't give a shit! Any woman that tries to steal my man, I will bite her! With that attitude, Lin Shan courageously marched up the mountain.

They arrived at the site at noon and found it surrounded by fresh flowers. In addition, the door was open wide with no guards watching. It looked extremely suspicious.

"Superior. In case there is a trap, allow me to go in first." An Imperial guard bravely volunteered.

Lian Feng didn't say a word but lightly nodded to show his approval. The Imperial guard promptly proceeded with his sword. Lin Shan, being curious, tried to stretch out her neck to see what was going on. However, within a short moment, a terrifying shriek could be heard.

Right after, the Imperial guard that went inside came rushing out in torn clothing. He bawled: "Oh my goodness. It's too scary! Those people are women?? It's truly horrifying..."

Currently, all the Imperial guards were halting. They didn't know how to react. Originally, they thought a few women wouldn't be a big deal; but now, they were standing looking at each other awkwardly. No one dared to volunteer again.

Lian Feng narrowed his eyes as he tightly clutched his sabre and took a step forward.

"Wait!" Lin Shan anxiously shouted as she ran out from the troop.

As expected, Lin Shan couldn't hold back and watch her beloved go in. By the

way, Lian Feng had noticed there was an extra person in the troop from the very beginning. He recognized Lin Shan right away, but knowing her temper, he didn't say anything.

From Lian Feng's glance, Lin Shan could tell he recognized her immediately. She was grumpy. He knew I was here all along yet he planned to go in unaccompanied? How dare he!?

Therefore, she stood in front of Lian Feng and blocked his path: "I'm going in with you!"

"Stop playing around. It's dangerous inside." Lian Feng felt a bit helpless. He knew if Lin Shan went in with him, it would only cause him more trouble. Yet, he didn't have the heart to blame her.

"You know it's dangerous and you still want to go in? I'm not letting you in!" Lin Shan fumed. She refused to negotiate.

The two of them were glaring at each other while the Imperial guards were watching with their eyes wide opened. At first, their faces were full of doubt. However, gradually, they came to a realization.

"Ohhh! So Lian Superior has this type of interest!!!"

"The women thieves do not stand a chance!"

"Good job! It's better to let a man take advantage of you than women thieves!"

While everyone were whispering amongst themselves, suddenly from inside, a sharp female voice could be heard: "What? It has only been a few minutes and no one else dares to come in? I guess the people from the Imperial Court aren't much of a challenge!"

Something was about to happen. Everyone stopped discussing and tightly held onto their weapons.

At that moment, a chilly wind surrounded them, and a few white figures appeared. They were dressed in white gowns and floating like ghosts as their long hair fluttered with the wind. It was a very frightening sight.

Holy shit! No wonder Wang Hei Hu rather lust after the old woman who

delivered vegetable from the bottom of the mountain than them. Lin Shan secretly thought to herself. Then, she noticed the seven women's eyes were on her and Lian Feng.

Oh no! Just as I thought, they wanted Lian Feng! Lin Shan panicked and without thinking, she walked up and stood in front of Lian Feng.

How dare you look! Stop looking!! She was very enraged on the inside. It was bubbled up with a woman's intense need of possession.

At that moment, something unexpected occurred.

The seven women took a look at their direction, and one of them spoke up: "Big sis, out of all these men, I think this one is the best one."

Liu Qiao Yue nodded: "Red lips and white teeth. Very fragile looking. My cup of tea!"

"I'm just afraid this little body will not be able to handle all of us."

"Not to worry. Big sister's room has the godly oil!"

.....

As the seven women talked amongst themselves, Lin Shan started to feel more unease. It didn't sound like they were talking about Lian Feng. How come it sounded like they were talking about her instead?? Lin Shan suddenly realized: Oh my mother!!! These women have their eyes on me??

Before she could react, she heard Liu Qiao Yue: "We can talk about that stuff later. First, let's get him!" Then, she instantly flew towards her as a long thin piece of white silk came out of her sleeves like a water snake and wrapped around her body.

Lin Shan was petrified and about to scream for help, when Lian Feng swung his sabre. There was a flash of light, and the white silk was immediately torn apart. The cutting edge of the sabre was so powerful that it caused Liu Qiao Yue to take several steps back.

"Are you alright?" Lian Feng asked as he placed Lin Shan behind him.

"Hahaha. So it turns out this government official likes men as well! I guess I will need backup!" Liu Qiao Yue laughed devilishly as she suddenly signaled with her

hand; the rest of the white figures started flying towards Lian Feng and Lin Shan.

Currently, there were countless of white silk flying everywhere in the air. It was blocking everyone's sight. Lin Shan felt a strong impact on her arm. Next thing she knew, she had been pushed aside by Lian Feng. He was using the sabre as he sliced all the silk into pieces. Endless amount of thin silk was raining down on them.

"Impressive!" Liu Qiao Yue praised. "Sisters, I think we have met our match today. No need to be courteous. Attack!" Another wave of attack was about to strike Lian Feng.

Seeing Lian Feng being attacked, the Imperial guards didn't want to hold back any longer. They all raised their weapons as they decided to assist Lian Feng. However, a couple steps later, all of them went weak.

"There is something wrong with these flowers...."

Chapter 38

To my dear readers,

This chapter probably took me 5 hours to translate although it only takes me 5 minutes to read --. Oh my goodness. It was very difficult to translate because there were so many Chinese phrases that wouldn't make sense in English. I tried my best. It might sound a bit awkward though.

By the way, I've finally gotten paid for ads!! After seven months later, I received my first payment from WordAds (\$117.10). I worked very hard to get this amount. Hopefully, as time goes by, I will get paid sooner.

Promoted post: [Attention](#)

Chapter 38

Lin Shan was speechless as she quickly looked at Lian Feng. Fortunately, he was still able to focus on his style and movements. However, since it was one against seven, he seemed to be having a hard time.

Damn it! They're too much! Not only are they a team of seven picking on one, they are poisoning us. Even I'm not this cunning!

Lin Shan was raging as her eyes wandered around her surroundings.

She noticed a bucket of fertilizer that was supposedly used for the flowers at a corner.

On one side, Lian Feng was still fighting with the seven female thieves. It wasn't that he didn't have the ability to beat them, but they were truly too evil. Not only did they plant poisonous plants, they also hid many concealed weapons up their sleeves. It made it an impossible task for him to defeat them.

At that moment, Lian Feng heard Lin Shan yelling: "Get out of my way!"

His instincts immediately told him to leap out of the way. Next thing he knew, a bucket that reeked of manure splashed everywhere.

The sexual Black Moon Seven were now the smelly Black Moon Seven. The name will spread far and wide. From now on, that is what they would be known

as.

Lin Shan's action startled the Heavens and the Earth. The seven female thieves who initially thought they were undefeatable froze. Then, they released a cry that was more frightening than monsters; countless of birds were jolted and flew away.

As for the Imperial guards that lost their strength from the fragrance of the flowers, the smell of the feces was so disgusting that they couldn't help but vomit.

Surprisingly, after vomiting, they realized that they had regained their strength; their minds were no longer dizzy and all the poison had been dissolved.

In less than the time it took to burn an incense, the table had been turned. This was a historical moment. The most difficult gang from Black Dragon Mountain had thoroughly been uprooted by Lin Shan's contribution. They have been defeated.

Seeing this unravel in front of his eyes, the usual calm Lian Feng didn't know whether he should laugh or cry. He was impressed. He couldn't help but turn to look at the "manure hero" Lin Shan. However, he was faced with her frowning face. Lin Shan looked as if she wanted to cry.

"What's wrong?" Lian Feng went up to her.

"This is so disgusting! So smelly....." Although Lin Shan didn't splash the manure on herself, her hand still touched it slightly. It was so sickening that Lin Shan wanted to puke.

While she was fanning her hands in the air and scowling miserably, Lian Feng suddenly grabbed onto her wrist and took out a handkerchief from his breast area*. He lowered his head and gently wiped her hand. In addition, he was being very attentive; he made sure to get every spot and didn't look grossed out at all.

At that moment, Lin Shan was stunned. Her hands were covered with the Earth's dirtiest filth, yet in front of her, stood the world's gentlest man. When Lian Feng's fingers made contact with her palm, her heart felt like it was melting.

After Lian Feng finished wiping her hand, he didn't hesitate at all as he grabbed onto her other hand. By now, the white handkerchief had turned brown, but it

didn't bother him the slightest.

Instead, he began to wipe even more specifically. After he finished wiping Lin Shan's hands, he started wiping the dirty spots on her clothes. Lin Shan felt like a puppet as Lian Feng wiped away all the stains...

Lin Shan suddenly felt like the bucket of manure was worth it.

"Do you feel better?" Lian Feng spoke up.

Lin Shan couldn't get her words out. She foolishly nodded. It took her awhile before she uttered: "Umm... your handkerchief is ...dirty now..."

"Don't worry about it." Lian Feng replied as he folded the handkerchief neatly and placed it back where he took it from.

"Don't!" Lin Shan stopped him, "It's dirty...I'll give it back to you after I wash it!" Then, she snatched the handkerchief away from Lian Feng.

Lian Feng appeared to want to say something; his lips moved but no words came out. After a few moments, he stated: "Let's go. I'll take you somewhere to take a bath."

Bath?

Hearing this statement, Lin Shan's eyes shone. She totally forgot about being shy and chirped: "Really?? Don't lie to me! I want hot water and a big tub. I want a very very very big tub!" Lin Shan made an exaggerated gesture, as if she hadn't taken a bath in years.

But honestly, Lin Shan hasn't taken a good bath in a very long time. The Black Dragon Mountain was incomparable to the Palace. The conditions were extremely poor and there weren't any hotels or suitable accommodations around here. Hence, Lin Shan was curious as to where Lian Feng could find her hot water and a huge tub.

"Come." Lian Feng gestured.

Huh? Don't we need to get off the mountains to take a bath? Why is he leading me up the mountains? Lin Shan felt grim but she obediently caught up to him.

The two of them walked through the thick jungle of the mountains and took many twists and turns. After some time has passed, Lin Shan still didn't see any

hot water nor tub. She was tired and started to become impatient.

Lin Shan pulled on the corner of Lian Feng's garment: "Hey, how much longer is it? My legs feel like they're going to break."

"We have arrived." Lian Feng said as he pointed up ahead.

Lin Shan looked towards the direction Lian Feng was pointing to. All she could see was a faint smoke coming out from the middle of the jungle.

Something snapped in Lin Shan's mind. Could the hot water and tub that Lian Feng mentioned...be a hot spring?!?!

Holy shit! There's a hot spring here!!!

At that moment, Lin Shan felt like her blood was surging like the heat from the hot spring. She gripped Lian Feng's hand and ran towards the hot spring.

The Black Dragon Mountain was considered a volcanic belt. Within the mountains, there were many concealed hot springs. Although the space wasn't big, for someone like Lin Shan, it was a saviour for her soul. For someone who was used to living in the modern world, not bathing on a regular basis was a nightmare.

Actually, Lian Feng found out from his subordinates that Lin Shan had been looking for a place to bath days ago.. However, since he had been busy with work, he only had time to search for a place whenever he was walking up the mountain.

Fortunately, he found a place. Yet, he didn't realize Lin Shan's desire to bath was so strong that she started stripping in front of him the moment they arrived.

The steam from the hot spring was overbearing, and Lian Feng felt his cheeks heat up. He unnaturally tried to turn away.

Lin Shan was undressing at a super speed. She took off her outer garment and inner garment. She was about to go further when she abruptly realized that Lian Feng was still next to her. Lin Shan bashfully whimpered: "Umm.. how about you..."

"I'm going to wait outside and guard for you." Lian Feng bluntly replied. He didn't allow her to finish her sentence as he quickly rushed out without taking a

look back.

Poor Lin Shan was left alone to stare blankly. A few moments later, she mumbled in his direction: “I was going to ask you if you wanted to bathe together! Why are you so flustered? It’s not like you haven’t seen me naked before.....” She knew Lian Feng had changed her clothes while she was unconscious.

The temperature of the hot spring was very high, and within a few moments, Lin Shan’s face had turned bright red. All her muscles relaxed and her arteries and veins were flowing very smoothly. Lin Shan felt awesome.

At that moment, as the MC from the future, Lin Shan felt like she had to sing her “bath song” — “I love to take a bath! My mood is great! La la la la la!!!!”

In her opinion, the scientific law of the future is that: The female MC will sing a song from the future, and the male MC will hear it. It will shock the male MC and from then on, he will love the female MC even more...till death do us part!

When she thought about this, Lin Shan sang even louder and more cheerfully. Infinite amount of birds were startled.

As for Lian Feng, he was standing behind a rock. All he could think about was Lin Shan taking off her clothes. He recalled seeing her delicate white neck, being separated by the steamy smoke from the hot spring.

He couldn’t help but imagined the unlimited scene beyond the clothes....at that moment, he felt his body heat up. It seemed like the heat was heading to a specific area of his body. Lian Feng tightened his fists as he attempted to control himself.

All of a sudden, he heard Lin Shan’s out of tune voice. It sounded like ghosts wailing or wolves howling. Instantly, it was as if Lian Feng had taken a sedative; the lust he felt in his body was extinguished.

Wow, what an awful voice. She’s ruining my scenery!

Lin Shan was still singing. She sang so loudly that she was about to lose her voice. However, in her mind, this would be a classic scene in novels!

Perhaps my song isn’t intense enough? Not a problem. I have another one!

“Oh oh oh OHHHHHH... oh oh oh OHHHHHHHH!” The song from the World Cup! That must be intense enough!?

From the outside, the meditating Lian Feng’s mouth twitched.

He suddenly had an urge to become a monk.

From history until now, Lin Shan was probably the only person whose voice could cause a person to clear his heart and lose desire. She was truly one of a kind.

Just when Lian Feng felt like he was being tortured by Lin Shan’s voice, her voice unexpectedly stopped.

*The clothes from ancient times looked like this:



Therefore, people stuffed things around the breast area very often.

Chapter 39

To my dear readers,

Lin Shan is still naked, so don't be too upset about this chapter, okay? Hehe. There will be more upcoming..

Promoted post: [Your eyes show the strength of your soul](#)

Chapter 39

Lin Shan's voice was horrible and she was causing Lian Feng distress. However, Lian Feng didn't expect her to suddenly stop. He was curious and tried to listen more closely; yet he couldn't hear any activity.

Lian Feng was worried. Lin Shan was not the type to stay quiet. How could she suddenly be so quiet? Could she have gotten into an accident? He started to feel anxious and called her name.

There was no reply.

At that moment, his heart felt very unstable and he couldn't wait any longer as he rushed back to the hot spring.

It was a captivating sight. The dense steam from the hot spring was rising as it enveloped around the petite figure that was lying on a rock. Lin Shan was totally naked as her black hair spilled out like black ink on her fair tender shoulders.

Lin Shan's arm was motionless as she lied her upper body on the rock. It looked like she fell asleep.

Lian Feng felt a rush of heat from his body going straight into his brain; it was so intense that he could feel his cold mask turning warm.

Shouldn't she know she could faint from being in a hot spring for too long? How could she fall asleep? Lian Feng felt a bit hopeless. He clenched his teeth as he tried to subdue the warm flow that was running through his body. Lian Feng walked over to her.

Currently, Lin Shan was in such a deep sleep that the sky could collapse and she wouldn't even know. We cannot blame her though. The reason why she was

like this was because of the poisonous flowers from the Black Moon Gang.

Although Lin Shan didn't know martial arts, she did inhale quite a bit. At the time, symptoms didn't show. But the hot temperature from the hot spring had activated the poison.

Therefore, Lin Shan had fallen into a deep slumber. She was totally oblivious to her surroundings.

There was a saying that goes "Things appear more beautiful from a distance". It was very true. From behind the rock, Lian Feng felt Lin Shan was as alluring as a goddess. He almost lost his cool.

However, when he got closer, he noticed his goddess was snoring with her mouth half opened and drooling at the same time. Lian Feng didn't know whether he should laugh or cry.

How could there be a woman who didn't give a damn about her image? Yet, because Lin Shan was the way she was, it made her so adorable. She was full of surprises and energy.

Without knowing, her presence made Lian Feng's heart stir.

"Song Luo!" Lian Feng bent down as he called her.

Lin Shan didn't move. She continued sleeping as if nothing had happened.

"The Sun is about to set. If you don't wake up now, we can't leave the mountains." Lian Feng tried again.

Lin Shan didn't budge.

Finally, Lian Feng used his trump card: "If we don't leave the mountains, there will be no dinner."

Logically, this sentence should have woken Lin Shan up regardless of how deep her sleep was. But it was strange because it didn't work today. Lin Shan was sleeping too soundly, as if she would never wake up....

This thought flashed through Lian Feng's mind and he instantly realized something was wrong. He reached out his hand as he nudged Lin Shan. He kept calling her name but still had no response.

Then, he checked her pulse.

Oh my goodness! Lian Feng was afraid. He was now aware that Lin Shan wasn't simply snoozing.

Since it was a critical moment, Lian Feng wasn't able to take too many things in consideration. With two hands, he effortlessly pulled Lin Shan out of the hot spring.

This huge commotion still did not wake Lin Shan. Her wet body was soft and weak. The moment she was ashore, her body tumbled into Lian Feng's arms.

Lin Shan's soft body was red from the steam. She looked like a very delicious meal. However, Lian Feng didn't have the mood to think of that stuff right now. He draped Lin Shan's clothes on her back as he gathered all his internal energy in the hollow of his palms. He had his palms on her back as he started to transfer energy to her.

This was an extremely challenging mental process. A few seconds could feel like forever when you were watching the woman you love remain unconscious.

After the internal energy had circulated once around Lin Shan's body, there was finally some movement. Lin Shan's finger slightly moved and she started mumbling something.

Lian Feng immediately stopped his transfer and embraced Lin Shan. He kept yelling her name: "Song Luo! Song Luo!"

In a daze, Lin Shan heard someone calling Song Luo. It sounded like Lian Feng and she was unhappy. Her eyes were still shut as she muttered: "What Song Luo..? My surname is Lin. My name is Lin Shan. The Lin from Lin Shan.. the Shan from Lin Shan....."

Lin Shan wasn't making any sense, and Lian Feng panicked. He continued shouting: "Song Luo! Wake up. Stop sleeping!! Song Luo!!"

"I already said I'm not Song Luo. I'm Lin Shan. Lin.... I'm too tired. I'm going to sleep a bit more....."

Since Lin Shan hadn't regained consciousness, Lian Feng was freaking out. At that moment, he seemed to realize something and decided to try calling her: "Lin

Shan....”

His voice wasn't loud, but Lin Shan froze. She had stopped mumbling.

“Shan Shan.” Lian Feng repeated.

Who? Who's calling her name? Since she had arrived here, she had never heard her name. It sounded a bit strange but exceptionally familiar. Shan Shan was what her parents called her when she was a child. Lin Shan started to reminisce.

“Dad...mom....” Lin Shan cried out. She finally opened her eyes, “Dad! Mom!!! Dad...” Lin Shan looked around her surroundings and knew that it wasn't her mom and dad. She was just dreaming.

At that moment, Lin Shan was so sad. She looked up at Lian Feng and the rims of her eyes were red.

Lian Feng was relieved that Lin Shan had woken up, but seeing her tears fall shocked him. He had never seen a woman cry before.

“Shan Shan, what's wrong?” He asked.

Lin Shan didn't reply and sobbed harder. Now, her snots and tears were both running; it was not helping her image.

“Don't cry...” Lian Feng had never comforted a woman before. Seeing how grief stricken Lin Shan was, he also felt upset. Without thinking, he hugged her tighter.

The warm body heat caused Lin Shan to be even more shameless. She started to wail as she tightly grabbed onto Lian Feng's clothes. It was as if she was afraid to lose the warmth.

Just like that, Lin Shan continued to cry. After she tired herself out, she lied in Lian Feng's arms and gently quivered.

Since Lin Shan stopped crying, Lian Feng felt better. He slightly hesitated, but then reached out and stroked her hair. As he was fixing her hair...Lin Shan suddenly lifted her head up and looked at him with her puffy eyes; her nose was red from crying and her face had tear stains all over it.

Lin Shan whispered: “I'm not wearing any clothes...”

Lian Feng turned bright red. He quickly wrapped her clothes around her as he stuttered: “I-I didn’t do this on purpose.....”

“Shh!” Lin Shan pressed her finger on his lips. When that finger touched his lips, Lian Feng’s hormones were raging again. Before he could react, Lin Shan had already reached out her other hand to unmask him.

“Don’t!” Like an innate reflex, Lian Feng forcefully grabbed onto Lin Shan’s hand. Lin Shan felt pain but she didn’t let go. Instead, she stared at Lian Feng with her puppy like eyes and Lian Feng melted.

Subconsciously, Lian Feng released her hand and Lin Shan removed his mask.

It was like a blind person seeing light for the first time. No one had ever seen his face while he was conscious. Lian Feng didn’t know what type of expression he should have on. All he did was stare into Lin Shan’s eyes.

The steam from the hot spring made the view kind of blurry. Lin Shan hazily looked at Lian Feng, the person who had the same face as Du Hao. Yet, it was a totally different feeling.

True, their faces looked exactly the same; even the outer corner of the eyes and the tip of the eyebrows looked identical. However, Lian Feng gave her a different feeling. His eyes were kinder and it made her feel at ease. Lin Shan wanted to continue staring into those eye forever.. forever and ever.... Lin Shan reached out and touched his face.

Lian Feng’s face would have been forever hidden by the mask...but now, the woman he loves was slowly touching it.

Her fingers were soft as she lightly traced his facial features. It was an extraordinary feeling.

Lian Feng felt an indescribable urge and wanted to kiss her very badly. The thought grew and he couldn’t suppress it any longer. He bent down and lightly kissed her on the lips.

This was their second kiss together. Just like before, he lacked experience.

Lin Shan was caught off guard but she quickly adjusted to him. Like a little kitten, she started licking. This reaction was causing Lian Feng to lose control. He

tightened his embrace and his hand held on her nape as he gently deepened the kiss.

It was a very long kiss. Although it wasn't as intense as their first kiss, Lin Shan felt like she was sinking deeper in this one. Like a vacuum cleaner, she felt like she was being sucked in. She was clearly no longer in the hot spring, yet she felt like she was heating up even more.

The moment the kiss ended, she nearly went limp. She tightly held onto Lian Feng's clothes as she caught her breath.

"Do you want to know the story behind this?" Lian Feng had his arms around Lin Shan as he took the mask from her. He looked deep in thought as he rubbed the surface of the silver mask.

"Yes...." Lin Shan nodded and greedily rubbed against Lian Feng.

Chapter 40

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Mai Xiong** for his/her generous donation to me. Each chapter takes a lot of effort and brain power, so any amount is appreciated!! Thank you so much for your support and comments, Mai Xiong!! ♥

Originally, I was going to post this in the morning, but I finished it for you guys (it's 3am right now). I've reread and edited it a few times but there might still be errors because my brain can't focus right now.

Ahahaah you guys are probably going to be like =_=" Ahahahaahaha

Promoted post: [If you tame me..](#)

Chapter 40

It was a truly ridiculous and sad story.

The current Emperor married late. He didn't marry Empress Yao until he ascended the throne at the age of twenty three. Not long after their marriage, Empress Yao gave birth to a male baby. The Emperor was delighted and decided to name him Hao.

The word "Hao" meant broad or expansive; meaning the Emperor wanted his son to have a strong name.

Immediately, the Emperor issued an Imperial edict and announced to the world that Du Hao was the Crown Prince. Criminals were given general pardon, and there was an universal celebration.

While the celebration was going on, the midwife unexpectedly discovered another child within the Empress's womb.

In regards to the Royal family, having twins was a very bad omen. Usually, if an Imperial concubine gave birth to twins, one of them would be drown to death in order to guarantee the longevity of the other child.

Since the Empress had given birth to twins, the midwife was conflicted. She thought about it and decided she must report this to someone of higher

authority.

At this moment, the weak Empress tightly grabbed onto the midwife's hand, and shook her head.

Empress Yao was the daughter of the founder state General, Yao Jian. Due to her background, she was very aware that there was no such thing as twins in the Palace. This child should have never been born, and his birth will definitely cause an endless amount of trouble for his brother in the near future.

Of course, Empress Yao didn't want to see her two children slaughtering each other; yet, she didn't want to personally kill one of them either. After thinking about it, the weak Empress made a decision. She was going to send the child out of the Palace before anyone could find out the truth.

The Empress kept everything concealed and secretly contacted the sworn brother of her grandfather. His name was Lian Kuang and he was the owner of a compelling blade. However, he was no longer active in the martial arts world.

The Empress entrusted her child to Lian Kuang and pleaded that he take the child away as far as possible. Ideally, he would never step into the Palace. In addition, she sent a mask as well; hoping that no one would see his face after he turns the age of sixteen.

Lian Kuang had lived in solitude all his life. He had no children or family of his own. When he received the request from the Empress, he ran off with the infant to live in seclusion deep in the mountains.

Lian Kuang decided to name the child Lian Feng. The name "Feng" meant wind; Lian Kuang wanted Lian Feng to live freely like the wind.

Time passed and Lian Kuang taught Lian Feng how to live a life of integrity. In fact, Lian Kuang passed on all the knowledge and skills he possessed.

This plan was perfect as not one drop of water had been leaked; even Du Hao had no idea that he had a younger brother who looked exactly like him.

However, by the time Lian Feng turned sixteen, Lian Kuang was nearly a hundred years old. He knew he was dying when he personally placed the mask on Lian Feng's face.

Right after Lian Kuang warned Lian Feng to never take off the mask, he died. Poor Lian Feng was devastated by the death of his master and naturally obeyed his words. From then on, Lian Feng never took off the mask.

Fast forward, Lian Feng was now nineteen, he was practicing his blade within the mountains when he suddenly heard violent sounds nearby. He lifted his blade and took a look and saw that a bunch of people had surrounded two middle aged men. The two men appeared to be losing and as a righteous person, Lian Feng stepped in and saved the two using his powerful blade.

At the time, he had no idea that one of the two men was the current Emperor, Du Yi, in disguise. Du Yi was the father that he had never seen before.

Since Du Yi was saved by Lian Feng, he was extremely grateful to him. When he got back to the Capital, he ordered Lian Feng to come to the Palace and bestowed him the title of the highest Imperial bodyguard.

Lian Feng was given the golden sabre and allowed to exit and enter the Palace whenever he wished. He also had the authority to act first and report later.

This type of honour could only be dreamt of by an ordinary person. Soon, Lian Feng's name had been spread throughout the Palace.

"Have you heard? This Imperial bodyguard has a mask on his face. No one has seen his true identity!" When the Empress heard this from one of her female servants, she knew it was God's will.

The Empress instantly went to find Lian Feng because she didn't want Lian Feng to freak out when he saw that the Crown Prince looked exactly like him. She told Lian Feng everything and apologized for being selfish. She also apologized on Du Hao's behalf and said that if he wanted to seize the throne, she would not stop him.

However, Lian Feng had no desire to be the next Emperor. He had grown up deep in the mountains, and Lian Kuang had taught him not to care about fame or fortune. After his master's death, what Lian Feng wanted was not the throne, but to be able to see his family living well.

Lian Feng chose to remain silent, which the Empress didn't expect. So although she knew Lian Feng's existence was a threat to Du Hao, there was nothing she

could do. She owed Lian Feng way too much.

For the past nineteen years, the Empress had been tortured by nightmares. Her guilty conscience had caused her to age prematurely and she would spend the entire day in the prayer room.

Now that the child had returned, how could she stop him from staying with the family?

Therefore, the Empress silently allowed Lian Feng's existence.

Honestly, Lin Shan knew that there was some type of messed up relationship between Lian Feng and Du Hao. But she didn't expect the connection to be this ridiculous. She was having trouble accepting the story.

Are you kidding me? Both of them are from the same stomach. Why is it that one of them can be doted on by his parents, live a high end life, and be arrogant; while the other one has to live in the secluded mountains with his master, forever alone? Who says that twins are a bad omen? What the f***! This stupid superstition is ruining lives!

At that moment, Lin Shan suddenly felt her blood surge. Her motherly instinct kicked in and she declared: "Don't worry! I'm here now. Anyone who picks on you, I'll bite them to death!" Lin Shan slapped her breasts.

Lian Feng was speechless. When he saw where Lin Shan's white hand was slapping, the heat that just went down immediately shot right up. His face went scarlet.

Lin Shan was too used to seeing Lian Feng with his mask on, and didn't realized his abnormal expression. She was confused as to why he wasn't responding and his averting glances. What's going on? Therefore, she innocently jabbed in the Lian Feng chest: "Hey. I'm talking to you, why don't you have a reaction?"

The person holding her shivered and became more stiff.

"Hey, what's wrong with you? Hello..." Seeing how her finger wasn't effective, she placed two hands on his shoulders and started shaking.

She shook once; there was no response.

She shook twice; there was still no response.

By the third time, Lian Feng was about to speak but Lin Shan's face had froze. Umm... the thing beneath her....could it be....

The slow innocent Lin Shan finally realized that Lian Feng was having an erection. Her face turned as red as a cooked shrimp.

"Umm.. I...I'm going to put on some clothes first...." She clumsily tried to climb out of Lian Feng's embrace. However, she was so nervous that she became even clumsier.

Now, it just looked like a tiny kitten trying to dig its way out. Before she could get up, the clothes that was covering her back slipped down even more. Now, her neck and back were both exposed underneath the hazy moon light.

Lian Feng was originally using a huge amount of willpower to control himself. However, this woman unknowingly kept touching him and squirming around. In addition, the closer this soft sweet smelling body pressed against him, the more he was losing it.

Currently, he was at his tipping point. He deeply growled: "Don't move!"

His low voice surprised Lin Shan and the clothes that was covering her slipped all the way down.

Just a moment ago, it was so noisy. But now, everything was silent. They make eye contact and Lin Shan felt uneasy. Very uneasy. Extremely uneasy! She quickly tried to cover her breasts but it was too late.

A huge force pounced on her and she couldn't move at all. Her naked back coincidentally lied on top of her clothes. A strong masculine scent surrounded her.

Lian Feng was like a ferocious beast that was waiting in the dark after powering up. He suddenly pounced on her, and Lin Shan didn't know what to feel at the moment. She was a mixture of everything; scared, hopeful, and restless. Her body also seemed to be gathering energy; from her brain to her breasts, from her breasts to her stomach, lastly —

Gu lu lu....

This perfect timing, atmosphere, and setting was completely destroyed by a sound that sounded like thunder.

“Umm... ” Lin Shan blushed as she pointed: “I think I’m hungry....”

Lian Feng: “.....”

Lin Shan continued pointing with her finger: “I haven’t eaten since the morning... I’m afraid I won’t have enough strength...”

Lian Feng: “.....”

“If it’s very urgent, I’ll help you settle it first....”

Poor Lian Feng crumbled. He stood up without an expression. He turned around and stated: “Put your clothes on properly. I will bring you down the mountain.”

Lin Shan felt wronged. She felt so wronged.

My empty stomach is reacting naturally, you can’t blame me, ok? It’s not like I wanted my stomach to growl during a crucial moment. If you want to blame someone, blame the head cook for the soldiers. He is such a bad cook that he caused me to lose my appetite!

Lin Shan was grumbling on the inside as she hurried behind Lian Feng. Lian Feng was walking at a very fast pace and wouldn’t say a word. Clearly, he was in a terrible mood.

Hey! You’re hungry but I’m hungry too! You can’t expect me to help you settle your bodily needs at my expense! Haven’t you heard the saying, “One cannot function properly on an empty stomach?” People get panicky after one meal. I haven’t eaten two meals, and you want me to go through intense physical exercise? I could die!

Chapter 41

To my dear readers,

Sorry for the delay. I'm not feeling too well again, so I have to take my time. Plus, the Chinese sentence structure is giving me a headache. Please forgive me if some of my sentences sound backwards at times.

The novel is going to start getting more serious, but it's still good. Despite Lin Shan's wish, she's going to end up back in the Palace in a few chapters (stay tuned). Du Hao and Lin Shan are going to have some intimate scenes as well. & what's going to happen with Du Ming Yue??

Promoted post: [No sense of urgency...](#)

Chapter 41

Lin Shan was silently yelling on the inside, but she didn't dare to shout at Lian Feng. Although Lian Feng and Du Hao had different temperaments, they were still twins. When they were angry, both of them possessed an aura where no one dared to get near.

What's there to be done? Apparently, when a man's erection gets interrupted, his body could be in a disarray...if Lian Feng isn't careful, perhaps he could practice the "Sunflower treasury*" without castrating!

Thinking of this, Lin Shan became more and more afraid of talking to Lian Feng. All she did was quicken her steps in order to catch up with him.

As for Lian Feng, he was indeed sexually frustrated. Any healthy man in his place would be upset if he had to stop midway. Also, Lian Feng was worried if he got near her again, he wouldn't be able to control himself. Therefore, he avoided any contact with Lin Shan and kept walking ahead.

After awhile, Lian Feng felt his logic slowly returning back to his body. Thus, he decided to slow down to wait for Lin Shan.

However, since Lian Feng was so much taller and bigger than Lin Shan, she was pretty much running and hopping in order to keep up with him. Lin Shan didn't expect Lian Feng to suddenly stop like an emergency brake, and she crashed

straight into him.

Nothing good can result from a tiny woman bumping into a strong man who had practiced martial arts for twenty years. Lin Shan felt as if she had crashed into a wall; her world spun and she saw stars.

It took her a few seconds to regain control of her movements, then she realized she has sprained her ankle.

Lian Feng was speechless. This girl must have been reincarnated from a troublesome soul; he only took his eyes off her for a moment, and she ended up in messy situations.

However, although he was frustrated at her, his heart couldn't help but soften when he saw her injured expression on the ground. Lian Feng crouched down to help her up.

Lin Shan had sprained her ankle. She was hurting so much, as if she had a cracked tooth inside her mouth. Thinking how Lian Feng was ignoring her previously, she made a "humph" sound and flung her head. She ignored Lian Feng's offer to help her up.

Lian Feng had never been in a situation like this before. He didn't know what to do. Therefore, he continued holding his hand out as he watched her attentively.

Lin Shan was planning on throwing a fit to get back some "face", but instead of getting an apology from Lian Feng, he was staring fixedly at her.

In no time, Lin Shan felt her guilty conscience kick in.

One of them was crouching down and the other was sitting down. It was like a staring contest.

At the end, Lin Shan admitted defeat and reached out her hand awkwardly. The moment she reached out her hand, Lian Feng grasped it and she felt a surge of strength pulling her up from the ground.

Lin Shan's legs were unsteady, and she pressed against Lian Feng. The two of them froze as they recalled the incident from the hot spring. It was a bit unsettling.

"Can you walk?" Lian Feng broke the silence.

Lin Shan nodded. However, the moment her ankle touched the ground, her brows wrinkled. She howled: “Pain, pain, pain....!!!!”

“Let me take a look.” Lian Feng crouched again and took off Lin Shan’s shoe as he used his hand to firmly press her ankle.

“Ai ya!” Lin Shan shrieked as if she was a pig being slaughtered. This was revenge! Totally revenge! She was in so much pain that tears were coming out.

“It’s not broken, just sprained.” Lian Feng stated as he helped her put her shoe back on. Due to the mountainous road, the shoe was covered in mud. However, Lian Feng didn’t mind at all.

Lian Feng patiently helped Lin Shan fix her sock and shoe. When his hand held onto her ankle, Lin Shan felt a warm feeling stirring in her heart. Subconsciously, she became silent.

Deep down, Lin Shan knew she was being unreasonable. However, she felt wronged and wanted to get back some face. But clearly, that type of behaviour does not work on Lian Feng. Instead, it made her look spoiled. She felt a twinge of guilt and finally stopped making a fuss.

Seeing how she seemed calm now, Lian Feng felt relived. He turned around with his back facing her, he gently said: “Get on. I’ll carry you down.”

Lin Shan was obedient now. She didn’t hesitate at all as she swiftly climbed onto Lian Feng’s back. Her arms were around his neck for support, and her body instantly went from cold to warm. She felt at ease, and she couldn’t help but want to get closer.

Lian Feng didn’t expect Lin Shan to get on his back so quickly. At that moment, he felt trusted. It was an indescribable feeling; when the woman you love trusts you, carrying her was like being responsible for her life. He never wanted to let go....

Lin Shan suddenly felt the atmosphere change. Although they weren’t saying anything, it seemed like there were a lot waiting to be said. Yet, nothing came out when they opened their mouths.

Therefore, Lin Shan decided to remain silent and just held on tighter. The heat from Lian Feng’s body was very comforting.

It didn't seem like a bad option if they kept on walking like this...

This thought flashed through Lin Shan's mind and she suddenly forgot about the Palace, her identity, Lian Feng's past, and everything else. She wanted to do something very impulsive.

"Lian Feng." Her voice was light and soft, very different from her usual voice.

"What is it?" He asked.

"If... I'm saying if..." She paused. "If we don't return to the Palace...what do you think?"

Her voice was light, but it was enough to make Lian Feng freeze.

The night was dark, and the moon was hanging from the sky. The mountainous wind blew across the black forest and the sound of rustling leaves could be heard.

The stillness of the night was very evident, but Lin Shan's heart couldn't remain still. It was pounding very loudly. She longed to hear a particular answer from Lian Feng.

But she didn't get a reply.

At that moment, Lin Shan didn't know what to feel. She was kind of angry and disappointed at the same time. Her fingers were holding onto Lian Feng so tightly that her joints were turning white. Still, no words were spoken.

The silence dragged on. Lian Feng finally spoke up after a very long time: "You're not Song Luo, am I correct?"

This abrupt question caught Lin Shan off guard. She could have denied it, but she didn't.

"What's your real name?" Lian Feng asked.

"Lin Shan...." She murmured in a low tone.

"Lin Shan...." Lian Feng repeated her name. Then he said to himself: "Sounds better than Song Luo..."

Lin Shan felt powerless for the first time. Initially, she was upset at Lian Feng for not giving her a straight answer. But now, she realized that he didn't give her

a reply because he knew she was lying to him. He didn't know her past, he didn't know her life, he didn't even know her real name.

Shouldn't a relationship be based on trust? Yet, she hid so much from him.

"Actually, I...." She suddenly wanted to explain everything.

"The Palace has sent out many secret agents to look for you." Lian Feng cuts her off.

What? Lin Shan was stunned. The words that she wanted to say were stuck in her throat.

"Have you ever thought about what would happen if they found you, and found out that you are actually not Song Luo? In fact, not even a man? Have you ever thought about the consequences?"

"I...." Lin Shan didn't know what to say. Of course she had thought about it before, "I thought as long as I leave, it would be..."

"...it would be okay? You're too naive. You honestly think the Emperor is a fool? It is not easy for him to get to his position today. Plus, the secret agents went through massive amounts of training. If they want to find a person, they will be able to find the person."

Lin Shan was stupefied.

They could find me no matter what? Does this mean I can never leave the Palace? Does this mean I have to hide my true identity forever? Does this mean I have to pretend to be someone else for the rest of my life?

"No...." Lin Shan shook her head as she whimpered, "It shouldn't be like this. I don't want this to continue... I want to be myself.. I...."

"Of course you want to be yourself!" Lian Feng suddenly puts her down, as he quickly turned around to steady Lin Shan.

Lin Shan's eyes were unfocused and she looked lost.

"The only way Lin Shan can live, is if Song Luo dies." said Lian Feng.

*For the "Sunflower Treasury", apparently it's a fictional martial arts

instructional book that can made a person stronger. However, the user must first castrate himself beforehand, or he could turn crazy!? (something like that). In the dramas I have watched previously, the men all becomes very feminine. Sorry for the confusing description. I'm not too knowledgeable about this.

Chapter 42

To my dear readers,

I've decided to teach you guys Chinese from now on. (lol). This is the first character I want to teach: 女. 女 means female. This is a very important word in case you need to use the toilet. Go write it down five times now so it'll stick in your mind. 女女女女女.

人 means person/people. So 女人 means woman. Now, you know how to write woman in Chinese. Write it five times so you will remember. 女人 女人 女人 女人 女人 (Chinese is almost all memorization, so practice makes perfect!!!!)

This is my promoted post: [Persistence](#) (This is my very first blog post)

Hehe, free translations + promoted post + free Chinese lessons. What a great deal? How about \$1 of donation?? ??? (I know, I'm shameless like Lin Shan. lol)

Chapter 42

There is a saying that goes, "When you are placed in a field of danger, you will fight to live." Lin Shan never thought she would ever be in this type of situation.

What Lian Feng said was true. In order for her to live freely, the best solution was to get rid of Song Luo once and for all. But the question was: How is it possible to trick others into thinking that Song Luo has died?

Just as the two of them were at wits' end, Lin Shan thought of a person.

If there was one person that could help them, it would be Song Luo's older brother, Lin Feng.

Song Lin Feng's identity was not merely Song Residence's eldest son. He was also the son in law of Yang Sui, one of the greatest general of this dynasty.

One of Yang Sui's biggest regrets was that he didn't have a son. Fortunately, his daughter Yang Bi Yuan found a good man.

Song Lin Feng was righteous and versatile. Yang Sui was extremely pleased with him and treated Lin Feng as if he were his son. He had assigned tens of thousands of troops under Lin Feng.

As long as Lin Feng was willing to help, making Song Luo disappear would be a much easier task.

In order for Lin Shan to resume her female identity as soon as possible, the two of them quickly returned back to soldier station. Once Lin Shan had settled down, Lian Feng headed back to the Capital in the middle of the night to find Lin Feng.

Currently, Song Lin Feng was worrying over his sister's disappearance.

Thinking back, everyone was panicking when the Emperor ordered Lin Shan to marry the Princess. At the time, he was away on a business trip and couldn't make it back to deal with the emergency.

Fortunately, his sister was sharp and somewhat lucky; she actually managed to live in the Palace for a couple of months without exposing herself.

However, ultimately, fire cannot be wrapped with paper. Eventually, Lin Shan will be exposed. Therefore, Lin Feng had secret plans to bring Lin Shan out of the Palace; but he never expected Lin Shan to be kidnapped during this crucial moment.

Now, not only was he worried about her safety, he was even more concerned that her cover had been blown.

The secret agents from the Palace were very well informed. If they were to discover something along the process of locating her, the consequences would be inconceivable. In order to minimize the chances of that happening, Lin Feng assembled some troops using locating Song Luo as the excuse. In reality, he was hoping to find Lin Shan before the secret agents does.

By now, nearly a month had gone by and his people have practically flipped the Capital upside down. Yet, there were still no news of Song Luo. His parents were ill from excessive worrying, and there were also no definite results from the Palace. Lin Feng was so desperate that he was on the verge of going to a fortune teller.

Just as it seemed like he had to resort to a fortune teller, his saviour arrived. Lin Feng immediately recognized the dagger that Lian Feng held in his hands. The

dagger was something his sister had stolen the night she was injured.

Looks like that punk didn't get eaten by wolves. Lin Feng sighed a breath of relief. However, his guard was still up.

"What is Lian Superior trying to say? I'm kind of confused." Lin Feng pretended to be foolish.

Seeing Song Lin Feng's reaction, Lian Feng wasn't worried: "I can understand Song brother's doubt. Allow me to show you something." Then, he took out a letter.

The moment Song Lin Feng read the letter, his face was stiff. On the letter, it looked as if a crab had written on it; the words were all slanted and crooked. "Big brother. If you're going to watch me die, then I'm going to tell sister in law that the make-up you bought her from Jiang Nan was actually the make-up I told Xiao Lu to buy from a street corner!" Beside the letter, was a very ugly drawing of a tortoise.

"What do you think? This is her own handwriting." Lian Feng asked.

Song Lin Feng's mouth twitched: "...umm.. next time, tell her to draw better."

"Actually, that was her third attempt...."

The two men looked at each other and sighed in unison.

While Lian Feng and Lin Feng were coming up with a plan, Lin Shan was freaking out at the soldier station.

She knew Lian Feng had gone to find her brother for help. But it had been two days and she hadn't heard any news. Did he encounter some difficulties? Or perhaps, something bad??

Regardless of the era you're from, it always feels long if you're the person waiting. Plus, her ankle was injured. It was inconvenient for her to leave her tent. Thus, waiting was becoming more and more difficult to bear.

So, Lin Shan took a bunch of paper and started drawing tortoises in her tent... from morning until night. The newly deputy general Yang Xin was shocked and scared.

Ai ya! Could Lian Superior's lover be a witch? Why was she drawing so many charms/symbols? Could the camp be haunted? Yang Xin was deathly afraid of ghosts and demons. Thus, he ordered the soldiers to light up many bonfires around the station. The dark campsite was now as bright as the day.

Drawing tortoises actually helped Lin Shan calm down. She hung her writing brush and climbed into bed.

He'll probably be back after I wake up tomorrow, Lin Shan thought groggily. As she fell into a deep sleep, she had a dream.

In her dream, she was brought back to the hot spring incident. It was about to get hot and steamy when suddenly, Lian Feng's face changed. He picked her up and threw her into the spring.

The sound of an object being thrown into the water could be heard, and Lin Shan was choking and coughing. She was surrounded by water, and it was very hot water, as if she was being burned...

Finally, she couldn't help it anymore and she yelled, "Ah!"

Lin Shan sat up from the bed and the moment she opened her eyes, she saw flames shooting through the sky. There were all types of noises coming through her ears, and one of it was a person screaming at the top of his lungs: "Oh no! Everything has caught on fire!"

Poor Yang Xin. He wanted many bonfires because he thought it would strengthen his courage. He didn't realize that the mountainous wind would be so strong. The fire caught onto one tent and quickly spread onto the others. In less than the time it took to burn an incense, all the tents have caught on fire.

Lin Shan originally thought she was dreaming. Now, she realized the heat wasn't coming from the hot spring, but a real fire! She had never encountered something like this before, she was bewildered.

Lin Shan tried to hurried out of the tent with her sprained ankle, but the moment she lifted open the cloth, the fire violently surged up. The tent couldn't handle it and started collapsing on her.

She managed to get out, but due to her injured ankle, she fell down.

The tent next to hers collapsed onto the tent she just ran out from. She was now surrounded by fire and she couldn't move an inch. The air was getting thinner, and smoke kept getting into her throat; causing her to cough nonstop.

Right now, the tongue of the fire danced around her and the sound of death was approaching closer. Lin Shan was gradually losing consciousness.

"Lian Feng.... where are you? Lian Feng....." She continuously cried out his name. She was not going to be able to hold on for much longer.

Right before Lin Shan's eyes closed, she saw a figure coming out from the fire. Was it Lian Feng? Was he here to save her?

Then, she totally lost consciousness.

Chapter 43

To my dear readers,

I like this chapter quite a lot. Lin Shan is so cute! Anyhow, I'm going to start promoting my post at the end of the chapter. I wonder if it will make a difference..

The word that I'm teaching you guys today is "male". 男. This is an important word. Write it 5 times to remember. 男男男男男. It has the 田 (field) on top, and 力 (strength) at the bottom.

Remember how I taught you how to write woman in the previous chapter? 女人? Well, a man is a 男人! Write it 5 times. 男人 男人 男人 男人 男人 Now, you know how to write woman and man!!

Chapter 43

Seeing Du Hao, Lin Shan was momentarily stunned. He looked like Lian Feng, but the icy glares brought her back to reality.

That person was Du Hao!

The Imperial physician didn't expect the Crown Prince's sudden arrival and hastily kneeled down to greet him.

"Rise." Du Hao waved his hand. He came by himself and he wasn't formally dressed, but it did not diminish his dominating aura at all. Only one glance was enough to frighten the Imperial physician half to death.

"How is Prince Consort's injuries?" He questioned.

"To report to your Highness, Prince Consort has already woken up. However, due to her injuries, she cannot speak at the moment. It will take a few days for her to get better."

"Cannot speak?" Du Hao arched his brows as he gazed at Lin Shan.

Lin Shan immediately pretended to be asleep, as she heard the cold voice coming through her ears: "I guess that's not a bad thing. It's better than avoiding all my questions."

Lin Shan instantly felt her whole body drenched in cold sweat. Her hands tightly clasped the blanket as she anxiously plotted her next move.

Soon after, Du Hao said to the Imperial physician: “There’s no more need for you to be here. Leave.”

“Your servant will do as you bid!” The Imperial physician looked relieved as he quickly grabbed his medicine box. He looked as if he was fleeing from a turmoil. Before he left, he didn’t forget to give Lin Shan a “best of luck to you” look.

Now that the Imperial physician was gone, only Du Hao and the pretend sleeper, Lin Shan, remained.

This must be a dream. I just have to wake up and everything will be okay.... Lin Shan tried comforting herself in her heart. However, since she was so nervous, her two hands were shaking subconsciously as she held onto the blanket very tightly.

Time slowly ticked by, and Lin Shan’s palms were starting to sweat. She felt like she was a bunny that had its eyes closed -a bunny that was waiting for death.

She clearly knew there was a tiger crouching right next to her. He was about to strike at any moment. She was waiting for the final blow. Yet, the wait was tortuous.

Can’t you just finish me off quickly? Just as Lin Shan was about to snap, she realized Du Hao had sat down next to her. Then, before she knew it, she felt a finger stroking her face.

Du Hao had been through many wars, thus the texture of his skin was much rougher than his spoiled siblings from the Palace.

When his finger touched Lin Shan’s face, it felt ticklish.

What the heck is he doing? Lin Shan was confused. Doesn’t Du Hao like men? How come he’s trying to eat my tofu*....wait a second! How can I be so passive and allow him to eat my tofu? The slow Lin Shan decided to wake up and opened her eyes.

The moment she opened her eyes, her eyes met Du Hao’s. Du Hao’s glance was much rougher than his gentle finger. With one look, Lin Shan already felt uneasy.

She opened her mouth, but couldn't speak.

After pondering for a moment, Lin Shan reached out her hand to take Du Hao's hand off her face.

But the moment she took her hand out, he gripped her wrist. Although Du Hao wasn't using a lot of strength, it was enough for her wrist to turn red. Lin Shan subconsciously wrinkled her brows.

"What, are you scared?" Du Hao sneered as he faced her with a cold expression. He roughly pressed: "The Song Family's daughter is even brave enough to marry a Princess. I didn't think she would be afraid of anything."

As expected! I've been exposed! Lin Shan's mind was now in a state of chaos. There was a voice that continuously repeated itself: "It's over. It's over. It's over...."

But being the unbeatable cockroach that she was, Lin Shan was actually more calm now that she had been provoked.

Since Du Hao has already confirmed I am a woman in disguise, why hasn't he reported it to the Emperor? Instead, he came here alone to talk to me. Clearly, he has a hidden motive. I wonder what type of motive would stop him from reporting me?

Regardless of his motive, based on his personality, as long as he hasn't gotten what he wants, he isn't going to kill me. If that's the case, the best thing to do is to stall for time and try to reach Lian Feng.

Thinking of this, Lin Shan decided to take a gamble.

Seeing how Lin Shan's expression went from fear to calm briefly astonished Du Hao. He darkened his expression and sternly asked: "Song Luo. Do you know what crimes you have committed?"

Don't be nervous! He's trying to scare you. He's trying to scare you! Lin Shan told herself. She calmly pointed at her mouth, indicating she couldn't speak as she shook her head.

"Pretending to be dumb, now?" Du Hao arched his brows higher as he tightened his grip and pulled her closer.

From a closer view, her eyebrows were clearly dainty. She didn't have the slightly masculinity on her. How the hell did she get away with this? Du Hao couldn't believe he had actually questioned his sexual preference at one point. He could feel his anger boiling from within.

Du Hao's glare actually looked even more frightening now. Lin Shan was flipping out on the inside. This was a dangerous situation! Aside from pretending to be dumb, with her IQ, she couldn't think of any other solution.

Therefore, she gritted her teeth and continued to be an innocent little bunny. She gave her best effort at pretending to be pitiful in front of the big bad wolf.

Logically, Lin Shan's move would have been useless if it was directed towards most people. However, she actually used it on the right target. The angry Du Hao immediately froze.

It's her! I can't be wrong. The maiden that was once constantly on his mind had appeared again. She had the same eyes....even her pout was the same. If she was really the same person, it would be the best excuse for his unexpected behaviour.

But, how could it be her? The maiden in his mind was elegant and refined. She looked like a goddess and every frown and smile accentuated her beauty. Song Luo was nothing like this person. This woman in front of him openly lacked manners. In addition, her mind was filled with ridiculous ideas; not to mention, her eyes lit up whenever she saw money.

Yet, despite knowing Song Luo's true self, Du Hao still couldn't stop himself from falling for her. Deep down, he even had a wicked desire to seize the opportunity to make Lin Shan his woman. Oh, what should he do?

Lin Shan could see Du Hao's expression sinking into misery. She thought her plan had failed. Now, she was plotting whether she should attempt to seduce him instead. But unexpectedly, Du Hao released her hand and stood up without an expression. He didn't even look at her as he turned away.

But right before he stepped out the door, he suddenly turned around and said: "I will claim my debt later on." Then, he disappeared.

This surprising outcome shocked Lin Shan. What debt? Does he mean he

doesn't plan on exposing me because he doesn't want me to die swiftly under one blade? He wants to use a dagger to slowly tear me apart?

He's not even human! He's a beast! At that moment, Lin Shan had tears running down her face.

"Your Highness, you honestly do not plan to report this to the Emperor?" Within a few moments after Du Hao left the room, Gu Zuo silently appeared from the shadows.

"I know what I'm doing. Gu Zuo, help me investigate a person." Du Hao stated as he took out a slip of paper from his waist. On the slip of paper, written vertically in black ink were "The Prince Consort is on the Black Dragon Mountain."

"Isn't that the slip from that day...."

"Yes. I want to see which person possess such remarkable abilities that he was able to find Song Luo before our secret agents." Du Hao looked up the sky and couldn't see a single star.

There appears to be a storm brewing towards them.

Sure enough, the very next day, there was a huge rainstorm. It was raining so hard that the entire Palace was submerged in water vapor. Despite that, the Kingdom minister and his wife rushed into the Palace to see their daughter the moment they received news that Song Luo had been found.

The moment they saw Song Luo, streams of tears poured from the mother's eyes. She grabbed Lin Shan's hand and refused to let go regardless of what was being said.

Lin Shan couldn't help but feel a tingle in her nose. Although she had said that she wanted to leave the Palace forever, there were also things she didn't want to part with. The love her parents had for her was definitely no less than the love she had received from her previous parents. If her current parents were suffering because of her, she will never be able to die contently.

Thinking of this, Lin Shan couldn't help but started to worry about her identity

again. Based on how Du Hao acted the day before, she was unsure of how long he will keep her secret.

But if she told her parents that that Du Hao had already discovered she was a woman, knowing her father's character, he would definitely run to the Emperor to beg for mercy. Plus, her mother would most likely faint from the news.

No! Definitely not! Lin Shan thought about it and decided the best thing to do was to talk to her brother first.

She asked about Song Lin Feng, and found out that he had been sent away to deal with some urgent matter. At the present moment, there was no set return date.

What? Her brother is gone? What about Lian Feng? Shouldn't he be with her brother? Lin Shan was surprised and immediately asked Xiao Lu to investigate.

Xiao Lu quickly found out that the Emperor believed the soldier station was set on fire by some mountainous thieves who refused to work alongside with the Imperial Court. Thus, Lian Feng was ordered to go back to the Black Dragon Mountain to do some investigation.

Does that mean Lian Feng was currently at the Black Dragon Mountain? At this moment, Lin Shan realized she was isolated without help. Now, she could only count on herself to deal with Du Hao.

*eat my tofu: This is a common Chinese phrase. It means you're trying to sexually take advantage of a person. I have no idea why it's called that though. What does tofu have to do with this??? I'm so confused.. lol.. but it's commonly used in Chinese.

Promoted post: [The Glass](#)

Chapter 44

To my dear readers,

I'm so sorry. I have been so demotivated lately. I was having a semi mental breakdown and it has been very tough for me to keep going. I spoke to Amery and he was like, "Grace. You can do it. Just translate one line at a time." I know it sounds ridiculous, but I wanted to cry when he said that.

Anyhow, the word I am teaching today is 我. 我 means I. In Chinese, "I, me, myself" is all the same. We use 我. Since this word is a bit more complicated, I'm only teaching one word today. Write it 5 times! 我 我 我 我 我. If you want to type it, download a Chinese pinyin keyboard and type in "wo".

As for 女人 (woman), type in "nv ren". It's supposed to be nu with two dots at the top, but you will be able to get the same word with nv. 男人 (man) is "nan ren". Try it!!

Chapter 44

After Lin Shan's parents left, Lin Shan worked very hard to recuperate for three days straight. She had to be prepared to deal with Du Hao at any moment. From morning until night, she would think of many combat plans. After all, she had to be prepared in case Du Hao unleashed a sudden attack!

Oddly enough, Du Hao seemed to have vanished. There was totally no movement from his side. Instead, there was another person driving Lin Shan nuts; that person was the clueless Du Ming Yue.

Du Ming Yue's love life experience was truly a tragedy.

Before she was three years old, her goal was to marry her father one day. However, she later found out that the Emperor wasn't someone she could marry. Therefore, she decided to fall for her eldest brother, Du Ye.

She relied on Du Ye for everything; and whenever she got in trouble, he would back her up. This crush lasted until she was twelve. One day, her mother ruthlessly told her that she could never marry her brother.

Poor Du Ming Yue was broken hearted. Hence, she turned to the servant that served Du Ye. That relationship only lasted for three months. The servant had a mental breakdown and personally transferred to another department to become an eunuch.

Afterwards, Du Ming Yue found out eunuchs were not marriageable either. This was a severe blow to her, and she decided to stop falling in love.

But the year she turned sixteen, Du Ming Yue met Song Lin Feng, the eldest master from the Song family, and fell in love. Finally, she had met a suitable/normal match! Being the bashful teenager she was, it took her awhile to summon up the courage to confess. In the end, she gave her father a note, indicating her love interest.

Yet, she was one step too late. Song Lin Feng had married Yang Bi Yuan, and she somehow ended up with the second brother, Song Luo.

Instead of getting her ideal handsome manly man, she was now left with a feminine weakling. Du Ming Yue threw a fit and prepared a rope to commit suicide, but the Emperor's words were final.

The marriage was going to happen, and she had no choice.

The moment they got married, Du Ming Yue had total confidence that she would be able to scare Song Luo away. Yet, despite looking like a frail little twerp, Song Luo wasn't intimidated by her the slightest bit.

As a matter of fact, she was the one who always ended up in a disadvantage position. Du Ming Yue had never met a match like this. She was frustrated and embarrassed. Slowly, she developed feelings for Song Luo.

Honestly, Song Luo wasn't that bad. When he tried to save her from falling onto the broken vase, that was quite a manly move. Plus, he had saved her brother, the Crown Prince.

When Song Luo went missing, she was actually worried.... just like that Du Ming Yue's love life had taken another step towards tragedy.

If Du Ming Yue found out she fell in love with a woman, she would probably crash her head against a tree and commit suicide. However, currently, she was still clueless.

Her teenage heart was stirring and she started to appear around Lin Shan all the time.

“Song Luo, why are you not drinking your medicine?”

“Song Luo, if you don’t drink your medicine, I will personally send your maid to the Leaning Vermilion House!”

“Song Luo, you do not have the permission to flirt with your maid!”

“Song Luo, I want to go to the park. You’re coming with me!”

“Song Luo, my back feels sore. Give me a massage.”

.....

“Song Luo, tonight, I’m sleeping with you!”

The wind howled. The horses hissed. And Lin Shan crumbled.

“Master, where are you running off to?” Xiao Lu asked as Lin Shan dragged her to hide with her.

It doesn’t matter where we go. Anywhere is better than sleeping with Du Ming Yue, ok? Who knows what she’s going to do in the middle of the night. What if she becomes a beast and starts tearing off my clothes?

Lin Shan didn’t say a word, but she rolled her eyes at Xiao Lu.

“Master, they say that those who kill pigs will reincarnate as a pig in the next life. You must have committed a lot of crimes in your previous life. That’s why in this life, so many people want to commit crimes to you.”

Lin Shan nearly tripped on the bulging flagstone. She stared at Xiao Lu with resentment. You’re from the future, aren’t you?

At that moment, Xiao Luo suddenly exclaimed: “Ai ya! Master, it looks like it’s going to rain!”

Immediately after, the sky flashed...followed by the explosive sound of thunder. Huge droplets of rain started pounding down on them.

Do you have a mouth of a crow? Lin Shan wanted to give Xiao Lu a dirty look but realized she had disappeared. She looked to her left and right and found Xiao Lu shaking at the corner of the garden.

Oh yeah! Xiao Lu was afraid of lightning. Lin Shan decided to go over to comfort her.

At that moment, another blast of lightning flashed through the sky and the thunder echoed through the air.

Xiao Luo couldn't handle it anymore and screamed, "Ah!". She fled from the scene like a crazy woman.

Lin Shan was stunned. She rushed to follow, but since her ankle was still injured, she had to stop after a couple of steps. By the time she looked up, there was no trace of Xiao Lu.

Are you kidding me? I have to stay out by myself tonight? Lin Shan started feeling sorry for herself. The rain was falling harder. I guess the best thing was to find a place to avoid the rain.

In order to hide from Du Ming Yue, Lin Shan basically ran to wherever that was remote. Now that she chased Xiao Lu for a bit, she was totally lost. The sky was dark, and there wasn't a single person in sight. She was surrounded by plants, and they all looked the same.

Fortunately, it looked like there was a ge lou* nearby. Since this was such a remote area, there were probably nobody living there. Lin Shan didn't hesitate and ran straight towards the ge lou.



This is a ge lou. I don't know how to translate it

accurately.

It was indeed an empty building. There wasn't a single guard around. Looks like she was going to stay here for the night.

Lin Shan took off her soaked outer garment and headed towards the stairs. However, after a couple of steps, she paused. Wait a minute... a rainy night, a ge lou, and a weak woman that is alone... isn't this a scene from a horror movie? Oh my goodness...

A gust of wind blew and it caused a chilling sensation on Lin Shan's soaked back. Her hair stood on ends and she had a very bad feeling something was going to happen...

Then, from the faint lighting, Lin Shan noticed a shadow that was slowly approaching her. It stopped right behind her.

Outside the building were sounds of heavy rain and violent wind. The sky was trembling with sounds of thunder, and the shadow had silently stopped right behind her. All Lin Shan could sense was danger.

Lin Shan was frozen stiff, but her heart was beating so fast that she felt like it was going to pop out at any moment. Her breathing was heavy.

She knew she was doomed. She couldn't speak due to the smoke that had gotten in her throat. She couldn't run either, due to her injured ankle. If she was going to die regardless, she might as well turn around and take a look at the demon.

Lin Shan gritted her teeth and turned around like a boss. However, she turned around so dramatically that she crashed straight into the "demon". At this moment, her eyes saw stars and she was very dizzy.

Oh wow! I never knew demons are so firm! Ouch. And holy moly, this demon looks so much like Du Hao. Hmm... I guess that's a good fit. Wait a minute!! How come he looks so much like Du Hao? Ah!!!

She finally figured it out. F***. I thought I would see a demon, but it's actually worse than a demon!

Lin Shan subconsciously took a step back. She was about to run, but Du Hao

had already reached out and grabbed onto her wrist. He grimly questioned: “Why are you here?” But his voice was quickly drowned by the sounds of thunder.

Lin Shan was so scared that she couldn’t utter a sound. All she did was looked at him with an alarmed expression. Droplets of water dripped from her wet hair onto her soaked clothes. When the wind blew, she couldn’t stop shivering.

Du Hao crinkled his brows. He was about to speak when suddenly Lin Shan sneezed violently on him without giving any warning. He only heard “Ahh choo!”. Du Hao became as stiff as a rock. The corner of his mouth twitched.

Lin Shan felt bad and tried to wipe his face using her sleeves. Yet, the moment she advanced forward, her nose tingled again and, “Ahh choo!” It was another sneeze. This time, it was even more explosive. Now, her drool was on Du Hao’s face as well.

Du Hao’s face turned as dark as the sky. Lin Shan could barely see his face from the faint lighting now. She was panicking and decided to lightly laugh to warm the atmosphere. But her nose was truly not helping. The moment she opened her mouth, it led to another three or four sneezes.

Somehow, they all landed on Du Hao.

Now, Du Hao’s mouth couldn’t even twitch anymore.

Lin Shan was freaking out. Ahhh! It’s over! It’s over! The Crown Prince is angry! It’s not like I can control my sneezes. If you don’t want it to land on you, then let go of my wrist...

“Ahhhhh choo! Ahh choo!!!”

Finally, after sneezing more than ten sneezes in a row, Du Hao released her hand and turned to walk up the stairs.

“Follow me.” He icily ordered. His voice sounded like he was about to kill someone.

Should I follow? Lin Shan hesitated. The wind and rain roared louder and when it made contact with her soaked clothes, her bones could feel the chill.

Whatever! It’s better to be slaughtered by the Crown Prince than to freeze to

death. If I become a demon, I could always get revenge later on!

With that thought, Lin Shan bravely followed Du Hao.

This is my promoted post: [The World in Green](#)

Chapter 45

To my dear readers,

Lian Feng will not be back until a few chapters later! There will be a lot of Du Hao in the next couple of chapters. Anyone for Team Du Hao? lol

Anyhow, I'm going to be slowing down a bit with the translations because I honestly need a break. However, I will still be translating so please continue to follow the story! I will release at least two chapters a week...I cannot promise three because I am burnt out. Please donate to me if you appreciate my work.

The word I would like to teach today is: 你 means you. Write it 5 times! 你 你 你 你 你 You can type it by typing in "ni". You know that common saying, "Wo ai ni"? It means I love you. I've taught you how to write 我 in my previous chapter, and now you know how to write 你. I guess, I should teach you guys how to write love next.

Chapter 45

Lin Shan watched Du Hao stopped in front of a room. He pushed the door opened, and Lin Shan was welcomed by the warmth of a heater. The warmth embraced her frozen body and Lin Shan's will to survive suddenly erupted.

Before Du Hao could say a word, she had already slipped into the room and huddled right beside the heater. Lin Shan heavenly sighed.

Mother! It's freezing! Freezing, I tell you! What type of messed up weather is this? It's supposed to be raining but it felt like I was being slapped by ice instead. It was trying to take my life!

As Lin Shan silently fumed, the room lit up. Du Hao came over and rudely threw a cloth on her head.

Lin Shan couldn't see a thing and clumsily took the cloth off her head, only to see Du Hao changing in front of her without a care.

Du Hao looked like he was about to go to bed. He only had a black rope draped on his body. Once he took it off, his tan skin was exposed; along with all his scars.

Although Lin Shan had seen Du Hao change before, she still felt awkward. Lin Shan quickly pulled off her headband and covered her face with the cloth to dry her hair.

By the time I'm done drying my hair, he should be finished changing, right? Lin Shan thought to herself. Therefore, she continued wiping her hair for a long period of time. There didn't seem to be any movement from Du Hao.

I think he should be done by now. Lin Shan carefully removed the cloth from her head as she decided to secretly scanned around the room.

When she did, she nearly yelped out in surprise.

Du Hao was sitting directly in front of her. He had already changed into his sleeping garments. He was wearing a dark green robe without a waist belt. He simply draped it onto his shoulders. Du Hao's honey coloured chest was bare in front of Lin Shan.

For some odd reason, Lin Shan thought of Lin Feng and her nose tingled. She felt a nosebleed coming.

At that moment, Du Hao coldly interrupted her thoughts: "Are you done looking?"

Lin Shan was brought back to reality. She immediately realized the person in front of her wasn't Lian Feng, but Du Hao. Although they had the exact same face, their aura was totally different. One of them was calm and secretive; while the other one was wild and arrogant. The moment they opened their mouths, she could tell them apart.

Lin Shan composed herself and used the cloth to wipe her face. Currently, she actually felt relieved she couldn't speak. At least, she could use it as an excuse to ignore Du Hao's questions.

Lin Shan didn't say a word. But Du Hao wasn't frustrated. He continued watching her from his seat.

Honestly, Du Hao never expected to bump into Song Luo here. This part of the Palace was very remote. This was where his grandfather, the previous Emperor, lived during his retirement. When he was little, he would often come here. After his grandfather passed away, this hidden area was abandoned for several years.

It wasn't until he recently returned in triumph that he ordered Gu Zuo to get the servants to renovate the place. At the end of every month, he would come here and stay a night to reminisce his grandfather. Unexpectedly, Lin Shan somehow found her way here as well.

Was this fate?

Lin Shan was still wiping her face. She had been here for over half a year now, yet she had never encountered such a rainstorm. She couldn't help but think back to her hometown. Where she came from rained a lot. Sometimes, the rain would continue for days. Whenever that happened, her favourite thing to do was to stay in bed and daydream under her blanket.

The deafening lightning hadn't stopped, but Lin Shan's mind had already drifted far far away. Suddenly, Du Hao took the cloth from her and she snapped back into reality.

What's he doing? Lin Shan was astonished. Du Hao had no expression on his face as he started drying her hair with the cloth.

He clearly had never helped anyone dry their hair before. His movements were rigid. At times, he would be very gentle; but then, he would be very rough. That wasn't the point though. Right now, Lin Shan was stunned because the Crown Prince was personally drying her hair. What the hell?

Is he planning to suffocate me and then announce tomorrow: The Prince Consort was drying his hair, but then accidentally suffocated himself....

Du Hao had no idea why he was drying her hair either. He couldn't help it. It just felt natural. However, Lin Shan looked very alert and frightened. He could tell that she didn't trust him from the way she was looking at him. Du Hao felt unappreciated and was enraged.

Lin Shan was still struggling to figure out what was on Du Hao's mind, when suddenly, Du Hao stopped and stood up. Then, he threw the cloth onto her head.

"Dry it yourself." Du Hao said bitterly as he walked away.

Lin Shan again clumsily pulled the cloth off her head. Next thing she knew, another item was thrown to her.

She took a look and realized it was a robe.

“Change your clothes. Don’t dirty my room.” Du Hao stated flatly.

Wow! What a jerk. He only cares about himself. He didn’t even offer me a place to sleep! Helloooo... do you really have to be so noble and cold? At least throw me a pillow!

Pa A pillow was thrown on her face —

Lin Shan practically slept in the corner that night. The moment she woke up, she heard a loud commotion downstairs. It sounded like someone yelling. She was still half asleep when she opened her eyes and yawned. She stretched her sore back and crawled out to take a look.

The moment she opened the door, a glaring light shone into her eyes. Lin Shan frowned. She rushed to the railing to see who rudely interrupted her beauty sleep.

But when she looked down, her soul nearly flew away.

Why was Du Ming Yue here?

Du Ming Yue found her way here after interrogating Xiao Lu. The moment she found out Song Luo’s location, she stormed here with a bunch of her servants.

Once she saw Song Luo’s outer garment hanging from the entrance, Du Ming Yue went nuts and started screeching.

Du Ming Yue was so loud that Du Hao woke up as well. He rushed over to see what was going on. Ever since they were little, Du Hao had never gotten along well with Du Ming Yue. Their personalities differ too much and they weren’t from the same mother. They rarely interacted unless they had to.

Now that she had suddenly barged into his territory screaming like a maniac, Du Hao was annoyed. His face darkened and he gravely asked: “What is it, younger sister?”

Du Ming Yue was planning to “arrest” Song Luo and didn’t expect to see Du Hao. Currently, she felt a bit uncomfortable.

All of a sudden, she heard a few of her servants gasped in surprised and she turned to look at Song Luo. Song Luo was standing behind the railing on the

second floor. There was nothing suspicious about this, but his hair was untied and his clothes were in disarray. Not only that, his clothes appeared to be Du Hao's.

Du Ming Yue froze.

Although she wasn't very bright, she had lived in the Palace for eighteen years. She had been exposed and heard of all sorts of stuff. She had heard about "homosexuals" but she never thought it would happen to her own husband.

No wonder Song Luo always runs whenever he sees me. It's because..... Du Ming Yue came to a realization and now her face was stiff.

"Song Luo. Get your ass down here." Deep inside, Du Ming Yue still had hope. Perhaps it was a misunderstanding.

For the past few days, Lin Shan was already so stressed by Du Ming Yue that she wanted to crash her head against the wall. Now, whenever she heard Du Ming Yue's voice, she would naturally take a couple steps back.

Oh my Princess. I know you want action but please don't try to get anything from me. I'm begging you!

Seeing how Song Luo refused to come down and trying to back off, Du Ming Yue was frustrated. She lifted up her sleeves and was about to storm up when suddenly, a person blocked her: "Younger sister, what you are trying to do in my territory?" Du Hao's voice was intimidating and full of an Emperor's aura.

Du Ming Yue wasn't afraid of anything, except for her father. Now that she could sense the same aura from her second brother, she couldn't help but feel slightly unnerved.

"Please do not block me, older brother. I just want to take Prince Consort back with me." Du Ming Yue bravely confronted.

"Younger sister, the Prince Consort may be your husband, but this is my territory. How can you rudely storm in and out whenever you feel like? Does my presence not matter in your eyes?" Du Hao's last line was said so coldly that all of Du Ming Yue's servants trembled in fear.

Du Ming Yue's complexion didn't look good. After all, this was the Crown

Prince. Ever since Du Hao had returned in triumph, Father has been doting on him even more. It was obvious that Father preferred him way more than Du Ye. Eventually, Du Hao was going to be the Emperor. If they have conflicts now, she would be placed in a bad position.

Although Du Ming Yue was usually unreasonable, she knew her place during the crucial moments. She immediately altered her tone.

“Older brother, please do not misunderstand. Your sister is just worried because Prince Consort didn’t come back last night. I thought he might have gotten into an accident. Since the Prince Consort is here with you, I’m relieved. Would brother allow me to bring Prince Consort back with me?”

Now that Du Ming Yue’s attitude had changed, Du Hao immediately took advantage: “Younger sister. Of course it is understandable that you miss and care for your husband. How could brother not know? But last night, I had a very deep talk with Prince Consort, and we are not finished. We have decided to continue our conversation for the next few days. Therefore, the Prince Consort will be staying with me for awhile. Younger sister, you do not have an issue with that, correct?”

Du Hao’s voice was calm and collected. However, Du Ming Yue’s face was turning colour. She couldn’t help but think back on her assumption.

“Why is younger sister not talking? If you do not believe me, you may ask your husband.” Du Hao turned his glance towards Lin Shan. His eyes looked deep into her soul.

You f**ker. You know I can’t speak, yet you’re asking me? You’re doing this on purpose, aren’t you? Lin Shan didn’t even finish glaring, but Du Hao had already turned around: “Princess, did you see the Prince Consort nod?”

You asshole. When did I nod? I didn’t even blink!

Du Ming Yue’s facial expression was turning worse and worse. Thinking how her husband could be gay, her mind was a total mess. She gritted her teeth and said: “If that is the case, then younger sister shall take her leave now. I do not want to disturb your talk. Goodbye!”

Then, she flung her sleeves and left the ge lou. All her servants followed as

well.

Only the two of them remained. Du Hao lifted his head and said to Lin Shan: “Why are you still standing there? You’re going to be staying with me for the next couple of days.

Promoted post: [Time and Financial Freedom](#)

Chapter 46

To my dear readers,

This chapter took me so long because the wording in Chinese was the opposite of English. It made translating so difficult. . By the way, Lian Feng will be back in Chapter 49.

The words I will be teaching today is she and he. She is 她. He is 他. Notice how the “she” has the 女 on the side. Write it 5 times. 她 她 她 她 她. 他 他 他 他 他. If you want to type it, type “ta”. Both of them are “ta”.

P.S. I’m still very demotivated so I’m sorry for the slow releases.

Chapter 46

Lin Shan had lived over twenty years, but this was the first time she has experienced “Just exited the Tiger’s cave, but entered a wolf’s den” (idiom). Getting rid of Du Ming Yue was no easy task, but now she was stuck with Du Hao.

Du Hao tried to make it sound pleasant by calling it a “short stay”, but Lin Shan was furious.

If she could speak, she would totally swear at him: You f**ker! This is not a short stay. This is a house arrest!

The moment she arrived at the Crown Prince’s residence, she was locked up in a room. In addition, there were two guards standing by the door. She’s merely a little Prince Consort. Why must Du Hao make such a big deal? Lin Shan honestly couldn’t see through Du Hao.

Just as she was deep in thought, there was a knock on the door.

“Prince Consort, your medicine is ready.” A little servant girl came in, holding a bowl of medicine.

Since Lin Shan was in a bad mood, she gave the servant attitude. She flung her head: I’m not drinking!

The servant girl panicked: “Prince Consort, I was ordered to ensure you would

take your medicine at the appropriate time. Please don't put me in a difficult position?"

So many people put me in a difficult position. Why can't I make your life difficult? Your fault for meddling in my affairs. You deserve it!

Lin Shan was in a foul mood and refused to drink no matter what.

The little servant girl was almost in tears now. She whined: "Prince Consort. Your servant is begging you. Please drink at least one gulp. If not, the Highness is going to punish me.... Prince Consort!!!"

Nope! Lin Shan flung her head the other way. She refused to look at the servant girl.

At that moment, a sharp female voice entered the room: "Who is it? Who's weeping and ruining my day? Can't I have some peace and quiet?" A woman in red entered. She stretched out her neck like a goose. She had so much authority that the two Imperial bodyguards didn't dare to block her from entering.

Lin Shan glanced over and unexpectedly thought the woman looked familiar. Where have I seen her before?

While Lin Shan was digging through her memory, the woman in red came over and slapped the servant girl with no hesitation.

There was only a "pa" sound. The bowl fell from the servant girl's hand, and the scalding medicine splattered onto the ground and onto the girl. Yet, she didn't dare to utter a sound.

"You were told to give the medicine to the Prince Consort. Not to cry and whine! Why are you crying? You want me to hit you more?" The woman screeched. She lifted her hand up, and was about to slam it down again.

Are you kidding me? This is a live torture! This situation woke Lin Shan from her anger and she rushed over and stood in front of the servant girl.

The lady in red's hand immediately froze in the air. With a blink of an eye, she had a smile on her face as she gently said: "Yang Yu Er would like to greet the Prince Consort."

Wow, that sweet and cute voice has the power to go through a person's

bones!

Lin Shan instantly remembered the woman. She was the vixen that danced for Du Hao,

Holy cow! I've been living in the Ancient world for so long. I've finally witnessed the legendary malicious bitchy character from every drama I've watched! Not bad!

Seeing how the Prince Consort was staring at her attentively, Yang Yu Er felt proud and vain. Her confidence went way up and she said in a flirtatious tone: "Our Highness went out to meet some clients. If Prince Consort feels neglected, I can apologize to you. Please do not take offense." Then, Yang Yu Er gave Lin Shan a seductive smile.

At this moment, Lin Shan was glad she was a woman. If she was a man, she probably would have drowned in lust. Lin Shan tried to focus as she nodded and smiled.

"I'm sorry, Prince Consort. I forgot you cannot speak. Please forgive me." Yang Yu Er smiled flirtatiously again as she lowered her eyes. She was the opposite of the violent woman from a moment ago. Lin Shan felt a surge of emotions from within and wanted to slap Yang Yu Er across the face.

Lin Shan narrowed her eyes and came up with a plan.

She smiled back at Yang Yu Er and pointed to the door.

Yang Yu Er was obviously great at reading body language. She immediately understood Lin Shan: "Prince Consort would like to go out for a walk?"

Lin Shan nodded.

"And you would like me to take the lead?"

Lin Shan continued to nod in agreement.

At that moment, Yang Yu Er imagined herself to be a concubine of the Crown Prince. At this residence, which other woman can compete with her beauty? Even the Prince Consort could tell she was special. She will definitely be the one controlling this place in the future. No no no! She will be the future Empress!

Greed flashed through Yang Yu Er's eyes as she slightly curtsied: "I am

indebted to Prince Consort's love. I feel very honoured. Please!"

Since everyone was used to Yang Yu Er's conduct, no one dared to stop her. The two Imperial bodyguards actually allowed the both of them to exit the room. Lin Shan was surprised at how smoothly her plan was going.

After many consecutive days of rain, the sky was finally clear. It was bright and sunny outside. The air was filled with the smell of fresh soil, and the scenery looked very lush. However, Lin Shan didn't care. Her only goal right now was to sneak out of here.

Asking Du Hao for permission will most likely fail. My best chance would be to somehow contact someone from outside to come and save me.

Just as Lin Shan was staring all over the place and plotting out a plan, Yang Yu Er suddenly stopped walking and turned around. She mysteriously got closer to her and murmured: "Prince Consort. Yu Er has a question she would like to ask you. I hope you do not mind?"

Oh! I knew you had a reason to approach me! Lin Shan looked unfazed, and nodded.

"Everyone in the Palace knows you have saved our Highness's life. Our Highness must trust you very much. I'm just wondering if our Highness has ever mentioned anything about choosing the ultimate Imperial concubine to you?"

Actually, Yang Yu Er's question was currently one of the most popular topics amongst the women in the Palace. Everyone was curious as to who the Crown Prince will choose to be his ultimate Imperial concubine. Whoever that will be chosen will be the future Empress.

The Emperor had already made it clear that he plans to give the throne to Du Hao. Du Hao was already given a lot of national affairs to deal with. The Emperor was also going to help Du Hao select the ultimate Imperial concubine.

The ultimate Imperial concubine was a very respectful and desirable position. Therefore, it was no surprise that many desired it. Yang Yu Er was one of the ones who really wanted the position. The only reason why she wanted to get close to Lin Shan was to find out who the Crown Prince had in mind. In addition, she also wanted Lin Shan to say a few good words for her.

Lin Shan could read Yang Yu Er's thoughts in an instant. She decided to go along with it and nodded.

Seeing Lin Shan nodding, Yang Yu Er's eyes shone. She tried to suppress her emotions as she eagerly asked: "I wonder if the Crown Prince had a person in mind?"

Even if he wants to pick someone, he's not going to pick you. Look at you. Even I can see through you. You think Du Hao is blind?

Lin Shan nodded again

Yang Yu Er felt like her heart was about to burst. She lowered her voice: "Did the Crown Prince... mention me???"

This time, Lin Shan didn't nod. She wanted the story to climax.

Now that Lin Shan stopped nodding, Yang Yu Er panicked. She took out a sack from her sleeves and shoved it into Lin Shan's hands as she whispered: "This is a welcome gift from me. Please accept my kind intentions."

Oh wow! I get money even when I'm on house arrest? Not bad!

This time, it was Lin Shan's eyes shining. She pretended to reject the sack and continued to remain silent.

Yang Yu Er realized one wasn't enough and fished out another full sack. Now, she shoved both into Lin Shan's hands: "Prince Consort, please do not reject me. It's just a humble gift. No big deal."

This time, Lin Shan didn't return the sacks and stuffed both into her sleeves.

Seeing how Lin Shan accepted her money, Yang Yu Er felt a breath of relief. She calmly asked: "Prince Consort, do you remember who the Highness's desired candidate is?"

Lin Shan looked at her and shook her head.

Yang Yu Er almost spat blood: "Prince Consort... you can't..." She was so emotional that she didn't notice the stone in front of her. Yang Yu Er stumbled and fell towards the lotus pond.

Lin Shan rushed to get out of the way, but it was too late. Yang Yu Er reached

out and caught onto Lin Shan's sleeves. All Lin Shan felt was a force pushing her forward. Before she could react, both of them had already fallen into the lotus pond.

Plop! Plop!

After the two sounds, there was a huge splash. Then, Yang Yu Er could be heard screaming like a slaughtered pig from the back garden: "Help! Help!! Help....."

Promoted post: [The secret](#)

Chapter 47

To my dear readers,

I'm so sorry. I have been so so so busy lately. I actually haven't had time to translate at all. However, I know it has been forever so I'm going to make sure you guys see Lian Feng later on the week! There has been a lot of Du Hao lately and I know most of you want to see our male lead.

Anyhow, I would like to give a shoutout to FallenSoul. Fallen is a newbie translator at Etvolare's site. [Check out Fallen's work!](#) He has been quite discouraged lately due to low readership and ratings. Please go and show him some support! Fallen, you better be reading this!

Lastly, the word I am teaching today is: 的 after a word gives possession. So for example, 我的 means "my" 你的 means "yours." 他的 means "his" 她的 means "her". 的 的 的 的 的. You can type it by typing "de" in a pinyin keyboard.

Chapter 47

Just as Lin Shan and Yang Yu Er both fell into the waters, at the Crown Prince's residence, Du Hao was having a serious chat with Gu Zuo.

"Your subordinate has discovered that the slip of paper is from a special type of paper that is only produced from the Palace. Therefore, most likely, it was sent from someone here." Gu Zuo stated.

It was someone from the Palace? Du Hao narrowed his eyes: "What about the flying dagger?"

"The flying dagger is an ordinary item. It is not created from the Palace. However, if a person can thrust such an ordinary item straight into the tree, he must have very strong abilities. I'm afraid he is not an ordinary person."

Ordinary person? If he was an ordinary person, he wouldn't dare to be so unbridled in front of my eyes. Du Hao coolly laughed.

At this moment, he suddenly heard someone screaming from faraway.

"Let's go take a look." Du Hao said to Gu Zuo. The two of them left the Study

one after another, and followed the sounds of the screaming towards the back garden.

It was currently the peak of the midsummer. The lotus pond from the back garden was filled with large pieces of lotus leaves. By the time Du Hao and Gu Zuo arrived, the lotus pond had already been surrounded by quite a number of servant girls. All of them rushed to one side the moment they saw Du Hao; their faces showed signs of fear.

Du Hao looked at the lotus pond and saw Yang Yu Er fluttering like a duck. He couldn't help but crinkled his brows. Then, he looked at Gu Zuo: "You, go in."

Poor Gu Zuo was stunned: "Your Highness, I... I do not know how to swim...."

"Are you implying that I should go in instead?" Du Hao narrowed his eyes.

Gu Zuo hesitated: "Umm.. your subordinate shall order someone....." Gu Zuo turned around and was about to leave.

At this moment, suddenly another weak voice could be heard amongst Yang Yu Er's sharp screaming: "Help... help....."

Song Luo?! Du Hao immediately panicked and scanned around the lotus pond. He looked pass the layers of lotus leaves and Yang Yu Er's extreme splashes. Finally, he noticed a familiar sleeve. Without thinking, Du Hao jumped straight into the lotus pond.

A *plop* could be heard. Gu Zuo instantly turned around and no longer saw Du Hao. He froze.

Then, he hollered: "What are you all standing around for? Quickly find someone to save our Highness! Our Highness cannot swim!"

Actually, Lin Shan can swim. However, the moment she fell into the lotus pond, Yang Yu Er went nuts and grabbed onto her clothes screaming. Thus, she couldn't even swim to shore. She was being sunk.

At this moment, Du Hao jumped in.

The moment Du Hao jumped in, Yang Yu Er became emotional and released Lin Shan's hand. She flopped her way towards Du Hao.

Since Yang Yu Er released her, Lin Shan felt much lighter. Although she did

swallow a couple gulps of water and was slightly dizzy, she could still move her hands and legs. Therefore, she used her intuition and swam to shore.

But at this moment, there was screaming from the shore: “Quickly find someone! The Crown Prince has fallen into the lotus pond! We need someone to save him...!!!”

Why did the Crown Prince join us? He wanted to join in the fun or something? Before Lin Shan could fully comprehend what was happening, someone strongly wrapped his arms around her waist. Lin Shan turned around and realized it was Du Hao.

Du Hao’s lips were tightly shut and his face was deathly pale. He kept trying to push her above the water, but he himself was gradually sinking lower and lower.

Lin Shan knew something was wrong and quickly grabbed onto Du Hao. Fortunately, he wasn’t as difficult as Yang Yu Er. Lin Shan managed to get both of them afloat for a little while. However, since she was weak herself, she couldn’t hold on for much longer.

Just when she had no more strength, Gu Zuo found a bamboo pole from the shore.

“Prince Consort. Please grab onto the bamboo pole!” Gu Zuo yelled.

Lin Shan reached out her hand to pull. The two of them slowly got onto shore. By now, Lin Shan basically had no more strength left. She had to be dragged by Gu Zuo and the Imperial guards behind him. After she spat out a couple mouthfuls of water, she took a couple deep breaths as she looked up from the ground.

As she gasped for air, she was also feeling for the two sacks. She was beaming: Good! Good! They’re still there!!

While she was secretly celebrating, she heard Gu Zuo’s worrisome voice: “Quickly! Find the Imperial physician! Hurry!”

Lin Shan sat up and realized Du Hao was still unconscious. Gu Zuo was about to lift him.

Lin Shan rushed to stop him. You can’t lift him up when the water is still in his

stomach! Come on! Use your brain?

Gu Zuo was clueless by Lin Shan's gesture because he had no swimming knowledge or abilities.

Since Gu Zuo looked lost, Lin Shan lifted her sleeves and started pressing on Du Hao's chest with both her hands. Once, twice, thrice.... Du Hao's breathing still didn't resume.

Are you kidding me? Do I have to give him artificial respiration? Lin Shan frowned. Du Hao's face still had no colour to it. Uggghhhh. She gritted her teeth and was about to go all out. However, just as her lips were about to touch Du Hao's, Lian Feng suddenly appeared in her mind. Although he quickly vanished, it was enough to make Lin Shan stop.

Two seconds later, Lin Shan straighten up and ruthlessly punched Du Hao in the stomach.

You f**ker! Wake up!

There was a moaning sound and Gu Zuo was freaking out from the side. He wanted to stop Lin Shan, but suddenly, there was an reaction from Du Hao.

Du Hao spat out a mouthful of water, and his breathing became normal. His eyelids also started to flutter.

"He's awake! The Crown Prince is okay!!" Everyone was exclaiming from the side. Many people were praising Lin Shan from the side:

"The Prince Consort has saved the Crown Prince once again!"

"The Prince Consort is truly amazing!"

"The Prince Consort is a young hero!"

But out of nowhere, someone suddenly remembered and screamed: "Oh no! Yang beauty is still in the water!"

Everyone actually forgot that they were missing a person. When they looked towards the lotus pond, they saw Yang Yu Er on the shore. Her hair was a mess and she was damp and alone. The wind blew and two dead leaves spun in the air. It gave off a very mournful feeling.

Pshhh, beauty my ass! She looked pretty damn bad right now!

How could someone like her be the ultimate Imperial concubine?

Yang Yu Er's vixen image was thoroughly ruined.

— — —

Once again, the news that Lin Shan had rescued the Crown Prince had spread throughout the entire Palace. All the servant girls voluntarily helped her wash her clothes, and there were also many who daydreamed about their hero from the window side. Even the two Imperial bodyguards with no facial expression greeted Lin Shan with respect.

In short, Lin Shan felt invincible.

However, Lin Shan honestly didn't care much for praise. The moment she changed into her new garments, she found an excuse to stay in the room so she could look at what Yang Yu Er had given her.

Wow! I knew the vixen would be generous, but I didn't think she would be this generous!! The two sacks were filled with golden sticks! There was a total of ten of them. It was enough to buy a house in the Capital, two acres of land, and raise a young and attractive man.

Lin Shan felt like she was floating. Suddenly, being stuck in the Crown Prince's residence didn't seem so bad.

Lin Shan kept recounting the ten golden sticks as she imagined buying her new home and leisurely living with an attractive young man.

She was still daydreaming when Gu Zuo's voice appeared from the doorway: "Prince Consort. Our Highness wants you to attend a meal with him."

Lin Shan quickly hid the golden sticks as she opened the door.

The Sun had already set. Gu Zuo stood by the entrance as he looked at Lin Shan with renowned respect.

The Crown Prince is okay? Lin Shan asked using her questioning glance.

Gu Zuo understood and nodded: "There is no need to worry, Prince Consort. The Imperial physician had already taken a look at our Highness. He is fine."

The fact he is fine is more worrisome, okay? Lin Shan cringed from the inside.

Lin Shan followed Gu Zuo to a quiet and secluded building. There was an old servant waiting for their arrival. Gu Zuo turned around respectfully and said: “Our Highness is waiting for you upstairs. Please head up, Prince Consort.”

Promoted post: [The Three Ways](#)

Chapter 48

To my dear readers,

Lian Feng will be back in the next chapter!! And sorry for the wait (again). Today, I had a very emotional day because I went for an acupuncture treatment and I cried a lot. . My friend came with me and she cried because she saw my condition. I have been very emotionally weak lately so I would appreciate any support you guys can give me. Comments, donations, turning off your ad block...I only made \$15 for July (from ads).

The word I would like to teach today is: 在. 在 indicates where something is or the location of something or what you're currently doing. 在 school means at school. 在 sleeping means currently sleeping. 在 table means on the table. You can type 在 by typing "zai". We do not have prepositions in Chinese: on, at, in, etc.

Chapter 48

Since Lin Shan didn't really have any other choice, she could only follow the old servant. They walked straight up to the third floor. The old servant pushed open the door and gestured her to go inside.

Lin Shan was cautious with every step she took. When she turned around, the door had already been shut behind her. She felt like she was being separated from the real world. It was extremely quiet, and there was a faint scent of orchid in the room.

Huh? How come there's nobody here?

Lin Shan was confused. She took a couple of steps around the area but soon ended back at the entrance once more. She scattered her eyes around the room and noticed there was a circular table filled with goodies.

Eight treasure rice, osmanthus flower cake, sweet fermented sticky rice ball, angelica sinensis stew chicken....there were desserts and meat dishes!! Lin Shan's eyes gleamed. She was drooling.

Seeing the food, Lin Shan instantly recalled how she hadn't eaten lunch yet.

Her stomach started to growl.

Du Hao is such a jerk! He tells me to come for a meal, yet he isn't here. Does he want me to suffer from looking at this?

Lin Shan hesitated for a bit longer. But after awhile, Du Hao still hadn't arrived. She was unable to resist the temptation in front of her, and she bravely took a few steps forward. Like a thief, she reached out and took the closest walnut cake to her.

The cake was rich in flavour and soft to eat. Lin Shan couldn't help but silently praised: Delicious!

She quickly gobbled the rest of the walnut cake. Seeing how Du Hao still hadn't arrived, she decided to head for butter cookie platter. She took a bite. It was sweet, yet non greasy; loose yet crispy. So heavenly!!

Lin Shan was enjoying herself so much that she didn't realized a person had stopped behind her. His mouth was curved into a smile as he watched her eat without the least bit of apprehension.

Lin Shan was half way through her butter cookie when the person behind her spoke up: "Does it taste good?"

That one line frightened her so much that she gulped the whole thing in her mouth. She nearly choked.

cough cough After coughing vigorously, Lin Shan turned around and glared at Du Hao. She noticed that he had switched to a greenish black gown. His complexion was completely opposite of it was when he struggled in the waters.

Wow, he's definitely the Crown Prince. Even his healing abilities are stronger than a regular citizen. Lin Shan thought to herself.

Du Hao opened his mouth: "Why aren't you eating?"

Eat your sister! I was nearly frightened to death by you!

Lin Shan pointed at Du Hao angrily and gave him a warning stare.

This reaction did not bother Du Hao. Instead, he pulled out the chair next to her and said: "Come. Sit down and eat slowly."

At this moment, Lin Shan's mind was flashing the words: Conspiracy!

Lin Shan was quite sure she knew Du Hao's personality by now. Treating her to a meal? Helping her pull out a seat? Thanking her for saving his life? You've got to be kidding me.

She was very skeptical as she sat down. The moment she sat down, Du Hao sat on the right seat next to her. They were sitting very closely together.

There's so much space! Sit further! Lin Shan silently fumed. She leaned her buttocks towards the left side. For the longest time, she didn't lift her chopsticks from the table.

Du Hao didn't force her. Instead, he picked up his own chopsticks and started eating on his own. The dishes were definitely one of the finest. The standard was even higher than the Imperial kitchen. Lin Shan could tell just from the aroma. Seeing Du Hao enjoying himself, she could barely restrain herself.

Umm.. so what if he has a conspiracy? I still need to be full in order to fight back! Thinking this, Lin Shan grabbed her chopsticks and started eating.

The moment Lin Shan started eating, Du Hao stopped. He poured himself a glass of wine and silently observed her. Although he was alright, he did nearly drown. He was mentally exhausted and his eyes looked far less intimidating from his usual self.

At this moment, Lin Shan's mental strength increased substantially.

Since I have decided to eat, I don't give a shit if you watch me! The more you watch, the more I shall eat! Plus, I'm not paying for the bill anyway!

This was definitely the first time Du Hao witnessed a woman eating so ridiculously. It was as if she did not give a damn about the rest of the world. The rules in the Palace did not apply to her. The way she ate was truly a gruesome sight. Yet, it was very interesting. The way she focused on the fish was comparable to a kitten. It was rather cute.

It wasn't just cuteness. Du Hao had experienced so much emotions from her. She stunned him. He missed her. He was disgusted by her. He was conflicted because of her. He wanted to push her away yet couldn't stay away. Sometimes, she made him laugh his ass off. But sometimes, she made him so angry that he

was speechless. It was as if he had used all his emotions on just her alone.

The feeling was too difficult to describe. However, he was certain of one thing. He truly liked her; regardless if it was the past or now.

Lin Shan didn't notice the change in Du Hao's gazes. Currently, she was too focused on eating the yummy dishes in front of her. She had bits of pastry powder stuck on her lips and she extended her tongue to lick it. She smiled with satisfaction as she reached out to take a second piece.

"There's more." Du Hao suddenly spoke up without thinking.

Huh? Lin Shan looked curiously at him.

"There." Du Hao pointed to the corner of her mouth.

Ohhh! Lin Shan extended her tongue again. She caught the pastry powder into her tongue and enjoyed the savory taste. Hence, she continued to lick happily....until Du Hao's finger touched the corner of her mouth. He wanted to get rid of the remaining bits.

Lin Shan was caught off guard. Her tongue ended up licking Du Hao's finger instead. At that moment, they were both shocked.

Du Hao's finger lingered on her mouth and his eyes deepened. It was as if there was something that wanted to pop out from his heart. He had always been the type that did whatever he wanted. He only thought about it for half a second, then he made his move.

The finger that was on Lin Shan's mouth slid down to her cheek and onto her chin. He lifted her chin and using another hand, he grabbed onto her nape.

Lin Shan felt a strong force hurling her forward. The next moment, her lips were firmly seized.

Du Hao's kiss was much more experienced compared to Lian Feng's. He lightly sucked her lips, and used his tongue to explore. The tip of his tongue was pressing against her pearly white teeth.

If Du Hao was less demanding, Lin Shan would probably still have been in a confused state. Just when she was about to pry open her mouth and accept the fiery kiss, she realized the one kissing her was Du Hao!

Therefore, she immediately rebelled and shoved Du Hao.

Since Du Hao was already in the moment, he wasn't going to let this opportunity go. Although Lin Shan was rejecting him, he didn't care. He used more force to make Lin Shan remain tightly in his embrace. However, that did not stop Lin Shan from fighting back. She refused to open her mouth no matter what.

Du Hao was starting to become frustrated. He decided to use one hand to pinch her cheeks together. There was no way Lin Shan could keep her mouth closed if he did that.

But the next moment, Lin Shan ruthlessly bit his lips.

Du Hao tasted blood and felt pain. He backed off and before he knew what was happening, Lin Shan slapped him. Although she didn't slap him very hard, this was the first time anyone had ever slapped him in his twenty something years. Therefore, it left a very profound impression. He froze.

Lin Shan had already gotten up from her seat. Her eyes were brimming with tears. She violently pushed Du Hao and said: "I hate you!" This was the first time she said a word for many days. As a result, although her voice was husky, it was filled with hatred.

Right after, Lin Shan turned around and ran out of the room in tears.

Promoted post: [Getting Personal](#)

Chapter 49

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Lasmy Lim** for his/her donation! I truly appreciate it. I haven't received a donation for a month now.. and every dollar counts!! Thank you for choosing to support me. ♥♥

The word I would like to teach today is 要. 要 means "want". 要 is a very important word because whenever you want to order something to eat or say what you want, you need to say the word. Interestingly enough, the bottom part of the word is 女 (female). Hmmm.. and if you want to type it, type "yao".

Chapter 49

Lin Shan ran back and hid in her room right after the incident.

Although she seemed carefree and random, she was very serious when it came to relationships. She hated to be forced into doing something she didn't want. She despised Du Hao for not respecting her.

Love isn't something that belonged to you just because you have power. You think you can dominate everything simply because you have authority? No!

After all, Lin Shan had been a modern person for twenty years. Her modern mindset was deeply rooted. Not only did Du Hao's kiss failed to get to her comply, it evoked a lot of negative emotions.

F*** you, Crown Prince! Lin Shan slammed the table. She wiped the tear stains off her face and yelled at herself: "Why the f*** are you crying? He has already kissed you. Are you going to chop off your mouth? Instead of crying, figure out a way to escape!"

That's correct! There's no way I'm staying here anymore. I'm leaving now!

At that moment, Lin Shan had made up her mind. She quickly lifted her mood and started packing her belongings.

By now, the sky was totally dark. Although the possibility of Du Hao coming was slim, the two Imperial guards were still guarding her room. Escaping will not

be an easy task.

However, that wasn't going to stop Lin Shan. If she can't leave through the door, she will climb out from the windows. As long as she could escape from the Crown Prince, she would even dig through a dog hole!

Lin Shan had suffered through a traumatic experience and did not care anymore. She packed up everything and waited in the room. When the Imperial bodyguards were switching shifts, it would be her opportunity to leave.

Outside the window was a garden. Currently, there were no guards patrolling because they were switching shifts. This was the optimal time to escape. Lin Shan was betting on the fact that she was tiny. Therefore, she was able to easily slip out from the window. After swiftly looking around her surroundings, she decided to follow the walls and headed north.

Honestly, Lin Shan was quite sensitive to her surroundings. By following the walls of the garden, there were many items for her to hide behind whenever she came across the guards. She managed to stay undetected due to her alertness.

By now, she was near the lotus pond from this morning. There was a huge tree by the wall.

Actually, Lin Shan noticed this tree earlier today. It was big and close enough to the wall. If she climbed on the tree, she could probably flip herself over the wall. Once she was outside the wall, it would no longer be part of the Crown Prince's residence. She would be free.

Lin Shan lifted her sleeves and started to climb.

This was not the first time Lin Shan climbed onto a tree. Her first time was at school. That day, she was late for class. Therefore, she tried to enter from the back by climbing onto a big tree as she flipped herself over the wall. However, the moment she landed, the Principal was standing right behind her.

The Principal laughed at her in a mocking manner and said: "Student. Your skills are quite good. Are you interested in performing during morning practice?"

Of course, that was all in the past. Elementary school was a long time ago, but her climbing skills were still sharp.

Lin Shan skillfully leaped from the tree branch onto the wall. However, she didn't realize that the wall from the Ancient times are made of different materials. Instead of stepping onto the flat surface of a modern wall, she stepped onto the wall tile. Her feet slipped and she tumbled down.

But at this crucial moment, someone strong suddenly caught her. Lin Shan only saw the sky spun. By the time she realized what had happened, she was in the air and a familiar scent went up her nose. It smelt like....

It was as if something was jabbing her heart. She widen her eyes and saw the crescent moon above the head. Underneath the hazy moonlight was a silver mask. The moonlight made it look extra unique.

Lian Feng?

Lin Shan thought she was dreaming. She pinched herself and felt pain. However, she still didn't believe it. She reached out to touch Lian Feng's face.

Lian Feng felt a bit awkward by Lin Shan's boldness and lightly placed her down. After hesitating for a slight moment, he reached out to fix her messy hair.

When his fingers touched her forehead, it felt warm and familiar. Lin Shan finally accepted that Lian Feng was in front of her. Her nose tingled and she flung her body against his and hugged him tightly.

Lian Feng was stiff because he didn't expect such a reaction. His heart felt touched because he could sense the warmth and the trust from Lin Shan. He calmly patted her twice on the back and quietly said: "Don't worry. I'm here."

But Lin Shan hugged him even tighter. Her face was still against his chest. He began to hear soft sounds of weeping.

She was crying? Lian Feng was shocked. He quickly held onto her two shoulders and pulled her into an embrace: "What's wrong?"

Lin Shan inhaled and wiped away her tears. She pulled onto Lian Feng's hand and said: "Take me away. I want to leave this place."

Her eyes were red. She must have gone through some difficulties. However, her eyes were very determined. At this moment, Lian Feng felt an urge to take Lin Shan far away and travel to the ends of the Earth.

“Alright.” Lian Feng nodded. He grabbed her hand and turned around.

At this moment, a shadow came out from behind the fake mountain* and blocked their path. The moonlight shone on him and stretched out his shadow. The greenish black gown looked as black as the night sky. It gave off a very heavy feeling.

“Lian Superior came to my residence at such a late hour, yet didn’t plan to say a word before leaving? Do I not matter in your eyes?” Du Hao said icily. He was smiling but the words he said had thrones. This was what you called, “shiver all over though not cold”.

Seeing Du Hao, Lin Shan immediately went on alert mode. Like a reflex, she hid behind Lian Feng.

Lin Shan’s reaction caused Lian Feng’s brows to crinkle. The moment he found out the Lin Shan was staying at the Crown Prince’s residence, he knew things weren’t so simple. Now that Du Hao had appeared, Lin Shan dashed behind him. Clearly, he must have done something to her.

Lian Feng could feel a slight tremble from Lin Shan’s hand. Lian Feng’s eyes turned as cold as ice. His other hand tightly held onto his sabre.

“Your Highness, you’re a smart individual. There are things I do not have to state so clearly.” He coldly replied.

“Oh, is that so?” Du Hao arched his brows. His eyes focused on Lin Shan, who was currently hiding behind Lian Feng. Du Hao’s eyes instantly darkened. “I think it’s best to make it clear.”

Lin Shan was scared at first but after seeing that accusing glance, as if she had committed adultery, she was immediately enraged.

You are already disrespectful. Now, you’re arrogant as well. You think the whole world has to do as you say? You’re just the Crown Prince! Originally, Lian Feng had an opportunity too!

Thinking of this, Lin Shan almost burst out in anger. But Lian Feng stopped her: “Don’t be rash.” He shook his head.

Lin Shan was very annoyed, but she seemed to have calmed down after Lian

Feng intervened.

Seeing them looked at each other pissed off Du Hao: “Come here. Return with me.” He said to Lin Shan.

Lin Shan naturally refused to follow. Instead, she pulled onto Lian Feng’s sleeves and took a step back.

Lian Feng protected her and firmly stated: “Your Highness, it is obvious that Prince Consort does not want to go back with you.”

“Doesn’t want to?” Du Hao lightly laughed. “Lian Superior, I’m afraid you have misunderstood. I’m not asking you guys for your preferences..I’m commanding you. Song Luo, come here!” Du Hao bellowed as he harshly glanced at Lin Shan; refusing to give the slightest amount of leeway.

“Your Highness, please do not force someone to do as you wish.” Lian Feng tightly gripped his sabre.

“And what if I will?” At that moment, Du Hao’s voice turned frigid. He pulled out the sword from around his waist and aimed straight at Lian Feng.

Lian Feng quickly reacted and used one hand to shove Lin Shan and the other to pull out his sabre. With a blink of an eye, the weapons were clashing against each other and sparkles could be seen.

The sounds of metal clashing interrupted the quiet night sky; even the moon seemed to be covered in a layer of hostility.

*fake mountain = man-made scenery in the palace.

Promoted post: [Wise words](#)

Chapter 50

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **Loreal Anderson** and **Mukurua** for their donations! Translating is so hard that ANY AMOUNT makes me feel very appreciated. It takes a lot of brain power and determination to keep translating. Thank you so much!

Secondly, this chapter was very interesting but awkward to translate. In Chinese, the Emperor actually always refer himself as the Emperor. But it sounds so stupid that I changed it a bit. They are always speaking in 3rd person...

Lastly, the word I'm teaching today is the word 去 go. Type "qu" in the pinyin keyboard. 去 is a very important word. 我要去 = I need/want to go 你要去 = You need/want to go 他要去 = He needs/wants to go 她要去 = She needs/wants to go (I need you guys to constantly review in order to retain the word in your mind)

Chapter 50

"Lian Superior, are you planning to go against me?" Du Hao threatened.

"Your Highness, you leave me with no choice." Lian Feng replied. He dodged a hit, and raised his sabre; the moonlight that was reflecting off his blade scattered.

Du Hao smirked: "Good timing. I've heard many great things about Lian Superior's abilities. Show me what you've got." Right after, Du Hao charged at Lian Feng. Lian Feng blocked the attack, and once again the two of them started to fight.

Lin Shan didn't expect the two of them to actually battle. Du Hao's sword play was bold and powerful. He was closing in. On the other hand, Lian Feng was lenient with his attacks. Thus, Lin Shan was very worried.

Lin Shan was angry because it was obvious that Lian Feng wasn't giving his best efforts. Yet, she was also concerned that he would be harmed.

After witnessing Du Hao's very close attempt of striking Lian Feng, Lin Shan

couldn't stand it any longer. She yelled from the bottom of her lungs: "Stop fighting!"

However, since her throat was injured, her voice honestly made no impact. Lin Shan panicked and without thinking, she lifted up her sleeves and stormed over.

Lian Feng didn't expect Lin Shan to storm over and was momentarily distracted. Du Hao's blade was heading straight for his chest. Everything happened in a matter of seconds. By the time Du Hao's sword stopped, Lin Shan had already stood in front of Lian Feng blocking him. Although her eyes showed fear, her legs did not waver at all.

Du Hao felt his heart tug. He never thought the woman he liked would stand in front of an Imperial bodyguard to block his own sword.

He couldn't even compete with an Imperial bodyguard? His heart ached, and the sword he held fell onto the ground.

The moment the sword fell onto the ground, Lin Shan snapped back to reality and quickly turned around to check on Lian Feng: "Are you alright? Did you get hurt? Where...?? Let me see???" She desperately tried to grab hold of his arm to check for injuries.

Lian Feng did not move at all. He stared at the anxious woman in front of him. Although he had thousand of words he wanted to say, only three words came out: "Are you crazy?" he hollered.

Lin Shan was too worried and responded casually: "I'm average. Good enough to get by."

Lian Feng literally wanted to cry and laugh at the same time. Regardless of when or where, Lin Shan always had the ability to destruct his most intense emotions. Sometimes, her immature actions would make him feel all warm. Although she was impulsive, it made him wanted to cherish and love her more. He wanted to protect her forever.

Was this fate?

While Lian Feng was in a daze, Gu Zuo suddenly appeared. "Your Highness....." He whispered in Du Hao's ears. Du Hao's expression immediately changed.

“Song Luo, return with me.” Du Hao ordered.

What the hell is wrong with his brain? Does he not understand the word no? Lin Shan’s first reaction was to lift her leg and kick Du Hao’s sword. However, one kick was not enough. She had to kick it a couple more times. If Lin Shan knew Du Hao’s sword was actually worth more than Lian Feng’s golden sabre, she would probably be crouching in a corner drawing circles against the wall.

“Stop.” Du Hao interfered. “Return with me. Ming Yue is missing.”

Du Ming Yue.... is missing? What happened?? Long story.

After returning from the ge lou, Du Ming Yue was very depressed. The more she thought about it, the more she felt like there was something going on between her husband and her brother.

Two men...alone...underneath the moon and dark silent sky...heavy rain... together in a room...clothes were in disarray... any element alone already sounded wrong. If you put them all together, it was downright dirty.

As Du Ming Yue analyzed her thoughts, she couldn’t help but remember how cold Song Luo had treated her after they were married. Even after when she had plastered herself on him, he seemed to take no interest in her. As a normal functioning man, how could he reject such a beautiful Princess like herself?

The only reasonable explanation was...Song Luo was interested in men!!

If it weren’t for an arranged marriage, Lin Shan couldn’t imagine any man wanting to marry the Princess.

Then again, Lin Shan couldn’t imagine a lot of things. She would never have thought a man would be so fearless that he would storm into the Palace -alone- just to see the Princess.

That unlucky man was He Lao San!

He Lao San’s love life was even more depressing than Du Ming Yue’s. At least, Du Ming Yue had loved a few people before. He Lao San didn’t even have an opportunity to love any woman until he mistakenly met Lin Shan.

Finally, he could look forward to love. But Lian Feng was too powerful as a rival. He Lao San couldn't compete in terms of status, martial arts, or looks.

Logically, He Lao San should have given up. Yet, he was bitter and suffered from lovesickness. He couldn't stop thinking of Lin Shan, and even his fan was unable to console his lonely heart. After battling in his head for a day, he decided to charge into the Palace to find his lover.

He Lao San thought it over. The reason why Lin Shan didn't like him was because he didn't come off strong enough. Didn't his big boss tell him? Women prefer men that dominate. He Lao San knew his weaknesses and strengths. He may be bad at literature and dance, but he definitely knew how to "come on strong" from his experiences as a mountain thief!

Therefore, He Lao San didn't bring anything else but a sack as he energetically skipped his way to the Palace to find his Princess Lin Shan.

As for Du Ming Yue, she was suffering tremendously from her imagination.

Oh God. I'm a Princess! Why can't I find a normal man to love? Bodhisattva! Buddha! Laozi! When will I, Du Ming Yue, find my true Prince!?!?!?

Just as Du Ming Yue was sighing to the moon alone, a sack fell from the sky and she was caught inside. He Lao San tossed the sack on his shoulders and said the most satisfying line he had said in the past twenty plus years.

"Mother! I've finally found a wife!"

Lin Shan and Du Hao quickly arrived back to the Palace. By now, the Emperor had been notified of the missing Du Ming Yue. He was currently in the Study screaming at all the guards responsible for the Princess's safety. Seeing Lin Shan's arrival made him even angrier. He slammed down his documents and shrieked: "As a Prince Consort, you can't even protect the Princess. Why do I need a son-in-law like you?"

This was the first time Lin Shan had seen the Emperor so furious. She didn't know how to react.

At that moment, Du Hao spoke up: "Father, please do not blame Prince

Consort. I told him to stay with me for a couple of days because we were having a lot of fun. That is the reason why he couldn't protect sister."

The Emperor did not expect his son to interfere. He became even more enraged: "Are you telling me that I've wronged him?"

"Your son does not mean to offend you, Father. I just want you to temporarily put the responsibility stuff aside. Currently, the most important task is to find sister, and give Prince Consort an opportunity to make up for his crime." Du Hao calmly replied.

"Make up for your crime, eh?" The Emperor coolly laughed. "Fine. I will give you the opportunity. Song Luo, take my command!"

Lin Shan was a clever soul and instantly got onto her knees: "Your subordinate, Song Luo, accepts the Imperial command!"

"I'm giving you ten days to find the Princess. If not, no need to return!"

Lin Shan was so emotional, she nearly cried. Emperor, you are truly too wise! Not returning would be awesome! Ideally, I would never return.

Then, the Emperor added his next line: "There is no need for you to return. Your father, mother, and brother also do not need to return. The day you find the Princess is the day your whole family can come back."

Lin Shan was almost paralyzed. Emperor, you're too cruel!

At that moment, Du Hao suddenly spoke up: "Your son is willing to assist the Prince Consort in locating Ming Yue."

"Alright. I didn't know your relationship with the Prince Consort was so good. If that's the case...come, my servant!"

Lian Feng was waiting right by the door. He immediately came in and knelt as he briefly looked at Lin Shan and said to the Emperor: "What can I do for you, my Emperor?"

"Lian Feng, I'm ordering you to lead the Imperial army to correspond with the Crown Prince and Prince Consort to locate the whereabouts of the Princess. You must ensure the Princess's safety. Error will be unacceptable."

"Your subordinate accepts your command."

Promoted post: [10 good questions](#)

Chapter 51

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **Joanne Hee** and **Josephine Foong** for their donations. Thank you so much for your words of encouragement. I am very thankful and grateful for your support!!

Secondly, I actually wanted to finish this chapter over the weekend but I was unable to. Sorry for the wait. It really hurts my brain to translate because Chinese and English are so different. Originally, I wanted to post another chapter tomorrow because tomorrow is my birthday. However, I don't have enough brain power to do so. If you would like to give me a bday gift, please write a review or give me a good rating on Novel Updates *if you enjoy the story. It would mean a lot to me. ♥

Lastly, I'm going to teach you guys the word "no" or "don't" 不 (depends on context). In Mandarin, we say "bu" if we want to say don't. So, "wo bu yao" = I don't want to. 我不要

You can find this word by typing "bu" in the pinyin keyboard. 不 不 不 不 不.

Chapter 51

Just like that, locating the Princess became the job of Lin Shan, Lian Feng, and Du Hao's. Lin Shan was very surprised by the outcome. When she left the Study, she felt relieved, but she was also anxious at the same time. Firstly, the Emperor only gave her ten days to find Du Ming Yue. Secondly, the two men that were supposed to help her just got into a fight prior to this. Could they really get along?

As expected, when Du Hao left the Study, he totally ignored Lian Feng and spoke exclusively to Lin Shan: "Don't worry. I'll make sure to help you find her." His voice was filled with confidence.

Lin Shan couldn't understand Du Hao's drastic change. Not only did he say good words for her in front of the Emperor, now he was voluntarily helping her. She didn't know what type of attitude she should have towards him. After pondering for awhile, she muttered, "Thanks."

“I don’t need you to thank me.” Du Hao stared at Lin Shan. Then, he swept a look at Lian Feng and stated: “I only want you to remember what I have done for you.” Immediately after, he left without turning back.

Lin Shan honestly couldn’t understand what was going through Du Hao’s mind. At that moment, Lian Feng walked up to her and said: “I’m going to plan out our route for tomorrow.”

After not seeing Lian Feng for such a long time, Lin Shan had a lot she wanted to say to him. However, since the situation was critical, she had no choice but to put her emotions aside. Instead, she asked: “What about me? What can I help with?”

“You?” Lian Feng looked at her and saw that her focus was scattered and lost. Clearly, she had gone through too many surprises in one day. He couldn’t help but reach out to push aside a strand of hair as he gently soothed: “Go and sleep. When the Sun rises, we will be busy.”

Lian Feng’s touch was warm and it had an unusually ability to calm her heart down. Lin Shan gazed up at the sky and sighed: Du Ming Yue oh Du Ming Yue. When you were here, everyone felt alive while you were gone. Now that you’re missing, we’re all goners unless you’re alive. You’re truly something!

— — —

“Ahhh-choo!” Princess Du Ming Yue sneezed.

Hearing movement from the sack, He Lao San was a bit worried: Am I too rough? The Princess might have a frail body. What if she can’t handle this?

Since he was already quite far from the Palace, he decided to find a remote place to open the sack to check on her.

The moment he unclasped the sack, his eyes nearly popped out.

What? Could it be that he had aged and his memory had gone bad? How come it was not the Princess he recognized? Oh no! It’s over! He had kidnapped the wrong person!

He Lao San felt very regretful and was planning to send her back, when Du Ming Yue suddenly threw herself on him.

“How dare you kidnap a Princess? You want to die? I’m going to beat you to death!” Du Ming Yue continuously beat He Lao San. She even used her nails and teeth. Her degree of viciousness was incomparable to an average person.

He Lao San didn’t expect the wrong Princess to be so violent. In addition, she was extraordinarily loud. At this rate, the guards will hear them! There was no other choice. He Lao San karate chopped her and strucked her unconscious. Since Du Ming Yue was not a martial artist, she naturally went limp and fell into He Lao San’s arms.

He Lao San felt like his heart was going to burst. Although this woman was rather violent, she looked damn good! She looked even better than Lin Shan.

Mother! There are this many pretty girls in the world?

The amount of women He Lao San had ever encountered could be counted with less than ten fingers. Now that there was a beauty in his hands, his heart surged once again.

Mother! Forget it. If it’s the wrong one, just let it be. At least it’s still a woman! When you turn off the lights, they’re all the same! He Lao San beamed. He removed his first love Lin Shan from his heart as he covered Du Ming Yue with the sack again and carried her out of the Capital.

Lin Shan had no idea that Du Ming Yue had been kidnapped by He Lao San. She was currently worrying about the deadline. If they were unable to find the Princess within ten days, then her family will be in deep trouble. Therefore, the moment the Sun came up, Lin Shan, Lian Feng and the Imperial army were ready to head out of the Palace.

After leaving the Palace, Lin Shan and Lian Feng ran into Du Hao along the way. Du Hao also had people with him. The atmosphere suddenly became very awkward.

“To save time, I have already ordered Gu Zuo to handle the west side of the Capital. Lian Superior should bring the Imperial army to the north side. The Prince Consort will accompany me to seek from the east and south side. Any objections, Lian Superior?” Although Du Hao was asking, his tone suggested it was the finalized decision.

Lian Feng didn't decline, but he didn't agree either. He only gazed at Lin Shan and said: "The Prince Consort and I have already decided to team up together."

"Is that so?" Du Hao arched his brows as he looked at Lin Shan.

The two of them turned towards her, and Lin Shan was speechless.

What? How come she's the one who's deciding? If she goes with Lian Feng, Du Hao would definitely get jealous and hate Lian Feng even more. But if she goes with Du Hao, who knows what moves he would try to make on her? Too dangerous!

Lin Shan thought about it for a second, then her eyes lit up: "I know!! How about you two team up and I'll go north on my own."

"No!" The two of them bellowed in unison.

At this crucial moment, another voice could be heard: "I think the Prince Consort's idea is quite good." The voice consisted of 30% laughter and 70% charm. It was obvious who it was.

Yup, it was the Third Prince, Du Jing!

Lin Shan felt twisted on the inside. Why was Du Jing joining in? But at this moment, his appearance made it easier for her to get out of this difficult situation: "Third Prince is correct. You guys team up and I'll be on my own!"

"Who says you'll be alone?" Du Jing smiled. "Prince Consort, you have me. I don't have an army or personal guards with me, but I can still help out. Wouldn't you say, Prince Consort?" He narrowed his eyes as he smirked. He looked like a sneaky weasel.

However, Lin Shan didn't care anymore. Based on the current situation, being with a sneaky weasel was better than choosing between Du Hao and Lian Feng. Therefore, she gritted her teeth and said: "It has been decided. I am going to team up with the Third Prince!"

Although Lin Shan had trust issues with Du Jing, at least Du Jing was still a Prince. If she chose him, she wouldn't have to be alone with Du Hao and she could prevent Lian Feng from getting into deeper troubles with the Crown Prince. Perhaps she wasn't in the best position, but it was still the better

choice...or so she thought.

They have only walked for a bit when suddenly Du Jing started picking at hairpins from a stall on the streets.

The hairpin peddler's eyes lit up the moment he saw the embroidered magnificent clothing on Du Jing. It was as if a hunter had just witnessed a wild boar. He wouldn't stop praising the hairpin that Du Jing was holding:

"This Master sure knows his stuff. This hairpin was manufactured in Japan! It is made from white jade. Look at this quality! Look at the colour!! It is only thirty silver taels!"

What? Thirty silver taels? Lin Shan nearly spat out blood. Wu Liang Zhi hired an assassin to kill off the Emperor for twenty silver taels. Yet you're trying to sell this cheap ass hairpin for thirty silver taels? It's worth more than the Emperor's life!

Lin Shan knew the peddler wasn't honest and she was anxious about finding the Princess, hence, she tried to walk away. However, Du Jing stopped her. Don't underestimate this pretty boy, he was actually quite strong. Du Jing easily pulled Lin Shan right back.

"Don't be rushed, brother. I think this hairpin is quite nice. Let me buy it before we go." Du Jing calmly stated as he started to fish out his wallet.

What? Are you as stupid as a pig?

The peddler's eyes were shining as he saw the banknotes in Du Jing's hands. Just as he was about to reach for it, the banknotes were rudely taken away from him.

"Thirty silver taels for a shitty hairpin? Are you a pig? Can't you tell it hasn't even been grinded evenly?" Lin Shan yelled at Du Jing. She had the banknotes in her hand as she gave the peddler a dirty look: "One price. Twenty coins!"

Twenty....coins? The peddler's face turned grey. It took him awhile to respond: "Um.... this Master...this is top....."

"Japanese jade, right?" Lin Shan continued the sentence for him. "I'll add another five coins. If you don't want it, too bad. Let's go!" Then, Lin Shan grabbed onto Du Jing to leave.

The peddler was desperate and quickly said: “Wait! Please add another ten coins. It’s not easy to do business!”

Lin Shan stopped and turned around: “Five coins.”

“Eight coins.”

“Six coins.”

The peddler bit his teeth: “Fine. Fine. Take it! Ughh.. what a shitty deal....”

Just like that, a hairpin that was initially going to cost thirty silver taels ended up at the value of thirty one coins. While they were exchanging the money, Lin Shan shamelessly convinced the peddler to give it to them for a coin less. The peddler nearly kneeled down to call him grandpa*.

When Lin Shan gave Du Jing the hairpin, she thought he would be fine now and will move on to find Du Ming Yue. However, instead, the moment he caught the hairpin, he lightly threw it. The hairpin looked like arc as it spun in the air, but when it striked the ground, it shattered into pieces.

Lin Shan didn’t expect Du Jing to react this way. She was stunned. At this moment, Du Jing approached her closely. He placed his arm around her shoulders in a very openly manner. Lin Shan tried to pull away but couldn’t move him at all.

“Brother. Do you know why I did this?” His voice slurred. The way Du Jing was stretching his words made the listener felt like it was a paralysis. Lin Shan felt very uneasy.

“Honestly, the value of the hairpin is not determined based on its colour and quality. It depends on the person. If I say it is worth thirty silver taels, it is worth thirty silver taels. If I think it is worth less than a coin, then I can shatter its life. Wouldn’t you say....? Song -” The smile from Du Jing’s face disappeared as he said the last two words, “Young Lady.”

*I just translated as is....it sounds so weird. Sorry.

Promoted post: [The story of two families](#)

Chapter 52

To my dear readers,

It has almost been a week since my last release. I'm so sorry. I have been feeling quite unwell lately so I had no energy to translate. Thank you for being patient. In addition, thanks for all your sweet birthday wishes. I really appreciate all the nice comments I get. ♥

The story is gonna get more interesting soon...

Anyhow, the term I would like to teach today is 有没有. This basically means "Do you have?" However, if I were to literally translate, it would be "yes no" haha 有没有 can be typed if you type in "you mei you" in the pinyin keyboard. However, in the real world, it actually sounds more like "yo may yo" lol So whenever you're asking for something, you can say 有没有 _____?

Chapter 52

Lin Shan was trying to break from Du Jing's grasp when suddenly it was as if her body had been shocked by lightning.

How...how did he find out?

Just as Lin Shan's mind was going blank, Du Jing had already reverted to his smiling face. He casually said: "Aaaii, we've been looking for awhile. I am feeling kind of tired. Why don't we go for a drink at the Leaning Vermillion House? My treat." He laughed as he dragged Lin Shan with him.

Lin Shan had never been so anxious before. Even when Du Hao found out about her identity, she wasn't as worried. But today, facing the secretive Third Prince, Lin Shan felt a fear that she had never experienced before.

How did he find out she was female? When did he find out? Why didn't he tell others her secret? What was his motive??

Lin Shan's mind was spinning with questions. Next thing she knew, they had already arrived at the Leaning Vermilion House.

Once the ladies saw the rich clients, they swarmed around them so tightly that

not even a drop of water could leak through. The Third Prince's name was being called left and right in a very winey and flirtatious manner. Lin Shan crinkled her brows but didn't say a word.

What does he want from me? Currently, that was the question that Lin Shan was struggling with. Logically, he had more money than her. Physically, she shouldn't be his type. As for family background, his and hers were incomparable. What could he want from her?

While Lin Shan was caught up in her thoughts, Du Jing had already lifted the wine cup facing her: "Come, brother. Drink with me." His voice was rather courteous and there weren't any hints of threats.

Lin Shan didn't touch the wine cup on the table.

"What's wrong? Are you afraid I have drugged your drink?"

Of course I'm afraid. It isn't the first time you have drugged drinks! Lin Shan shouted from the inside. However, she responded with: "Of course not. I didn't sleep well last night so I do not have much of an appetite."

"Third Prince. He doesn't want to drink with you. But I'll drink with you!" The beauties around Du Jing started to flirt.

"Alright. I have beauties to accompany with my wine, of course I will give face?!" Du Jing smiled. Therefore, he started drinking with the beauties. In fact, he was enjoying himself so much that he had one on each arm.

Originally, Lin Shan was very worried. Now that Du Jing wasn't giving her any attention but drinking casually with these women, she was going nuts. Time was ticking and ten days will past by in no time. They still had no idea where the Princess was. What if her parents get send to exile? How will they be able to handle the hardship?

Thinking of this, Lin Shan was bitter. Even if she didn't die now, it will happen ten days from now. If that was the case, she might as well go all out.

Pa A crispy sound was heard. A cup had been harshly thrown onto the ground as it broke into pieces.

The laughter from the ladies died down as they all stared at Lin Shan.

“Du Jing. What the hell do you want from me?” That was Lin Shan’s first line. All the ladies had clueless expressions on their faces.

“You were the one who tried to get on better terms with me. Now you purposely bring me to this prostitution place. What is your motive?” That was Lin Shan’s second line. Now, everyone just looked shocked.

“Could it be because I have rejected you from the past, and now you purposely want to get revenge?” That was Lin Shan’s third line. By now, everyone was just waiting for a good show. You can’t blame them though. How often would the prostitutes get to hear gossips from the Royal family? This was very satisfying for the lonely hearts of the beauties.

Although he was at the centre of attention, Du Jing wasn’t angry. Instead, he laughed. At first, he laughed lightly. However, he started laughing louder and louder. Just when everyone was mind blown from the laughter, Du Jing suddenly stopped. His eyes flashed and he icily said: “Leave the room.”

Du Jing’s face changed faster than a face changer. All the beauties in the rooms left, except for Lin Shan. She firmly lifted her head up and looked straight into Du Jing’s eyes. It felt like a scene from the battle royale.

However, very quickly, her heart started to beat like a drum. Initially, she thought Du Jing was a smiling tiger. But now, she realized that he was entirely two different people when he wasn’t smiling. Currently, Du Jing no longer seemed seductive, but demonic. Lin Shan could only sense danger.

At this rate, she was going to go crazy. She needed to get some stuff cleared up before she turned insane: “Third Prince. A bright person will not talk in a hidden manner. What do you want? Be swift and get to the point.”

Du Jing didn’t say a word. After coldly looking at Lin Shan, he could sense her timid heart. Eventually, he responded: “Honestly, it’s not a big deal. I just want to borrow something from Song second lady.”

Conspiracy! Lin Shan acted cool and reserved: “Third Prince. Which item do you want?” Deep inside, she was prepared. She was waiting for Du Jing to say something like the sunflower treasury, heavenly dragon, treasure map or some sort.

But instead, Du Jing said: “Last time, the Emperor granted you the Heaven stone. I’m wondering where you placed it.”

Lin Shan almost broke down in tears. You nearly scared me half to death for that piece of shitty rock? First, you wanted the golden sabre. Then, you stole my horse carriage. Now, you won’t stop for a rock? You’re a Prince! Wow, grow up!?

If Du Jing knew the real reason why Gui Mei couldn’t find the Heaven stone after searching the entire residence was because Xiao Lu had used it to cover a mouse hole, he would probably spit blood.

“Third Prince, you want the Heaven stone, right? No problem!” Lin Shan looked at Du Jing. “I can give you the stone, but only if you help me find the Princess within ten days. If not, the stone will be buried with me!”

“Are you threatening me?” Du Jing narrowed his eyes. He looked annoyed.

“Third Prince. You’re thinking too much. The value of the Heaven stone depends on the eye of the beholder. If the Third Prince thinks it’s not worth a dime, then you can openly tell the world about my identity. However, if the Third Prince thinks it’s more valuable than a city, why can’t I use it for an exchange?”

Du Jing didn’t expect the slow Song Luo to be so sharp. His eyes revealed a look of surprise that was rarely seen. Then, he flashed his famous smile back onto his face.

He lightly laughed and said: “Ok. Deal.”

Time flew by and there were less than five days left. The Palace sent out all they could and flipped the Capital upside down, but still couldn’t find a trace of the Princess.

The Emperor was furious. He summoned Lin Shan a couple of times and caused her mental damage. Lin Shan knew her luck was over. If she failed to find the Princess, her whole family was doomed. Therefore, she looked day and night nonstop. Yet, she couldn’t find any clues.

By the seventh day, there were still no news of Du Ming Yue. And Du Jing had disappeared despite promising her that he would find the Princess. Since the deadline was fast approaching, Lin Shan couldn’t wait any longer and suggested to Du Hao to search on the outskirts of the Capital.

Outside of the Imperial city was the Black Dragon Mountain. The chances of being in danger was actually far higher than the chances of finding a person. Hence, Du Hao naturally refused. But Lin Shan was determined. She didn't give a shit. She decided to secretly go and search without telling Du Hao. However, the guards stopped her at the Palace gate.

It turned out that Du Hao had predicted her actions. Now, she does not have permission to leave the Palace.

Lin Shan was shrieking: "How dare you? I have an Imperial order to find the Princess. How dare you block me?"

The door guards looked at each other and looked very uncomfortable: "Prince Consort. Please do not make our jobs difficult. We were ordered from above to not allow you to leave the Palace. If the Emperor gave you permission, then you should give us or show us proof. If not, it would make it very hard for us to explain to our boss."

Proof? Lin Shan wanted to wail. The past couple of times she saw the Emperor, he was either screaming or threatening her. If she had any proof, it would probably be the ink slab he threw at her yesterday.

Is this really the end of my life? Lin Shan was depressed. Just when it felt like all was lost, the sound of a horse hissing could be heard. It sounded awfully familiar.

Lin Shan turned around and saw Wu Ying's shiny black hair and proud head. He rudely neighed at her.

Wow, even an animal is bullying me? Lin Shan was raging. Then, she heard Lian Feng's voice: "Come up." He reached out his hand for her.

Lin Shan was stunned but she reached out her hand. Immediately, she felt a strong force pulling her up as she leaped onto the horse.

This was the first time she had gotten on a horse like this. Therefore, her reaction was very slow. By the time she knew what was happening, she heard Lian Feng coldly telling the guards to: "Move aside."

Lian Feng's status was different from Lin Shan's. He was their boss's boss. The guards obediently got out of the way and opened the gates.

Wu Ying whined and stormed out of the Palace. With a blink of an eye, only a few tiny guards could be seen along with the dust generated from the horse's hoof.

Promoted post: [More Q and A](#)

Chapter 53

To my dear readers,

Translating is so hard. Please support me if you can. My brain feels fried.

P.S. Do you guys still want me to teach you Chinese? Is anyone actually trying to learn?

Chapter 53

Wu Ying's speed was astonishingly fast. He quickly zoomed by the busy city streets, as if there were no one around. Lin Shan only heard the wind whistling by her ears. The ride was extremely bumpy and to prevent herself from falling, she had to tightly wrapped her arms around Lian Feng's waist. Shortly after, they arrived at the South city gate.

Outside the city gate were already a few men and horses waiting. The moment they noticed Lian Feng, they promptly got off their horses to greet him.

"Superior, we have already assigned the troops to their rightful spots. They are currently waiting outside of the city. This is the full map of Black Dragon Mountain. Please take a look."

A soldier quickly came over and handed Lian Feng a map.

Lian Feng looked over the map and ordered: "This mission is critical. Our time is tight and the area is dangerous. We must proceed according to our plan. Fireworks will be used to communicate. If we do not bump into each other by noon on the third day, we will meet at the foot of the mountain on the North side. Do you understand?"

"Your subordinates understand!"

"Good. Let's go!" Lian Feng commanded and flipped himself back on the horse as it sped out of the Capital.

At this moment, Lin Shan realized Lian Feng had already done all the preparations to search outside of the Capital. For days, she had been depressed. But now, she finally saw some hope. She felt touched and couldn't help but snug

against Lian Feng.

After awhile though, she suddenly felt nauseous.

Could it be that she was holding on too tightly? Lin Shan tried to loosen her grip, but felt a burst of dizziness. She nearly fell off the horse.

Lian Feng was focused on finding Ming Yue when he suddenly realized Lin Shan was acting out of the ordinary. He briskly pulled on the reins and turned his head back to look at her. He noticed Lin Shan's face was turning white, and her body was shaking so violently that she was practically falling off the horse.

He hastily leaped off the horse and steadily picked her up and hugged her.

The woman in his arms seemed lighter than before. She looked withered and stressed. When she crinkled her brows, it made others concerned. Yet, she refused to admit her weakness. Lin Shan mischievously laughed: "It's alright.. I'm just a bit dizzy from the horse..."

Actually, Lin Shan had a rather sad life. In her previous life, she often got carsick and seasick. In this life, she got horsesick.

Seeing her like this, Lian Feng no longer wanted to rush the search. Instead, he quickly found a shady tree for Lin Shan to rest under. He poured some water on a handkerchief and wiped her face.

After awhile, Lin Shan's condition slowly improved. She pulled on Lian Feng's arm and exclaimed: "Why are we stopping? We have to keep searching!"

Despite her poor condition, Lin Shan was determined to find the Princess. Clearly, she meant business. Lian Feng helped her wipe away the sweat and said: "Your body is weak. We will rest for a bit longer before we search."

"Who says I'm weak?" Lin Shan was agitated. "I'm totally fine! I can run faster than a horse!" She tried getting up but ended up stumbling into Lian Feng's arms.

The touch of her soft body made Lian Feng blushed. He speedily steadied her and wanted to console her not to push herself. However, he swallowed his words because he could tell how anxious she was. Although Lin Shan seemed thoughtless and a gold digger most of the time, deep down, she was a kind

hearted girl.

“Haha. I sat for too long so my legs are numb....” Lin Shan dryly laughed as she tried to put on a front. She pulled on Lian Feng’s arm again: “Let’s go. It will be dark soon.”

Lian Feng finally gave in. He grabbed onto Wu Ying and said: “You sit in the front.”

Sit in the front? Doesn’t that mean he will have to hold me tight? Wow, I guess being horsesick has its benefits. Not bad!

Thinking of this, Lin Shan felt super alert and got onto the horse with the help of Lian Feng.

Lian Feng was being considerate of Lin Shan’s condition and decided to ride slowly and took the more steady route proceeding forward.

Honestly, the reason why Lian Feng sent so many troops outside the Capital was because he heard from a reliable source there was sighting of the Princess. This was actually aligned with Lin Shan’s prediction. Therefore, he decided to take the risk and search beyond the Capital.

Leaving the Capital was a last resort because Black Dragon Mountain was a vast area. The jungle covered the majority of the area, and humans were rarely seen. In addition, there were many poisonous snakes and dangerous beasts around. The local people called this area the black forest. The chances of finding a person in the black forest was very slim.

But there was no time left. Even if the chances of finding a person was one out of ten thousands, Lian Feng was willing to try for Lin Shan. Although, Lian Feng didn’t expect Lin Shan to secretly tried to go off and search on her own. Fortunately he caught her, or else the aftermath would have been inconceivable.

“When we enter the forest, you must not leave my side at any time. Understand?” Lian Feng reminded Lin Shan right outside of the black forest.

“I understand!” Lin Shan nodded solemnly.

Who would walk alone in this creepy place? Even if you put a knife on me, I wouldn’t!

Lian Feng felt slightly relieved by Lin Shan's obedience. After making a simple arrangement, he split his people into six groups and entered the forest.

The route had already been marked on the map. In order to prevent from getting lost, anywhere that hadn't been marked was restricted. Regardless, Lin Shan was freaking out from the tall strange plants that surrounded them. She cautiously stayed by Lian Feng's side.

By now, the Sun was starting to set. According to the map, there should be a hunting village if they kept heading going straight. Lian Feng decided they should stay there for the night as well as ask the hunters if they noticed Du Ming Yue nearby.

Unfortunately, since the black forest was very remote, the map was evidently out of date. By the time they had arrived at their destination, the village that was supposed to be there was long gone. Plants from the wild had already taken over most of the land. Many of the wooden houses couldn't restrain from the harsh wind and had already collapsed. There were still a few remaining, but the conditions were terrible.

By now, the Sun had set. The surrounding forest was starting to come alive with voices of animals and insects. It sounded rather eerie.

Lin Shan had watched many horror films from the past. What she was currently experiencing could be taken straight out of the movies. She couldn't help but shiver as she tightly grabbed onto Lian Feng's sleeves. She vigilantly looked around her surroundings.

"Looks like we'll have to stay here for the night." Lian Feng stated. He looked towards the least broken house and asked: "How about this one?"

Lin Shan lifted her eyes and almost wailed. What? This is a house?

All the tiles from the house had fallen off, the windows were dangling, and the door was a piece of board!

"This house is too worn out. Are you sure? Perhaps the moment we go in, it will collapse." Lin Shan mumbled. Before she finished her sentence, there was a rumbling sound.

The house then collapsed....

Everyone was shocked.

Silence.

Lin Shan snapped out of it and dryly joked: “Haha. Good thing we didn’t go in yet.....”

Everyone: “.....”

Just as everyone was staring at the collapsed house, suddenly an old monstrous voice could be heard: “Ai ya, another one collapsed....”

“Ghost!” Lin Shan shrieked like a pig being slaughtered. She grabbed onto Lian Feng’s sleeves and tried to sprint. But within two steps, she was pulled back by Lian Feng like a little duckling.

“Why are you afraid? It’s a human.”

Human? Lin Shan was flabbergasted. She reluctantly opened her eyes and realized the ghost was actually a white haired old woman. The old woman was currently glaring at her.

“What ghost? You’re the ghost!” screeched the woman. Although she was old, she sounded quite lively while yelling.

After the old woman took a look at the group of people around Lin Shan and Lian Feng, she spoke in the regional dialect and demanded: “Who are you people? Why are you here?”

Out of the group, there was a soldier that grew up in Black Dragon Mountain. Therefore, he instantly went up to explain the situation. Lin Shan only heard gibberish and couldn’t understand a word.

At the end, the soldier went back to report to Lian Feng: “Superior. This old lady is the village head of this place. She said all the villagers have moved out and left. Her house is the only one that has remained. She said her wooden house is nearby, and she is willing to let us stay for the night...however...” The soldier stopped and looked troubled.

“However, what?” Lian Feng questioned.

“The old lady said her home isn’t big enough for all of us. Therefore, someone has to sleep in the firewood room.”

“That’s fine. I’ll go.” Lian Feng nodded.

“No....” The soldier awkwardly looked at the person next to Lian Feng.

Since the soldier was looking at her, Lin Shan reacted right away.

What the hell!? That old woman wants me to sleep in the firewood room?
What the f***!? Just because I called her a ghost?

Lin Shan stared at the old woman and the woman just happened to be glaring at her. It was as if she was saying: Take that, you little! Calling me a ghost, eh? You regret it now, don’t you?

Lin Shan returned her dirty look: Granny. You’re not a ghost. You’re scarier than a ghost!

Clearly, the strange village head had decided to go against Lin Shan. Regardless of how they tried to negotiate, she refused to bend. Therefore, Lin Shan had no choice but to admit defeat. At least, she had a firewood room to sleep in. It was better than sleeping on top of a tree.

Once everyone knew they had a place to stay, they were happy. Like a swarm of bees, everyone followed the old woman.

Lian Feng slowed down and turned around to whisper to Lin Shan: “I’ll come stay with you tonight.”

Hehe. This is what you call “Misfortune turning into good fortune”! When I get horsesick, I get wrapped in an embrace. When I sleep in a firewood room, I get company. What is delightful love? This is delightful love!

Lin Shan was beaming on the inside. She slyly blinked at Lian Feng and caused him discomfort.

What’s wrong with this girl? She’s even content with sleeping in a firewood room?

Little did he know, Lin Shan was hitting on him.

Promoted post: [A society with messed up values](#)

Chapter 54

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **anonymous** and **Tee Yining** for their donations. I am grateful for any amount. Thank you for choosing to support me. ♥

Secondly, this chapter was quite good in my opinion. The author really knows how to surprise the readers. By the way, please remember that I have shortened the chapters to my own version. So if you're reading the Chinese versions, the chapters will not be aligned. (Despite my shorten version, it's still very long. -_-")

Thirdly, I will continue teaching you guys Chinese since some readers appreciate it. The phrase I want to teach today is 在哪里. I means, "Where?" In Chinese, you say the object or place you want to find before the word 在哪里. So for example, *name of restaurant* 在哪里? *school* 在哪里? So don't be surprised if you see some Chinese people asking, "Toilet, where?" Haha. It's the backwards grammar. You can type 在哪里 by typing "zai na li"

Chapter 54

Although the old lady was odd, her home was in alright living conditions. Based upon observations, she practiced medicine. The entire house was filled with herbal medicine.

The old lady also had a partner. Her husband was a white haired old man. He was much more welcoming compared to the old woman. He insisted on pouring water for them to drink. However, Lian Feng kindly refused.

After all, this was a deserted area. They must be careful and not let their guards down. Lin Shan could understand Lian Feng.

"By the way, have you seen a seventeen to eighteen years old young lady appearing nearby?" Lian Feng didn't forget to ask about the whereabouts of Du Ming Yue.

"A young lady?" The old man smiled and shook his head, "Why would there be a young lady in this area? Witches, pheasants, and snakes are likely to be seen though."

“There’s no young lady, but there’s a female ghost!” The old woman coldly interrupted and gave Lin Shan a dirty look.

Wow, come on, granny! You’re so freaking old and still holding on grudges. Ugghh.

Lin Shan felt a bit helpless and didn’t say a word. She recklessly ate some dried food and started to feel sleepy. They had travelled the entire day, plus she had also gotten horsesick along the way. Hence, she was deathly tired.

Unfortunately, the old woman was stubborn and the moment she heard Lin Shan was tired, she led her to the firewood room without saying a word.

Lin Shan was annoyed. Although the house was small, it could fit a couple more people if necessary. The granny just had to make her sleep in the firewood room. What a nasty woman. She clearly wanted revenge.

“Never mess with a woman!” Lin Shan reminded herself as she followed the old lady into the room.

The firewood room was shabby, but at least it was clean. Lin Shan didn’t care anymore. She noticed a pile of hay from the corner and she stacked them together as she sat on it. She was going to wait for Lian Feng to come so they could have their sweet alone time together. But she was so exhausted that she fell asleep on top of the hay before Lian Feng arrived.

Lin Shan had no idea how long she fell asleep for. She was half asleep when she heard the door opened. She drowsily looked up, and with the help of the moonlight, she saw the familiar mask and relaxed immediately. She waited until Lian Feng sat down next to her. Then she pounced on him without holding back.

Mm...a meat pillow was definitely much more comfortable. Soft and warm! Lin Shan felt very cozy and continued to sleep. She kept rubbing against Lian Feng to find the most comfortable position.

Lian Feng didn’t move at all as he waited Lin Shan to find her most satisfying spot. She was like a tiny kitten in his arms. He placed his arm on her shoulder.

Her shoulder was so thin. Compared to the previous times he had wrapped his arms around her, she had lost a size. Although she was lying on his chest, it was as if she had no bones. Lian Feng felt terrible.

The Emperor had been summoning Lin Shan daily to yell at her. Any normal human being would be mentally traumatized. Not to mention, Lin Shan was a woman. The fact she could still get up and continue with life was already quite impressive.

Lin Shan told him she had the “xiao qiang”* mindset; the harder you beat it, the stronger it becomes.

Xiao qiang? Certainly, she was “cheng qiang”**. Thinking of this, Lian Feng felt helpless. He looked down and watched her sleep. Lin Shan’s baby face was so thin that her chin was starting to look pointy. He couldn’t help but stroke her face.

At this very moment, Lin Shan was dreaming. She dreamt there was a huge cake in front of her face. It looked so delicious that she was drooling. The cream on the cake was so good. Holy shit! She started licking and biting.

However, the moment she bit on it, it felt very hard. Whatever. Continue!

An “Ahh” could be heard from her ears.

Lin Shan woke up from surprise. It was then she realized that she wasn’t eating any cake. She was eating Lian Feng’s finger! Lian Feng looked like he was in pain as his brows were crinkled. Lin Shan was startled.

She felt bad and tried to make it up to Lian Feng by sucking his finger.

This sudden movement caused Lian Feng’s body to shake. The pain instantly vanished. Instead, it was replaced with a fiery heat that was coming up from the bottom.

Lin Shan was still clueless. Since Lian Feng’s brows were no longer crinkled, she assumed her method was working. Therefore, she started lightly licking his finger. As she licked, she gazed lovingly at Lian Feng. Her gaze was trying to say, “There, there. It doesn’t hurt anymore, right?” It was extremely innocent, but she suddenly realized something was wrong with her gesture. Her mind became alert as she looked shockingly at Lian Feng.

They made eye contact and Lin Shan fully woke up.

Oh my heavens! What did I just do? Her face turned boiling red. She quickly

tried to look away but Lian Feng grasped her chin. He was very rough as he quickly pushed his tongue in her mouth.

At this very moment, Lin Shan's mind was totally blank. She could feel her body being pressed further and further down. The hay couldn't sustain their weight, and she could only tightly hold onto a few strands. Her entire body had nearly sunk into the hay.

This was what you call "dry firewood turning into a blaze". Lin Shan felt like she was suffocating. All her remaining strength was being taken away by the kiss.

Her hands and legs were weak, her mind was blank, all her movements were automatic reflexes. Her heart felt like it was sinking and all her problems also seemed to disappear.

Right now, only desired remained.

The hay was now an utter mess. Lin Shan had fell on it when Lian Feng kissed her. But he wasn't satisfied. As he deepened the kiss, his hands continued exploring. Lin Shan's waist belt was coming loose and her entire shoulder was sticking out. She felt a bit of pain from the rough pointy hay, but disregarded it. At the moment, the situation looked unstoppable...

But suddenly, Lin Shan felt an item stabbing her. It was definitely not hay. It was a hard object. Her mind started to clear and she reached out to pat Lian Feng.

"Wait... wait a second...there's something...."

It was very difficult for Lian Feng to stop. He was annoyed. "What is it?"

Lin Shan took a deep breath and pointed: "There's something stabbing my back." She turned and noticed a shiny object amongst the hay. Based on Lin Shan's sensitivity towards expensive things, she knew right away it was gold!

Lin Shan's eyes shone and she quickly reached out and dug. It was a golden hairpin! In addition, there were precious stones on it. The design was also very well done.



The golden hairpin probably looked something like this.

This must be worth a lot. Wow! I even found gold here!? My luck is pretty damn good!

Lin Shan used her mouth and blew onto the hairpin to clear off the dust. She was ready to stuff it into her pocket when Lian Feng reached out and took the hairpin from her.

“This is not part of the dowry!” Lin Shan was anxious as she tried to grab it back.

Lian Feng stopped her. His face became very solemn. He lowered his voice: “This is from the Palace.”

Palace? Lin Shan was a bit puzzled by his words. However, since Lian Feng was so serious, she swiftly snapped out of it.

Oh true! This was a remote area. Plus, this was a firewood room. Why the hell would there be a golden hairpin here? Judging by the material, this was definitely not something a normal citizen could afford. If what Lian Feng said was true, then most likely...this belonged to Du Ming Yue!

Thinking of this, Lin Shan was immediately attentive. If Du Ming Yue’s stuff showed up here, it meant that she was here. The messengers’ reports were true.

Du Ming Yue was in the Black Dragon Mountain!

Lin Shan felt hope coming into life as she hastily got up. She wanted to question the old couple. But Lian Feng pulled her back.

“What is it?” Lin Shan was excited and didn’t noticed anything fishy.

“Something is wrong.” Lian Feng analyzed. “The couple told us they didn’t see the Princess.”

“How’s that possible? The hairpin is in their firewood room....” Lin Shan suddenly stopped. Oh yeah! The hairpin is here... how could they not have seen her? They must be lying!

Why are they lying? Could they be the ones that kidnapped the Princess?

Thinking of this, Lin Shan felt very uneasy. Now that she thought about it, the way the old woman looked at her was very strange. There was something suspicious about it. She was about to tell Lian Feng when suddenly Lian Feng covered her mouth and struck her acupoint.

Now, Lin Shan had no more remaining strength and she softly fell onto the ground. However, her mind was still conscious. She could feel Lian Feng fixing her clothes and then leaping away.

What...what the heck is going on?

Lin Shan was stunned. However, she couldn’t speak nor move. She could only remain flat on the ground.

After a moment, the door suddenly opened and someone came in.

*Xiao qiang is a slang for a cockroach. Back in the days, people find battling cockroaches entertaining. Most of the cockroaches were called “xiao qiang”. Xiao means little, and qiang means strong.

**Cheng qiang means “forced” in Mandarin. The author wanted to be puny with the word “qiang”. -_-”

Promoted post: [Just a reminder](#)

Chapter 55

To my dear readers,

This chapter was really funny (to me). Haha. I hope you will like it as well.

This time I want to teach you how to read “Who is she?” In Chinese, the grammar is backwards. It is actually “She is who?” 她是谁？

Remember how I taught you he (他) and she (她) from before? Well, “Who is he?” is 他是谁? 是 means is. 谁 means who. You can type it by typing “ta shi shui”

Chapter 55

Since Lin Shan’s acupoint was struck, she couldn’t move. At this moment, the intruders have already came in and lit up the room.

“Take a look. Are you sure she’s dead asleep?” The old man whispered.

“No need to take a look! Anyone who has experienced my sleeping pill in gas form will collapse. Even a cow can’t handle it.” The old woman was proud and arrogant as she stared down at Lin Shan.

Sleeping pill in gas form? Lin Shan started to panic. Could this be the legendary black market? She was deep in thought. Most likely, Lian Feng heard them from the outside and wanted to bait the snake out of its cave.

Knowing that Lian Feng was watching her nearby, Lin Shan’s fear of the black market went down substantially as she continued to fake her unconsciousness.

Since Lin Shan looked like she fell into a deep slumber, the couple started to raise their voices. The old man was hesitant: “Old woman. Are you sure she’s a woman? It doesn’t seem likely. Look at the way she’s sleeping? It’s comparable to a pig. The hay is all over the place.”

You’re the pig! Your whole family are pigs! Lin Shan yelled from the inside.

“Humpt! Don’t doubt my abilities. This old grandma can sniff out a woman. In addition, she’s a virgin. Just like the previous one. She’s perfect for our potion.”

Mother! Not only does this black market kill people, they also cook people for potion?!

Wait a second. Lin Shan suddenly realized something was wrong. The previous one? Could that be Du Ming Yue?

Lin Shan recalled the golden pin she found from the stack of hay and immediately tensed up.

If Du Ming Yue was really cooked for potion, then what? Lin Shan started to freak out on the inside. Then, she heard the old man mumbled: “How the hell can you smell someone’s virginity? I should go and check...”

“Check your head! You perverted old man! Watch me chop off your dick and soak it in wine!” The old woman threatened.

Lin Shan was worrying for Du Ming Yue while she shivered. Wow, granny! You’re too much!

The old man became silent after the old woman scowled at him. After awhile, Lin Shan heard the sounds of a sharp weapon being rubbing against something. Then, she heard the old woman grumbled: “Why are you being such a slow poke? Hurry up and let out the blood!”

Are you f**king kidding me? Why are you so unhygienic? You didn’t even wash me and you’re going to let out my blood? Who would want to drink your potion? Lin Shan screeched from the inside.

Soon, she heard footsteps heading her way. She secretly peeked and with the help of the lit lantern, she noticed the gleaming light from the dagger.

Lin Shan was trembling on the inside. Why was Lian Feng still hiding? Hey buddy! They want your wife’s blood!!! Lin Shan shrieked on the inside as the reflection of the dagger got closer and closer to her.

Just as the sharp part of the dagger was about to touch her, a flash of blade was seen and her acupoint was unlocked and a strong force pulled her up and steadily placed her behind him.

“Speak. Who are you?” Lian Feng icily stated. His blade was pointing straight at the old man’s throat.

Lin Shan was hiding behind Lian Feng. She noticed the old man holding a strange dagger. It looked more like something they used in an operation room.

The old man was shaking from fear. His wife was also taken aback and didn't know how to react. She just stood there.

"I'm going to ask one more time. Who are you?" Lian Feng pushed his blade closer. The blade was now on the old man's neck. The old man started to babble like a child: "Umm...umm.. this hero... it's a misunderstanding... misunderstanding...misunderstanding!!! We are not bad people..."

If it weren't for the fact he was old, Lin Shan would have slapped him across the face.

You're nearly seventy or eighty. Come on and be real. Putting out a sleeping pill in gas form in the middle of the night? And then planning to take my blood for a potion? How could you be so thick skinned to say you're innocent??

Lian Feng's blade inched closer. Now, the skin on the old man's neck was breaking.

"Third time. If not, don't blame me for what's to come!" Lian Feng warned.

"Don't kill me! Don't kill me!" cried the old man.

Lin Shan consoled Lian Feng: "Yes. Don't kill him. He's already so old. You need to respect your elders. This means you should chop off his dick and soak it in wine instead....."

The old man's legs buckled and he nearly fell down.

At that moment, the old woman seemed to have snapped out of her shock and rushed: "Please calm down, hero! I'll tell you. I'll tell you everything!

Since the old woman was willing to speak, Lian Feng no longer felt like it was necessary to harm the old man. However, he still had the blade on the old man's neck.

"Who are you people? Why were you planning a sneak attack on us? And where is that young lady you mentioned previously? Be clear and precise or you'll regret it." Lian Feng's tone was grim.

"I'll tell you! I'll tell you!" The old woman exclaimed.

It turned out the couple wasn't from the village. They were actually a pair of wandering doctors in jiang hu. The reason why they entered the black forest was because they were being chased by their mortal enemies. The villagers from the black forest saved them, and they ended up residing here.

However, a year ago, there was a strange outbreak of a contagious disease. All the villagers that encountered the disease grew yellow spots. The spots gradually expanded until it covered their entire bodies. The victims eventually died from the pain.

Although the couple weren't exactly good people, they couldn't stand seeing all the villagers die from pain. They tried their best to invent some type of healing potion, but the disease was just too strange. Thus, they could only watch their saviors turn yellow and die.

Afterwards, nearly all the villagers were dead. The only ones that remained were the children. Perhaps since they were young, their immune system were stronger.

The couple tried the best to save the children. After researching day and night, they finally found a method to cure the disease. However, in order for it to be effective, the potion needed the blood of forty nine female virgins.

In order to gather the blood of forty nine female virgins, the couple took the risk of bumping into their mortal enemies once more. They only needed the blood of two more virgins, but at the time, they were going to be discovered and killed. Therefore, they had no choice but to retreat back to the black forest to think of a different plan.

At this point, the old woman elaborated: "We actually only wanted the blood from her fingertips. We weren't planning to kill her or anything. Since our intentions are to save the children, please let us go!"

Lin Shan was very skeptical. What?! How did they suddenly turned from evil to good? They are so good with their words. They could turn a mouse into a cat. I bet they could even turn a monk into a woman. Those liars!!!

Lin Shan went over and grabbed the dagger from the old man and threw it onto the ground. She pretended to look fierce and threatened: "Don't lie to me. Tell me where that young lady is! How dare you use her for your potion?! I'm

going to kill you both!!!”

The old man was nearly in tears. Oh I’m so old, why am I always encountering these type of women? The previous woman was scary enough. This one is even worse!

He wailed: “Miss. We are truly telling the truth. If you don’t believe us, you can check our cellar. The children are still waiting for our potion!”

This time, it actually sounded more believable. Lin Shan looked at Lian Feng and noticed he was silent. Therefore, she continued to press: “Where is that young lady then? Where have you hid her?”

“Who would dare to hide that woman? The man that was with her took her away. While they were leaving, she even bit him. His buff arm was all bloody....” The old man recalled as he shuddered.

Based on his words, it did sound like Du Ming Yue’s style. Could she still be around the area? And who’s the man that’s with her? Is he the one that kidnapped her?

Lin Shan had a bunch of unanswered questions in her mind and she was bewildered. She decided to let Lian Feng make the final conclusion.

Lian Feng was firm and decisive: “Which direction did they go?”

After the couple pointed at the direction, Lian Feng woke up the rest of the guards and made some revisions. Then, they continued their path to locate Du Ming Yue.

Before they left, Lin Shan willingly gave the couple a few drops of her blood. The old couple were overjoyed.

As they went on their way, Lin Shan couldn’t help but questioned Lian Feng: “How do you know they’re not making things up? You’re not guessing, are you?”

“Of course not.” Lian Feng replied. “Actually, the moment we encountered them in the forest, I already knew something was fishy. Those two clearly knows Martial Arts.”

Lin Shan came to a realization: “So you purposely followed the old woman into her house?”

“Yes.” Lian Feng nodded.

“So how are you so sure they are not lying to us?”

Promoted post: [Ask yourself](#)

Chapter 56

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **Pauline Ngo** for her donation! Donations really motivates me to work harder. (When people give me money, I feel like I have to hurry up and not let them down)

In addition, I plan to finish this novel before the year ends. This means that I have to translate roughly **11-12 chapters per month from now on**. My version has 89 chapters. I must discipline myself to hit my goal! (Feel free to support me)

And lastly, I am going to stop the Chinese lessons for now because I am stressed. Maybe I will resume in November. Sorry. If you really want to learn very badly, message me the word or phrase and I will personally respond back to you.

Chapter 56

“It was obvious. Firstly, the knife the old man had was not sharp enough. Even if he wanted to, it wouldn’t be able to cut through a major artery. Therefore, he clearly didn’t plan to end your life. Secondly, they had dried meat hanging from above. Those two elders would not be able to bite through it. They have no teeth.

In addition, they have children’s shoes inside their house; so I have no doubt that there are children living with them. Based on my observations, I could tell they weren’t lying.”

After Lian Feng explained himself, Lin Shan couldn’t help but felt a great sense of pride in her man. While she was slow and senseless, Lian Feng had already noticed so many clues on his own. Could he be the legendary “skillful king”*? He was too adorable! At that moment, Lin Shan felt like she was floating.

Now that they have an idea of where to go, they could ignore a lot of other paths and focus on their targetted direction. In order to maximize their efforts of finding the Princess, Lian Feng decided to disband his group. He wanted his subordinates to contact others around the black forest to form small teams as they all head towards the same direction. As for him and Lin Shan, they will be

the first to go in for the search with the help of Wu Ying.

Based on the old couple's descriptions, Du Ming Yue left two to three days ago. However, since the terrain of the black forest was unusual and it was filled with numerous plants, Du Ming Yue most likely wouldn't be too far off.

As expected, Lian Feng and Lin Shan found some clues after searching for a day. One of the clues was a torn piece of yellow fabric. The material obviously came from the Palace. Lin Shan was positive that Du Ming Yue was nearby.

But by the third day, they had less than a day remaining from the ten days they were initially given. If they could not find Du Ming Yue by noon tomorrow, they will have to retreat from the forest and report back to the Palace. Time was getting tight, and the hope that Lin Shan had was diminishing.

If they fail to find Du Ming Yue, then what? According to the Emperor's words, her whole family will be banished from the Capital. Her dad had been a government official all his life. Now, his life was going to suck because of his daughter.

As for her mother, her health was already poor enough. How will she handle the harsh conditions from the outdoors?

Her brother would be fine though. Overall, being free to do whatever wouldn't be too bad for him. He could endure some hardship.

As for herself.... Lin Shan looked up secretly to scan the man in front of her.

If she were to leave, would he follow her?

Ever since she found out about Lian Feng's secret, Lin Shan was deeply afraid that he would choose his daddy Emperor over her. After all, Lian Feng grew up alone with Lian Kuang all these years. Family meant a lot to him...but if he actually decided to stay in the Capital, then their relationship will....

Thinking of this, Lin Shan could feel her chest tightening from anger. She started to slow down her steps.

Lian Feng immediately noticed this change and instantly turned around to ask her: "What's wrong?"

They exchanged eye contacts and Lin Shan felt an urge to grab onto his clothes

and yell: “Are you going to f***king choose me or your dad? You can only pick one. Right now! This instant! If you choose your dad, I’m going to chop off your dick!”

But she did have a teeny bit of feminine side to her. The words were stuck in her throat for a moment. When the words finally came out, it sounded a lot milder: “Lian Feng, if the Emperor is really banishing my dad, would you leave with me?”

The moment Lin Shan said those words, she immediately regretted it. If Lian Feng were to agree, then it wouldn’t matter. But if he were to refuse, what was she going to do? Thinking of this, Lin Shan felt like her heart was thumping like a hopping rabbit. She was staring at Lian Feng’s mouth as she waited for his reply, but the moment he was about to respond, she interrupted.

“Umm.. I was just asking randomly. You don’t have to respond. Let’s just go find” Before she could finish her sentence, Lian Feng had raised his finger and pressed it against her lips.

The finger-on-lip move caused Lin Shan to freeze. She stared at Lian Feng.

“I would.” He lightly responded. His voice had never sounded so gentle before.

Lin Shan was shocked. She could see Lian Feng smiling ever so slightly. Despite being covered by a mask, she could still feel the power of the smile. In this world, Lian Feng had the coldest mask but he gave her the warmest feeling. She suddenly felt touched in an indescribable way.

Was this happiness? Her nose tingled and her eyes turned red.

Lian Feng didn’t expect Lin Shan to tear up in front of him. He felt helpless. At this moment, Lin Shan reached out to try to take his mask off.

Years of practice made him automatically take a couple steps back.

Lin Shan’s hand paused half way. She looked slightly uncomfortable: “Don’t misunderstand... I suddenly just really wanted to see your face....”

It was true. When he smiled at her, her heart felt like it was being lifted. Lian Feng was definitely not suitable for this cold mask. Why must he have to hide all his emotions? In her eyes, there was only one Lian Feng. Even if a person had a

face that looked like his, he wouldn't be able to replace Lian Feng's special place within her heart.

They made eye contact and Lian Feng was touched by Lin Shan's sincerity. Perhaps he was too used to wearing the mask and never considered his partner's feelings. It must be unpleasant for Lin Shan to kiss and hug a man with a mask all the time. He was being unfair to her.

Now that Lian Feng wasn't backing away anymore, Lin Shan bravely proceeded forward. She carefully reached out her hand and her fingers gently touched the mask. Oddly enough, her hands were somewhat shaky. It wasn't like she had never seen his face before, but for some reason she was nervous. She was worried she would upset Lian Feng by accident.

Lian Feng didn't move. He watched and allowed Lin Shan to touch his mask. She was about to slowly take it off.

At that crucial moment, Lian Feng heard a conversation heading their way. Lian Feng quickly pulled Lin Shan into his arms and covered her mouth as they crouched down.

Lin Shan's hand was still on his mask when he suddenly pulled her in. She was stunned as she stared at Lian Feng in astonishment. Lian Feng did a "don't you dare make a sound" gesture as he pointed towards his ear.

Lin Shan was bright enough to realize that Lian Feng wanted her to listen. Therefore, she became silent. In no time, she heard an argument entering her ears. It was getting closer and clearer by the second.

"Are you done with your tantrums, woman? Watch me smack you!"

"How dare you be rude to the Princess? I'm going to chop off your dick!"

"Why wouldn't I dare? If you have the ability, then try! You bad tempered woman! You only know how to talk big... Mother!!! You're biting me again! I'm going to beat you up!"

"Wah! Bullying a defenceless woman. You asshole! You have no shame! Beat me! Beat me to death! Poor me. I have a bad life. It led me to you. Wah....." She wailed.

“Aiii.. don’t cry! I’m an asshole! I don’t have shame. Please, I’m begging you. Stop crying!” He pleaded.

“Wah.....!!”

“Don’t cry! How about I cook you a roasted pig?”

“Wah! I don’t want a roasted pig! I want a roasted rabbit!”

“Okay okay.. Roasted rabbit it is....”

That voice clearly belonged to Du Ming Yue! Lin Shan felt a mixture of joy and anger. She felt joy because Du Ming Yue was finally found! But also anger because she had gone through so much mental stress, yet this woman here still had the option to choose between a roasted pig or rabbit. That was ridiculous and unacceptable!

Lin Shan was boiling. She was about to rush out to seize her target when Lian Feng stopped her.

Lian Feng gave her a “keep calm, don’t get excited” look. At the same time, he firmly grasped his sabre as he focused straight ahead. He was literally like a leopard waiting for its pray.

While they were waiting, a big and small figure entered their field of view. The moment Lin Shan saw them, she almost shrieked.

What the hell!? Isn’t that He Lao San? Why is the mountain thief with Du Ming Yue? Did he miss his old job and decided to go into the Palace to kidnap someone again?

While Lin Shan was being confused, Lian Feng had already drew out his sabre and dashed out.

*Apparently it’s an internet slang. It means someone who is very skillful.

Promoted post: [The dreaded D word](#)

Chapter 57

To my dear readers,

This chapter was so weird to translate... there were a lot of Chinese sayings that sounded very strange in English. If you're confused, just ask me in the comments.

Chapter 57

He Lao San didn't expect a person to pop out from the middle of the forest. He was shocked. When he took a closer look, his soul nearly flew away.

Why is it that mask guy again? Last time, he took my future wife away. This time, he wants to take this angry woman too?? He's not giving me a place to live!

He Lao San was sharp and didn't take out his weapon. Instead, he promptly picked up Du Ming Yue and ran.

Lin Shan was stunned. Are you freaking kidding me? He must be born from the year of the rabbit. Although he looks as bulky as a bear, he runs faster than a rabbit!

Du Ming Yue was almost out of sight. Lin Shan finally reacted and decided to break into a run.

"Just stay here!" Lian Feng immediately stopped her. He leaped into the air and headed towards He Lao San's direction. Within a few seconds, he was gone.

Since Lin Shan had no martial arts abilities, she could only be obedient and listen to Lian Feng. She stayed where she was and prayed that Lian Feng will bring Du Ming Yue back. If not, she was doomed.

Unfortunately, although Lian Feng's flying abilities were around the same level as He Lao San's, he wasn't as familiar with the forest. Remember, He Lao San had lived here as a mountain thief for over a decade. He recognized the entire mountain; every grass and every tree. Running away was definitely an easy task for him.

Lian Feng chased for half a day but still couldn't find He Lao San. He wanted to

continue searching, but the Sun was starting to set. The black forest couldn't be compared to the Capital. Once the Sun sets, beasts will come out. Lin Shan was alone, so it was quite dangerous for her. Thinking of this, Lian Feng decided to return and find Lin Shan.

At this moment, Lin Shan was currently panicking under a tree. The sky was getting darker and darker, and the light around the forest was getting dimmer and dimmer. All the plants around her were starting to be wrapped in darkness. Yet, Lian Feng was still nowhere to be seen.

Lin Shan was scared as she held onto Wu Ying's reins. She started to count.

After counting to a hundred, Lian Feng appeared.

The moment she saw Lian Feng, Lin Shan rushed towards him: "Did you find them?"

Lian Feng shook his head.

Lin Shan's mood hit rock bottom. Did the Heavens really want her to die? It was like a duck that had already reached one's lips running away. She had clearly almost completed her mission, but Du Ming Yue got away!

"Don't worry. He Lao San might have ran off, but now that we know he's the one who kidnapped the Princess, we will get him." Lian Feng consoled.

Lin Shan remained depressed: "But we're not going to be able to find them by tomorrow. The Emperor is definitely not going to let my family go. What are we going to do... what are we going to do...."

"Don't be like this. There might still be hope...." Lian Feng wanted to comfort her. Suddenly, shining fireworks lit up the air. That was a signal from their search teams.

Could they have located Du Ming Yue? Once again, hope flared within Lin Shan's heart. She looked into Lian Feng's eyes and both of them decided to head back to meet up with the teams.

Surprisingly, the signal wasn't because of Du Ming Yue. Instead, it was a messenger from the Palace. The Emperor was critically ill!

The Emperor was critically ill? What? That was too sudden! Initially, Lin Shan

didn't believe it. It wasn't until they got back to the Palace and witnessed the chaotic scenes amongst the Imperial physicians did they realized the Emperor was actually severely sick.

But then again, how did the Emperor get so sick out of nowhere? Right before she left the Palace, the Emperor had summoned her and shrieked at her. At the time, he didn't seem sick at all. Could something fishy be going on?

Despite the doubt in Lin Shan's heart, she was also relieved because the Emperor was too sick to deal with anything. All searches were temporarily stopped.

According to Xiao Lu, the Emperor's illness came very suddenly. He got sick the night they left the Capital. By the next day, he didn't even have the strength to walk. His condition continued to worsen and by yesterday, the Emperor had fallen into a coma.

Hearing Xiao Lu's words, Lin Shan had mixed feelings. On one hand, she was happy because now her father wouldn't have to be banished. On the other hand, she was concerned because the Emperor was Lian Feng's dad. If something actually happened to him, Lian Feng would suffer emotionally.

In addition, Lin Shan had a very strange feeling towards the Emperor's illness. Perhaps there was some sort of conspiracy going on. Anything was possible. Danger usually strikes at the most unexpected times. Being a bit cautious couldn't be a bad thing.

After a few days later, the Emperor's illness was under control. However, his condition was still poor. Imperial physicians could be seen running around the Emperor's residence with worried looks on their faces. It was as if the whole department had moved in.

During this sensitive moment, Lin Shan knew to keep her place. She rarely left her own residence. If she wanted something done, she would sent Xiao Lu to do it for her. She wanted Xiao Lu to find out more insider information, and being the quick witted girl that she was, Xiao Lu actually found out some juicy details.

"Prince Consort. Apparently, the Emperor's illness is very strange!" Xiao Lu whispered to Lin Shan.

“Bullshit. Of course it is strange! Or else how would he have gotten so ill so quickly!? Get to the main point!” Lin Shan rushed.

“Prince Consort. Calm down! No need to rush. Allow your servant to slowly tell you. According to many, yesterday the Sun was bright, and there was moderate wind. There was a gentle breeze...and on the tree, there was a bird chirping...”

“Get to the main point!”

“No rush! I will eventually get to it. Hmmm? Where did I stopped? Umm.. I’ll just start over. Yesterday, the Sun was bright and there was moderate wind. There was a gentle breeze...”

Lin Shan wanted to spit out blood.

Eventually, Xiao Lu got to the main point. On her way to the Imperial physician department, she overheard two physicians discussing about the Emperor’s illness. One of the Imperial physicians mentioned that the Emperor’s illness was very odd; his body was covered in yellow spots.

Yellow spots? How come this illness sounds like the disease the wandering doctors were talking about? Could the Emperor’s illness be related to that? If that was the case, they have a cure now!?

Just as Lin Shan was deep in thought, Xiao Lu continued: “Also, I overheard an eunuch saying that the Crown Prince has been suffering from a lack of appetite due to the Emperor’s illness. In addition, the Crown Prince has sent out an order stating that anyone who can cure the Emperor will be rewarded with a thousand golden taels. No wonder those old doctors are so proactive...”

Lin Shan was still thinking about the disease from the black forest when her ears twitched. Her eyes shone as she beamed at Xiao Lu: “What did you say? How much is the reward?”

“A thousand golden taels, plus land and a mansion. Oh, and a promotion... aii! Prince Consort, where are you going?”

With a blink of an eye, Lin Shan had already disappeared.

Lin Shan ran out of her residence. She wanted to find Lian Feng to discuss with him about the illness. However, instead of finding Lian Feng, she ended up

crashing into Du Hao.

“Why are you running into things? What are you doing!?” Du Hao looked extremely stressed and withered.

“Your Highness, I know my wrongs!” Lin Shan quickly said her famous line and apologized. Right after, she pulled on his sleeves and murmured: “Your Highness, how’s the Emperor’s illness?”

Du Hao shook his head. His expression became more sullen.

Lin Shan continued: “I heard from the Imperial physicians that the Emperor has yellow spots all over his body. Is this true?”

“How dare you!?” Du Hao turned pale as he bellowed. “Who told you this? Who allowed you to discuss about this?”

Lin Shan didn’t expect Du Hao to react so dramatically. She was astonished. However, since she had spent enough time with Du Hao, she knew he was the “harsh mouth soft heart” type. Therefore, she wasn’t afraid like she used to be. Instead, she got even closer to Du Hao as she whispered: “Don’t panic. Let me see the Emperor. Perhaps I can cure this odd illness....”

“You?” Du Hao was in disbelief. He narrowed his eyes as he examined Lin Shan. He was filled with doubt.

“Just let me see. It won’t kill you. Plus, you know that saying...treat a dead horse as if it’s alive... ah! No! I mean, pretend the dead person is alive... oops no! Aaaiii whatever. Just let me take a look!”

Lin Shan made a pledge to Heaven. Currently, her mind was only thinking of the thousand golden taels, but while she was making her vow, her eyes looked extra sincere. Du Hao felt a little touched.

“Alright. But you better not cause trouble, understand?” Du Hao warned.

“No problem!” Lin Shan nodded as she quickly followed Du Hao.

Promoted post: [Building Confidence](#)

Chapter 58

To my dear readers,

This chapter took me forever. It took me nearly 15-20 minutes just to translate the first two paragraphs. Imagine looking at the same chapter for hours. (You guys only spend 5-10 minutes...) Oh my goodness. My brain felt like it was rotting.

Anyhow, the story is going to get a lot more serious. Lin Shan is still going to be her usual self, but the plot is going to get a lot darker.

Chapter 58

The Emperor's residence was nearby. As Lin Shan followed Du Hao, she noticed many worried looking Imperial counsellors walking back and forth outside. All of them wanted to meet with the Emperor but were driven away. It wasn't surprising though. Now that the Emperor was critically ill, all government affairs were at a standstill. The likelihood of a new Monarch was looming around everyone's head.

A new power could alter the entire Imperial court. Those who were once favoured could end up a couple ranks lower, while those who were at the bottom could suddenly rise rapidly. In order to ensure the stability of their positions, the Imperial counsellors must go where the wind blows and have the most accurate details at all times.

Once Lin Shan entered the Emperor's residence, the Imperial counsellors were no longer seen. Instead, there were many servants and eunuchs running about. There were also many Imperial physicians that looked distressed.

"Sun Physician!" Du Hao called after an old physician. He was definitely a senior figure in the department. "How is my father?"

The old physician shook his head: "Your Highness, please forgive me. I have already tried my best....."

"Tried your best? What best? Why is the Imperial court raising you group of

useless people? Get out of my sight!” Du Hao shrieked. Lin Shan had never seen him act like this before. Although Du Hao had a nasty temper, he would never lose self control in public. Undoubtedly, he was very anxious.

Lin Shan was behind Du Hao, and she didn’t know what to say. She felt a little sympathy for Du Hao though. After all, his dad was critically ill. How could he not be anxious? Was Lian Feng feeling like this as well?

As the thought flashed through Lin Shan’s mind, she suddenly noticed a familiar black figure standing behind the screen. Seriously? Wow. I thought about him and here he is! Speak of the devil! But why would Lian Feng be here? Could the Emperor have summoned him because he is ill?

By now, Du Hao and Lin Shan had walked pass the screen and stood in front of the Emperor’s bed: “Father, your son is here to see you.”

The Emperor was lying behind a thin cotton veil. From the sound of his voice, it was clear that his condition was severe. He coughed for a long period of time before he was able to murmur: “Hao-er, I’m glad you are here. Come to father’s side.”

“Yes, father!” Du Hao walked over.

As Du Hao walked over, the cotton veil was lifted momentarily from his movement. Lin Shan got to see the Emperor’s face for a second. As expected, he looked very yellow. However, it was a very strange kind of yellow. Could it be the same disease? Lin Shan wasn’t sure. She turned her head to look at Lian Feng. She wanted to see some sort of confirmation from him. At that moment, suddenly, the eunuch guarding the entrance’s trembling voice could be heard.

“To....to report to the Emperor....the e-eldest Prince has r-returned to the Capital!!”

Du Ye? Du Hao was on guard. Shouldn’t he be at the borders fighting a war? Why did he suddenly return?

Du Hao looked at his father. The illness had already worn him out so badly that he could no longer read his mood. The Emperor only waved his hand and weakly whispered: “Send someone to the gate... to welcome him in...”

“To...to respond back to the Emperor, the e-eldest Prince is n-not outside of

the city gate... H-he is right outside in the Palace hall!”

What? Not only has Du Ye returned, but he was out waiting in the Palace Hall? Du Hao’s heart was hanging by a thread. The storm he had predicted has finally arrived!

Lin Shan had never met Du Ye, but she had heard of his name many times. He was ranked as the second hottest man in the Capital. In addition, Du Ye’s mother was actually a commoner; as a result, although Du Ye was the eldest, he could not be the Crown Prince. However, that did not affect Du Ye’s position in many Imperial counsellors’ hearts. Some secretly dared to compare Du Ye with Du Hao. They pointed out that regardless of talent or behaviour, Du Ye was superior; the Crown Prince position should have been his.

Although these words were not said openly, deep down, it gradually became the thoughts of many Imperial counsellors. Hence, the Emperor decided to send both his sons to war. He wanted to cultivate one and alienate the other.

Surprisingly, now that the Emperor was critically ill, Du Ye suddenly arrived back from the borders. He was sure “on time”.

No one said it upfront, but even Lin Shan could see an issue with this. Clearly, Du Ye purposely returned to “rob during a fire”*. However, based on the speed he had returned, he was probably not only here for the “robbery”. Most likely, he was the one who started the fire!

Lin Shan analyzed the situation in front of her. Du Ye was already in martial attire. Furthermore, he brought two subordinates with him. Oh, Xiao Lu was correct, Du Ye was definitely a gorgeous man. Despite his looks, he was too aggressive though. How dare they come into the Emperor’s residence with weapons out? That was disrespectful!

While Lin Shan’s thoughts were racing in her mind, Du Hao suddenly spoke up from the bedside. He hollered at the two subordinates behind Du Ye, “How dare you, servants? Who allowed you to carry weapons in here? Get the f*** out!” Du Hao showed no mercy. Although he was yelling at the servants, it was inwardly directed towards Du Ye.

What was more surprising was that the two subordinates did not seem to care. On the contrary, they calmly looked into Du Ye’s eyes for his approval. Only when

they received his consent did they leave the room.

Lin Shan was impressed by Du Ye. The fact that he was able to train his subordinates to be so willingly loyal towards him must mean he was a powerful and dominating man. For sure, Du Ye must be here to rob during the fire! Looks like Du Hao is in for some trouble!

While Lin Shan was worrying for Du Hao, Du Ye spoke up: “Second brother, please calm down. I have brought the army back to the Capital because I heard Father was very ill. I was concerned, therefore, I didn’t wait for the messenger and came right in. It is a bit rude of me. Please forgive me, second brother.”

Although Du Ye was being polite, his words had hidden meaning. First of all, he did not refer to Du Hao as the Crown Prince; but rather, second brother. This meant that he refused to acknowledge his position. Secondly, Du Ye purposely hinted that he had his troops right outside of the Capital. He had made his statement very clear.

“Oh really?” Du Hao icily laughed, “If I knew brother was going to be so timely, I wouldn’t have needed to send a messenger. I should just summon him back. He probably hasn’t gone too far.”

“Second brother is busy as a machine, yet still found time to send me a messenger to inform me. I can’t thank you enough.”

“Brother, you are too modest. How can I compare to you? As a General, you need to attack the enemy for our country, yet you found time to worry about the issues in the Palace. It must be a lot of trouble for you.”

The two of them were having the battle of the lips. Each line had thorns. Lin Shan couldn’t help but sigh within: Who says they’re different? Based on their bickering abilities, they’re definitely from the same mold!

At this moment, suddenly an announcement was made: “To report to the Emperor, Liu Superior, Wang Superior and Cai Superior are all waiting outside to come in.”

“Can’t you see father is sick? Tell them to go away!” Du Hao angrily shouted.

“But...” The eunuch’s complexion didn’t look very good. “Liu Superior said they’re not leaving until they see the Emperor...”

“Shameless! Do those old geezers not care about the Emperor? Spread my words. Whoever that does not leave will be demoted and sent home!”

“Uh....” On one hand, the eunuch must not go against the Crown Prince, but on the other hand, he cannot go against the Imperial counsellors either. The eunuch was stuck in the middle and didn’t know what to do. He looked horrified.

At this moment, Du Ye suddenly spoke up: “Since Liu Superior wants to come in. Second brother, why don’t you allow him to come in?”

“Are you the Crown Prince or am I the Crown Prince? Spread my words. Tell them to go!” Du Hao yelled as his eyes gleamed.

*There is no actual “fire”. This is an idiom. Basically, the situation is vulnerable, making it easier for intruders/thieves.

Promoted post: [Questionnaire for yourself](#)

Chapter 59

To my dear readers,

Firstly, I would like to thank **Joanne Hee** for her donation! Joanne has donated 4 times to me. I am so grateful. Getting a donation once is already touching enough. Thank you so much for your continuous support. ♥♥

Secondly, this chapter was very hard to translate. It took me forever. (I swear, I say this for almost every chapter). It's like reading a Chinese drama!! I hope you like it nonetheless.

Chapter 59

Lin Shan sighed. Nowadays, it was difficult to be a Crown Prince. There was a wolf at the front and a tiger at the back. It will be tough for Du Hao to become the Emperor. He must go through lots of adversity. From the looks of it, it looked like Du Hao and Du Ye were about to fight!?

Daddy Emperor, your sons are going to fight. Speak up!

Unexpectedly, the Emperor actually opened his mouth: "Let them come in...."

"Yes! Your servant obeys!" Finally, someone with the most power spoke up. The eunuch slowly got up from the ground and stretched his throat as he shouted: "The Emperor has allowed the Superiors to come in. You may enter!"

"Enter...enter...enter..." The echo lingered through the corridor. Immediately, a bunch of Imperial counsellors dressed in government attire came in. Lin Shan roughly counted and realized there were at least ten of them. From the group, many of them were very highly ranked in the Imperial court; especially the leader of the group, Liu Superior. Liu Superior was appointed by the late Emperor and his position was deeply respected amongst all counsellors.

The moment the counsellors arrived, they got down onto their knees.

"Emperor!" The old Liu De Quan knelt down. His expression was grave. "We have an abnormal meteorological phenomenon. Our country is suffering. I have just received the news that some of our provinces have experienced drought for months. Not a single grain was reaped. The big river is causing disasters. Our

people cannot live. In addition, there are Japanese pirates glaring at us like a tiger watching its prey. At this rate, our country will fall apart. Your subordinate would like to earnestly request the Emperor to promptly confer a new Monarch during this desperate times!”

“Your subordinates would like to earnestly request the Emperor to promptly confer a new Monarch during this desperate times!” Behind him, all the Imperial counsellors repeated the lines.

Is this the legendary part where the Emperor is forced to step down? Lin Shan felt like her eyes were going to turn vertical. Based on how the current situation was unrolling, the Emperor will be forced to give up his position for the Crown Prince. However, at this time, Superior A is going to come out and say Du Hao is not suitable. Instead, Du Ye should take his place. Then Superior B is going to agree with him. Next, Superior C, D, E, F... all of them will go and beg the Emperor to reconsider. The eldest Prince have both talent and virtue! He should be the next Emperor!

Please! Can you be more creative? This has been performed several hundred times in TV shows. Why do you guys use the same script over and over again? Do you think the readers are stupid? No! I refuse to let you do this to the readers!

As a responsible female MC, Lin Shan felt a surge of energy. She lifted her sleeves and came out from the corner. She roared: “All of you shut up!”

Her line was extremely effective. All the Superiors instantly froze. A strange smile emerged on Du Ye’s face.

Lin Shan was a bit nervous since so many people were looking at her. But for the readers, she was going to go all out! She gritted her teeth and took one step forward as she puffed out her chest and lifted her head. She looked very persuasive: “How dare you? The Emperor is only sick. Who said he cannot be cured? Are you implying that the Emperor is going to die? What are your intentions?”

The Imperial counsellors felt slightly guilty, however, old ginger was still hotter than young ginger*. Liu Superior immediately responded in a normal state: “Prince Consort, are you saying you have the ability to cure the Emperor?”

Hehe! Spot on! Lin Shan responded calmly: “I cannot cure the Emperor, but I

know someone who can!”

“Seriously?” Du Hao questioned.

Lin Shan took a deep breath as she nodded: “Yes. If you do not believe me, you can ask Lian Superior. We have came across this illness. It is actually curable!”

Du Hao directed his glance towards Lian Feng. “Lian Superior, is Prince Consort speaking the truth?” Du Hao asked.

Lian Feng nodded: “The Emperor’s illness looks very similar to the illness that we have encountered. A couple claimed to us that they could cure this illness.” Lian Feng was much more careful with his words compared to Lin Shan. His words were discreetly selected.

“Great!” Du Hao was relieved. “I’m assigning you to find this famous doctor to cure the Emperor’s illness first thing in the morning!”

“I want to go too!” Lin Shan chirped from the side.

“No!”

“You’re forbidden to go!”

The two of them practically spoke in unison. Du Ye’s mouth curled into a smile. He then stated: “Since there’s a cure for Father’s illness, that should take priority. If Lian Superior requires help, I can offer my army to accompany you.”

“That is not necessary.” Du Hao flatly rejected on behalf of Lian Feng. “I will send out my own army to cooperate with Lian Superior. As for you, elder brother, you led your troops from such a far distance. Why don’t you change your clothes and unload your sword before coming to see Father?”

“Second brother’s words are reasonable. I shall take my leave.” Du Ye calmly replied. Before he left, he intentionally took a glimpse at Lin Shan.

What are you looking at? You have never seen a sissy? If you want to look, go look at your third brother!

Despite trying to look tough, Lin Shan felt goose bumps all over from the glance. Du Ye doesn’t look like an easy opponent!

— — —

In order to find the antidote for the strange illness as soon as possible, that very night, Du Hao gathered his personal army to coordinate with Lian Feng to enter the black forest.

Lin Shan wasn't allowed to go, so she was fuming in her bed. She was so close to getting that thousand golden taels, and now, it had slipped out of her grasp. She continuously tossed and turned.

Strangely, her heart suddenly felt very uneasy. Something seemed to be fishy. However, after thinking for a long time, she still couldn't figure it out. Instead, it was getting even harder to sleep. Could it be because Lian Feng was leaving tomorrow? As a result, she was feeling this odd sensation in advanced?

Lin Shan tossed and turned a few more times before she decided to go and secretly visit Lian Feng.

As her personal maid, Xiao Lu usually slept in the same room as her. Xiao Lu rubbed her eyes and asked: "Master. It's so late. Where are you going?"

"I'm going to see how Lian Superior's preparation is coming along."

"Pssh. You just can't forget the golden sabre, eh? Master, you need to grow up...." Xiao Lu turned over as she continued sleeping before Lin Shan could rage at her.

"Watch me send you to the Leaning Vermilion House to sweep!" Lin Shan muttered as she sneaked out.

Although it was only the end of summer, the night breeze was already starting to feel cool. Lin Shan was wearing a thin layer and shortly felt chilly. She hugged herself tighter as she headed towards Lian Feng's residence.

She was very familiar with the path, and arrived at Lian Feng's in no time. However, no light could be seen from outside. Most likely, he was asleep. Lin Shan was worried if she walked right in, Lian Feng would mistaken her as a thief and pull out his sabre to stab her. For her safety's sake she decided to knock on the window.

"Lian Feng? Xiao Feng? Lian Lian? Feng Feng? Xiao Feng Feng...."

There was a movement from behind her and Lin Shan quickly turned around.

To her surprise, Lian Feng was actually there. Underneath the mask, his mouth could be seen twitching.

Lin Shan was appalled. She almost let out a punch. Fortunately, the mask was too symbolic so she reacted in time: “Why were you standing behind me without saying a word? You want to scare me to death?huh? Why are you not sleeping?”

“I was about to come find you.” said Lian Feng.

“Oh.” Lin Shan was curious. “Why were you going to find me?”

Lian Feng didn’t answer her question. Instead, he asked: “Why did you come find me?”

Me? Lin Shan thought about it. She couldn’t think of a reason. Therefore, she said: “I don’t know. I couldn’t sleep. I just wanted to see you...could it be you felt the same? Ha! Our minds have telepathic powers!” Lin Shan looked as if she had discovered the New World. She patted Lian Feng on the shoulder.

Since the wind was quite strong, her hand was cold. Her fingers accidentally touched Lian Feng’s neck, and Lian Feng frowned as he grabbed onto her hand.

“Why are you so cold?” He asked.

That move was too sudden and Lin Shan felt a bit bashful. She sheepishly replied: “uh.... I am feeling kind of cold....” Before her sentence was finished, Lian Feng had already taken off his robe without the slightest hesitation. He wrapped her in his body temperature robe and Lin Shan felt her heart pound.

“It’s cold outside. Let’s go in and talk.” Lian Feng was about to lead her inside when suddenly he felt a push and took a few steps backwards. Coincidentally, there was a wall behind him. “You....” Before he could react, Lin Shan had already thrown herself on him and kissed him hard.

*It means, experiences count.

Promoted post: [Random Relationship Thoughts](#)

Chapter 60

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Joanne Hee** for her donation (again). Thank you so much for your support!

If you guys are unsatisfied with this chapter, don't blame me! Blame the author. lol. ♥♥ (Don't worry.. eventually you'll get what you want... *wink wink*).

Chapter 60

This position was very odd. Imagine a tall male being shoved against the wall while a tiny female stood on tiptoes to kiss him. Underneath the starry and breezy night, on this long passageway, the moonlight shone on the both of them and made them look rather hazy. This scenario was as alluring as a painting.

Behind the fake mountain in the courtyard, someone happened to pause.

Lin Shan was still kissing. She didn't know where she got her courage from. The irritability she felt from tossing and turning instantaneously disappeared. Currently, she felt refreshed and carefree. She became increasingly unrestrained and started to lift her hand to take off Lian Feng's mask.

Originally, Lian Feng was hesitating. But in the end, he didn't stop her. In no time, the mask was off. Without the mask between them, their kiss was deeper than it had ever been. Lin Shan felt like her legs were going weak. In order to prevent herself from losing balance, she wrapped her arms around Lian Feng's neck; like a koala hanging from a tree.

They were both filled with lust as they continued making out. Suddenly, the black cloud covered the moonlight and a guard was patrolling towards their direction.

Lian Feng embraced Lin Shan and hid behind the shadows of a pillar. Fortunately, the guard did not notice them. He walked around a circle and left. Lin Shan saw how serious and worried Lian Feng looked, and thought it was adorable. The guard hadn't gone far, but she had already stood on her tiptoes

again as she mischievously started licking Lian Feng's lips like a little kitten.

Lian Feng could barely resist Lin Shan's soft and wet lip. But at the same time, he was worried the guard would discover them, therefore, he covered Lin Shan's mouth.

Lin Shan wouldn't give in and started nibbling on his palm. Her hands were also restless as she started to feel around in the dark. Finally, she touched something hard and stiff.

Lian Feng let out a growl and shoved Lin Shan against the pillar as he ferociously kissed her.

The passionate kiss blew Lin Shan away. She was lightly panting against Lian Feng. A ray of moonlight was suddenly revealed by the gloomy cloud. The hazy moonlight made her look extremely mesmerizing.

Lian Feng reached out his hand and tried to fix her hair. However, his fingers didn't want to leave her smooth luscious face. He continued to slowly stroke her cheeks with his fingers.

It was somewhat unbelievable to him that his hands had killed hundreds before, yet they were the same hands that were touching the woman he loved. His cold sabre had never given him such satisfaction before.

Lin Shan was currently very well behaved. She quietly allowed Lian Feng to caress her as she lied her face against his chest. She greedily listened to his steady heartbeat and felt like all her problems had disappeared: "When you come back, let's figure out a way to leave this place."

Lian Feng's hand stopped moving. He didn't say a word.

"What's wrong?" Lin Shan lifted her head to look at him, but Lian Feng pressed her head back against his chest.

"Alright." He promised.

Lin Shan felt a sweetness she couldn't describe. It was as if her heart had eaten honey. She had her arms around his waist as she continued: "You have to leave early and come back early. You're not allowed to look at other women on the way!"

“Ok.”

“You’re not allowed to look at men either!”

“.....”

“You’re not allowed to look at Wu Ying either!”

“.....”

Just like that, Lin Shan continued talking gibberish to Lian Feng as she hugged him.

From a distance, Xiao Lu’s voice could be heard: “Prince Consort! Prince Consort!”

“Ah!” Lin Shan was shocked as she bounced off Lian Feng, “Xiao Lu must have woken up and noticed I went missing. She is looking for me! I must hurry back. Sleep soon! I’ll come say goodbye tomorrow!”

“No need.” Lian Feng shook his head. “I’m leaving the moment the Sun rises. Don’t come. I want to avoid gossip.”

Hummph! Keep pretending! You kissed me against the pillar in the middle of the night and you’re afraid of gossip? Men are full of shit! Lin Shan secretly looked down on Lian Feng. By now, Xiao Lu’s voice was getting very close.

“Alright. I’m not going to walk you back to your room! I’m going to go back and sleep!” Lin Shan pouted and looked peeved. Then, she vigilantly looked around her surroundings. Once she confirmed there was no one around, she hopped out from behind the pillar and ran towards the direction of Xiao Lu’s voice.

“Remember to leave quick and come back quick!” From a distance, Lin Shan turned around as she mouthed the words to Lian Feng.

Lian Feng stood behind the pillar as he watched Lin Shan’s figure gradually disappear. Then, his eyes darkened.

“Come out.” He stepped out of the shadows.

A few moments later, a person walked out from behind the fake mountain. The misty moonlight was shining on both their faces. Aside from their facial expression, they looked exactly the same. One of them looked calm, while the

other looked grave.

“You saw us?” Before Du Hao said a word, Lian Feng voiced.

“If you purposely wanted me to see, why are you asking, Lian Superior. No! I should call you brother, shouldn’t I?” Du Hao’s complexion was cold, and there was a hint of hatred in his eyes.

“Your Highness, there is no need to make a big deal. You should be very clear about my intentions.” Lian Feng calmly stated.

“That may not necessarily be true. Why don’t you state it openly?”

Lian Feng looked at Du Hao in the eye: “I want to do an exchange with you. I’ll give you the world in exchange for a person.”

The moonlight was covered by the clouds again. Lin Shan looked out the window and mumbled: “So many clouds. It’s probably going to rain tomorrow....”

Xiao Lu yawned and murmured: “Master, go to bed. Even if it rains tomorrow, you will be in the Palace. Why are you worried?”

“What do you know!?” Lin Shan rolled her eyes at Xiao Lu as she turned over to continue looking at the sky. A few moments later, Xiao Lu had fallen asleep again. Soon, the whole room was filled with her snoring. Xiao Lu snored like a pig and it was driving Lin Shan nuts.

Lin Shan threw a pillow at Xiao Lu, but Xiao Lu grabbed it and started rubbing her saliva all over it.

Poor Lin Shan had no pillow to sleep on now. Therefore, she decided not to sleep. She got onto her stomach and rested her face on both her hands as she thought about her first encounter with Lian Feng. As she thought about all their moments together, she couldn’t help but grin like a fool. She spent the entire night grinning foolishly. If Xiao Lu had seen her, she would probably have been terrified.

By the time all the snapshots of their moments have appeared in her mind, it was morning. Lin Shan didn’t sleep the entire night. Yet, surprisingly, she felt

very awake. She decided to bid Lian Feng goodbye at the Palace gate. Although he had insisted her not to go, as a woman from the modern world, why would she submit to his authority?

Lin Shan rolled herself off the bed and conveniently dragged Xiao Lu with her. However, Xiao Lu was still in a drowsy state. She looked like a ghost who had died unjustly. On their way out, many servants were frightened by her face.

Promoted post: [How most Asian Parents think](#)

Chapter 61

To my dear readers,

Based on the comments from the last chapter, you guys really liked it! Haha. I'm glad. Your emotions are going to go on a roller coaster soon!! Nothing much happened in this chapter but soon.... *dun dun dun*. Don't tell me I didn't warn you!

Chapter 61

At this time, the gloomy sky had started drizzling and made the early morning slightly chilly. Xiao Lu sneezed and became more awake. She hurried over to cover Lin Shan with her umbrella as she complained: "Master, why are we up so early? There's barely anyone out here!"

"What do you know?" Lin Shan mumbled as she continued heading towards the Palace gate.

"I don't know. I don't know.. you always say I don't know..." Xiao Lu muttered. "Actually, I do know! You want the owner of the golden sabre. You want his sabre and his body. You are so corrupted!"

Lin Shan nearly tripped. She looked at Xiao Lu resentfully: This little punk is too mainstream! You're from the modern world, aren't you?

Xiao Lu blushed: "Master. Don't look at me like that. It makes me shy...."

"...." Lin Shan almost spat out blood.

The two of them continued to tease each other back and forth. Finally, they arrived at the Palace gate. By now, the Sun had just came up. As expected, there was already a team present. Since finding the antidote was an urgent matter, Lian Feng didn't bring a lot of people with him. They weren't bring a lot with them either because they plan to hurry back.

Xiao Lu had sharp eyes and pointed out from amongst the group: "Master, I see him. He's over there!"

"Shhh. Lower your voice!" Lin Shan quickly grabbed Xiao Lu and pulled her

behind a sculpture.

Xiao Lu didn't understand: "Master. You're already here. Why are you afraid to let him see you? Oh, I know! You're shy!!"

"Shy your sister!" Lin Shan flicked Xiao Lu on the forehead.

Last night, she personally said she wasn't coming. If Lian Feng saw her going back on her words, she would lose face. Therefore, she definitely didn't want him to notice her!

Currently, all the horses and people were ready. Lian Feng stood in front of them. His tall and straight figure looked very bold in this drizzly weather.

Wow, how can a man look so good? The more Lin Shan looked, the more excited she became. Honestly, she wanted to run towards him and leap into his arms.

At this moment, Du Hao arrived. Surprisingly, he had no one with him. But he was in formal attires and looked extremely intimidating. Aside from Lian Feng, everyone knelt down. However, Lian Feng only nodded. He did not show any signs of fear.

"Woah! Lian Superior looks so manly!" Xiao Lu looked smitten.

Of course....wait a second! Are you checking out my man? You don't want to live anymore, eh? Lin Shan gave Xiao Lu the death glare and Xiao Lu quickly altered her words: "Your servant meant to say, the Crown Prince is so manly!"

Are you implying that my man is less manly? Lin Shan's eyes darkened.

Xiao Lu realized she said something wrong again and immediately changed the subject: "Look! They're leaving!"

Lin Shan turned her attention towards the Palace gate again. They were ready. Lian Feng leaped onto Wu Ying and Wu Ying neighed. The Palace was surrounded by the echoes of horses as the gates opened up. "Set off!" Lian Feng commanded.

The rest of the guards followed, and soon, there was only Du Hao left. He looked deep in thought as he watched them depart. He remained in the same position until the gates closed.

It suddenly started to rain harder. Lin Shan felt very cold and empty. She wasn't sure if the reason was because Lian Feng left, or the rain: "Let's go." She looked at Xiao Lu. But instead, she noticed Xiao Lu looking fearfully in front of her. Lin Shan was curious and turned around.

She was astonished because Du Hao had directed his glance towards them. He clearly saw them as they made eye contact.

Lin Shan noticed Du Hao's stare was a bit different today. It looked extremely dignified and cold. It was the type of look that would cause someone to be mentally stressed. It reminded her of their first encounter; making it impossible for her to lightly greet him.

Umm... I just woke up early to say farewell. I didn't break any rules, right? Why are you looking at me like that? There are no words on my face... ai ya! Please, stop looking at me! You're making my heart tremble!!

"Master, the Crown Prince doesn't have an umbrella." Xiao Lu noted.

Oh, true! He must want our umbrella! Although it was raining harder, she rushed Xiao Lu: "Go! Bring the umbrella to the Crown Prince!"

I'm begging you. Take the umbrella and leave. My glass heart cannot handle the way you're staring at me!

"Huh?" Xiao Lu looked like she wanted to cry: "Master, do I have to go?" Clearly, her impression of Du Hao was quite bad.

Lin Shan looked annoyed: "Are you telling me to go instead?" Then she lifted her head: What? Where did he go? It turned out that while they were talking, Du Hao had already left. Only his rear view could be seen from a distance. It gradually disappeared from sight.

At this moment, Lin Shan had another strange feeling. It was as if....she would never see Du Hao again. Lin Shan was shocked by her pessimistic thought and quickly snapped out of it. She called Xiao Lu and was about to leave when another voice stopped her.

"Prince Consort sure wakes up early."

Based on voice, Lin Shan couldn't tell who it was. She turned and saw the

person wearing a white gown with his hair done up. The man looked like a handsome scholar, and for a moment, she couldn't recall who he was until the man narrowed his eyes when he saw her shocked expression.

Suddenly, Lin Shan remembered and her face turned green.

Are you kidding me? It's Du Ye! Why does he look so different without his armour? And why is he talking to me? Does he have a plan up his sleeves?

Lin Shan saw Du Ye yesterday, and currently she had very conflicting views about this guy. Her mental state was at its limit as she said with a frozen face: "Your servant did not know your Highness was here. I'm sorry for the lack of manners. Please punish me accordingly."

"Prince Consort. You're too serious. I just happened to pass by. There is no lack of manners." Du Ye was very courteous towards her, but Lin Shan still felt apprehensive towards him.

Du Ye continued: "Since we have met by fate, why don't I invite you over as a guest?"

The moment Du Ye said this, Lin Shan remembered the saying: "Beware of suspicious folks giving gifts". Du Ye must have a motive if he was inviting her over. At that moment, Lin Shan felt a bit miserable: I don't have the golden sabre. I don't have much meat on me either. My sleeves are clean and I live in a room with four bare walls. Why are you all watching me so attentively? You may not find it tiring, but I do!

Her expression didn't look too good as she politely declined: "Your Highness, I appreciate your kind intentions, but the Sun has barely risen and it's raining. I'm afraid if I pay a visit, it will be troublesome for others. Why don't we meet on another day? What do you think?"

She was sure clever. No wonder Du Hao fancied her.

Du Ye didn't say a word but gazed deeply at Lin Shan. After a few moments, he responded: "Since Prince Consort has already made up his mind, I'm not going to press. Fortunately, I will be here for a long time. We will have another opportunity, wouldn't you say?" Du Ye deftly replied.

Lin Shan felt cold sweats running down her body. Mother! This guy's position

was even higher than Du Hao's! But the difference was, Du Hao was very open with what he wants, whereas Du Ye had hidden intentions. Du Ye was even more dangerous!

At this moment, Lin Shan felt like danger was lurking on every corner. The moment she has an opportunity, she will run!

Promoted post: [Taking Responsibility](#)

Chapter 62

To my dear readers,

This chapter is not that long but it took me forever. It's very hard to translate because I'm trying to make it so that you can envision it in your head while reading. Translating is hard. Choosing the right adjective is hard. Making it flow is hard. EVERYTHING IS HARD. Please support me if you are able to! I appreciate any amount!

Chapter 62

The rain continued as the autumn winds blew.

Lian Feng left the Capital by nighttime and finally arrived at the outskirts of the black forest on the second night. The air was damp and there was a thick fog covering the dense forest. The fog was so thick that the bottom couldn't be seen.

Du Hao had sent his assistant Gu Zuo to assist Lian Feng. Gu Zuo circled around the outer edge of the forest and reported back to Lian Feng: "Lian Superior, the Sun had set and the fog around the forest seems very strange. I'm afraid it might be unsafe. Perhaps we should wait until morning before we proceed?"

"Time is tight. The Emperor cannot wait so long. I have been in this forest before so I'm familiar with the terrain. Let's split up into two groups. I will lead the way with Chi Fei. You and Chang Yu will be behind us providing support. We must find the antidote before the sunrise!" Lian Feng ordered as he spurred Wu Ying. Wu Ying neighed and stormed into the white misty forest.

"Follow along!" Gu Zuo hollered. With a blink of an eye, four horses charged into the forest. The creepy forest was like the mouth of a monster. It quickly swallowed the people and the horses; even the echoes disappeared in a flash.

After a few moments, ten or more shadows dropped from the sky without a sound. They were standing outside of the black forest.

"Superior. They are inside now." A dark shadow knelt as he reported.

The leader of the group looked towards the forest and said in a low voice: "Execute according to plan."

His voice was still lingering in the air when the shadows dispersed in all directions. Their kung fu abilities showed no trace of their existence. It was as if they were never there.

Meanwhile, Lian Feng and his team had already entered the deep part of the forest. Due to the weather, the fog was very thick. The further they went, the less visibility they had. The horses couldn't gallop because they couldn't see. They could only fumble their way through.

From behind, Gu Zuo and Chang Yu were following precisely as they carefully observed their surroundings.

There wasn't even a sound of a single bird. It was oddly quiet.

"Gu brother. Why is it that I feel like something is wrong?" Chang Yu grew up around a forest. He naturally had a very sharp intuition. "This white mist isn't poisonous air, yet there isn't a single bird in sight. I'm afraid there's trouble!"

The moment Chang Yu made that statement, Gu Zuo felt increasingly alert and uncomfortable: "You're right. This forest is too quiet. There's definitely something wrong. Let's go and warn Lian Superior. Hurry!" Right after those words were spoken, Wu Ying's whines could be heard.

"Oh no!" Gu Zuo yelled. He quickly whipped his horse to catch up, but it was too late. Sounds of weapons clashing cut through the silent forest. The aura of death filled the air.

These black clothed men were clearly well trained. In addition, they were very familiar with the landscape. They took advantage of the huge plants and trees and ambushed Lian Feng. Furthermore, their breathing were almost abnormal. Lian Feng had never seen anything like it; he couldn't detect them at all.

By now, Gu Zuo and Chang Yu had arrived. They both wielded out their swords and joined in the fight. However, things weren't looking good for them. They were against three times the amount of people, and the enemies were familiar with the area. Plus, the fog was so dense they could barely see.

They were losing when suddenly Chi Fei, who had grown up around the area,

yelled: “Superior. Keep heading forward! The elevation is higher. There will be less fog!”

The four of them continued to fight as they proceeded forward. As expected, the elevation was higher and the fog started to sink lower. The further up they went, the thinner the fog became. Soon, they were able to see the ground again. As for their enemies, they weren’t able to camouflage between the forest anymore; making them easier to defeat. It looked like the table had turned.

At this time, they were close to the edge of the cliff. There was a river valley up ahead and the rapid running water sounded like a beast roaring at night. The black clothed men were closing in and five of them attacked Lian Feng from all sides. Every move was meant to be fatal. Step by step, they forced him towards the edge of the cliff. Clearly, they wanted to force him off.

“Chi Fei, you scoundrel! Where have you led us? Go and assist Lian Feng!” Gu Zuo screamed at Chi Fei.

Chi Fei responded as he rushed in front of Lian Feng to block the attacks of two black clothed men. He turned around and blared: “Superior. I’m sorry. I’ve led us the wrong way!”

Lian Feng didn’t reply, but said: “Watch out behind you!” He lifted his sabre and blocked the sword that was heading for Chi Fei’s back. At the same time, he suddenly felt an intense pain. A shining sharp sword had pierced through his chest. Lian Feng’s brows furrowed as he looked up. In front of him was Chi Fei. His simple and honest face had turned cunning and cruel.

“Superior, you shouldn’t always be worried about your back. The front is equally as dangerous.” Chi Fei wickedly stated as he drew out the sword. Fresh blood spilled out and Chi Fei ruthlessly rammed his palm against Lian Feng’s chest.

Lian Feng lost his balance and took a couple steps back. But there was no more path, and he fell off the cliff.

The darkness quickly consumed Lian Feng. All that remained was the bloodstain on the rock.

“Ah!” Lin Shan cried out from her dream. She was drenched in cold sweat.

“What’s wrong? What happened? Is there a thief? Fire? Flood? Earthquake? We have to run!!!!” Xiao Lu was awoken by Lin Shan and started running around the room like an agitated housefly. It took her awhile before she calmed down and looked at Lin Shan.

Xiao Lu noticed Lin Shan was staring at her with her eyes opened wide as she sat upright with a fearful expression on her face. Lin Shan’s forehead was covered in small beads of sweat.

“Pffft...” Xiao Lu breathe out a sigh of relief, “Master, you were dreaming? You almost scared me to death....” She went over to cover Lin Shan with the blanket. But the moment she was within close proximity, Lin Shan grabbed her by the wrist.

“Xiao Lu, I’m worried about Lian Feng.”

Xiao Lu laughed: “Ai ya, Master! Lian Superior only left for two days and you’re already like this. If he found out, he would tease you.”

Surprisingly, Lin Shan didn’t have a rebuttal. Instead, she got up for the bed: “This will not do. My heart is shaken. I am going to go out for a walk. Don’t follow me!” Then, before Xiao Lu could react, she draped an outer garment on her back and left the room.

Promoted post: [Things to consider when investing](#)

Chapter 63

To my dear readers,

This chapter is short. I would have released it earlier but I'm not feeling too well again. Please be patient.

Chapter 63

The rain had finally stopped.

Lin Shan felt like her dream had transformed into a knot of air and it wouldn't go away. She aimlessly walked around the Palace by herself. Slowly, she began to feel better, but Lian Feng's last expression remained in her mind. It wouldn't disappear.

He'll be fine. Stop over thinking! Stop over thinking, you hear me? Lin Shan was trying to comfort herself. Unconsciously, she ended up by the pond in the middle of the night. It was quiet and calm. The curved moon hung from the sky; shining a faint light on the peaceful pond.

Coincidentally, Lin Shan actually saw someone familiar at this time. Originally, she was staring blankly at the pond. But suddenly, she heard voices behind her. Lin Shan turned around and saw two Imperial guards dragging the drunken Du Jing. Clearly, he had just come back from indulging in sensual pleasures.

How can anyone be so shameless? Your dad is dying and you are still in the mood to party? What a scumbag!

Lin Shan said all this inside, but Du Jing's sharp eyes noticed her: "Oh? Isn't that the Prince Consort?! Are you waiting for me specifically? You want to drink together? Come, let's go and have a drink...."

What? Pah! *spitting sound out of contempt*. Without reason, Lin Shan felt disgusted from within. She rolled her eyes at Du Jing and turned to leave. But Du Jing pulled her back: "Brother, don't go. Drink with me. Ohhhhh, I am wrong... I should say sister instead....."

Although Du Jing was mumbling vaguely, Lin Shan reacted right away. She grabbed hold of him and before the two guards could hear Du Jing say anything

else, she said: “You can leave the Third Prince with me. You may leave now.”

“But Prince Consort, the Highness ordered....” The guards looked conflicted.

“Bullshit. What order? You can’t even trust me with the Third Prince? The Prince Consort?”

“Yes. Your servants will leave now!” The two Imperial guards were afraid of messing with the Prince Consort and quickly left Du Jing behind.

The Imperial guards weren’t far off when Lin Shan heard Du Jing’s voice: “Not bad. You’ve been Prince Consort for so long that you actually have some attitude.”

Somehow, Du Jing had reverted back to his normal state. He looked amused as he taunted her with a smile.

“You’re not drunk?” Lin Shan was a bit surprised.

“Of course not.” Du Jing straightened his posture and fixed his hair and clothing. Then he grumbled: “That guy thinks the Palace belongs to him. Letting out so many dogs to watch us. Ugghh so annoying.”

“Are you talking about the Eldest Prince?”

“Who else can it be?”

Lin Shan couldn’t help but crinkled her brows. Xiao Lu had mentioned that ever since the Eldest Prince returned, he had placed a lot more guards everywhere. His reasoning was to protect the Emperor. In addition, he didn’t allow people to walk around the Palace freely at night. It turned out Xiao Lu’s words were true.

“Hm.. It’s so late at night. Why are you here?” Du Jing suddenly asked.

“None of your business!” Lin Shan glared at him.

“Of course it’s my business.” Du Jing smiled like a sly fox as he lowered his head and whispered in her ear: “Because I like you.”

His voice was soft as he stretched out the words. It was quite charming. However, his next line wasn’t that pleasant to listen to: “It must be fate that we met. Since I like you, why don’t you bring me to check out that Heaven stone? What do you think?”

Huh? Pah! Lin Shan nearly spat. Wow, he never learns! How can anyone be so shameless? It's truly against the Heaven's law. Humans and Gods are angered! As a modern female, I must protect the minds of the weak and punish you in the name of the Universe!

"Ok." Lin Shan nodded. "I don't need that shitty rock anyway. I can give it to you."

Du Jing didn't expect Lin Shan to agree so easily. He was on alert as he said: "Really?"

"Really." Lin Shan nodded. Her face was serious. "However, as an exchange, you have to help me find the Princess. You promised me before."

"No problem."

"Okay. Come here." Lin Shan waved him over.

Du Jing leaned over.

"The stone is at ^\$%\$*&%&....."

"What?"

It's at ^\$%\$*&%&....."

"Speak louder."

"I said! The stone is at—"

Dong! Lin Shan lifted her leg and kicked Du Jing into the pond.

"In the pond!" Lin Shan yelled at the soaked Du Jing. Seeing his expensive embroidered robe drenched and his hair a mess, she felt very accomplished and proud. Her terrible mood instantly flipped.

Wow! It turns out if you're depressed, jumping into the pond is no use. You have to kick someone into the pond! Lin Shan waved at Du Jing: "Third Prince. Take your time to search. It's at the bottom. If you can't find it, don't bother coming out!" Then, she hummed a folk song as she cheerfully left.

Poor Du Jing was left alone as he climbed to shore. He gnashed his teeth: "Song Luo, you just wait. One day you will be under my control!"

Promoted post: [Born to Win](#)

Chapter 64

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Sibylia Lingga** for her donation! Thank you so much for supporting me. I truly appreciate it. ♥

The novel is going to get more intense... and a lot more surprises are going to come up soon. Stay tuned.

Chapter 64

Since she helped humanity, Lin Shan felt awesome. The nightmare totally left her mind. For the next two days, she ate and slept well. Whenever she was bored, she would take a look at her treasure box and calculate her current monetary worth.

“This one (banknote) can buy us a house in Jiang Nan.” Lin Shan took out another sheet and placed it on the table, “This one can buy us a couple acres of land and two ox. As for this sheet, Xiao Lu, do you think I should open a tavern or a restaurant?”

Xiao Lu intently stared at Lin Shan: “Master, didn’t you say you wanted to open a brothel?”

“That was before!” Lin Shan rolled her eyes at Xiao Lu: “I thought about it. There are too many beauties in brothels. The sexual tension is too strong. I don’t want my man to be tempted. Plus, brothels are too common. It cannot show off my talents. So I have changed my mind. I am going to open a tavern! The name will be called the Dragon Gate Tavern. Selling buns will be the specialty!”

Xiao Lu was clearly shocked: “...Master, you’re truly one of a kind.”

“Of course!” Lin Shan thought very highly of herself: “I also plan on opening a biao ju*!”

“What do you plan to call the biao ju?”

Lin Shan thought about it: “I know! The Golden Sabre Biao Ju!”

Xiao Lu nearly choked on her tea. She gave Lin Shan a dirty look: “Master, you

still can't forget the golden sabre, eh?"

"Bullshit. That's gold!" Lin Shan naturally nodded.

Xiao Lu was speechless. After a few moments, she said: "Speaking of the golden sabre, Lian Superior should be back today."

"Mhm." Lin Shan nodded, pretending to look calm.

Xiao Lu was excited: "Master, why don't we go to the Palace gate and wait for Lian Superior?"

"Pah! Grow up. What type of young lady would throw herself out there like that? Be reserved. Understand?"

Xiao Lu looked wronged and grumbled: "Who was the one who secretly hid behind a stone statue to bid farewell? Pssh, reserved."

"What did you say?"

"Your servant did not say anything!" Xiao Lu quickly shook her head.

"Hmm.. that's right!" Lin Shan made a humph sound and started counting her banknotes again. After she counted them for the third time, she reluctantly placed the banknotes back into the box and closed the lid. Then, she lifted her head and looked at Xiao Lu: "Why don't we go out and take a look?"

".....Master, you need to be reserved!"

"Reserved your sister! I'm going to greet the golden sabre. Not to greet a person!" She carefully put the box away and pulled Xiao Lu with her.

Poor Xiao Lu only drank half her tea, but was dragged out by the frenzy Lin Shan.

Since Dawn, Du Hao had already brought a bunch of his people with him to an upper area to wait. From where he was, he could see a lot further. He could see the flat and expansive main street that was right outside the Palace gate. The main street ran straight through the Capital. The country's flourishing districts could be seen all around. All the wealthy and riches were mixed within.

Yet, at the end of the road, outside the Capital, stood tens of thousands of Du Ye's troops. Each of the soldier's blade had once faced the enemies from the

border. But now, they were ready to face his country and his people for his title.

Was this the price of being born royal? There was no such thing as the so-called family love. “Blood is thicker than water” was no match for the enticing position of the Emperor. Despite being siblings, ultimately, they will massacre each other.

Du Hao closed his eyes and took a deep breath. He was enjoying his last moments of peace. The air had already started to become unstable. The flames may spark at any moment.

“Your Highness, they have arrived!” A guard with good eyes was keeping on a lookout saw horses heading towards the Palace gate.

“Let’s go down to greet them!” Du Hao snapped out of his peaceful moment. Victory or defeat will be determined by this result.

A bunch of guards followed Du Hao down as the Palace gates slowly opened. Two horses stormed in. One of them had the golden sabre around his waist. It was shining against the sunrise.

Xiao Lu glanced through the crowd and suddenly whispered: “Master, look! The golden sabre!”

“Grow up!” Lin Shan said under her breath. But the corner of her mouth couldn’t help but curve upwards. She looked towards the Palace gate with anticipation. Gradually, the horses’ hooves became clearer. The men on the horses stood straight and firm. They bear the hope of many. But at this moment, Lin Shan’s expression froze.

That face didn’t have a mask!

At the same time, there was also a slight change in Du Hao’s expression.

The horses finally stopped and Gu Zuo leaped off. Gu Zuo had a very unnatural expression on his face as he knelt in front of Du Hao. He had bloodstains all over his body, and his face was filthy. It was clear that he had gone through a fierce battle. Behind him, Chang Yu’s expression was also grave.

“Your subordinate deserves to die ten thousand times. I have failed to complete the mission your Highness had given me. Please punish me!” Gu Zuo’s

voice caused everyone's hearts to thump.

Immediately, the lively Palace gate turned deadly silent. Du Hao's face paled and he looked grey. A few moments later, he asked in a hoarse voice: "Where is Lian Superior?"

"To report to your Highness, we entered the black forest but were ambushed. Traitor Chi Fei betrayed us. Lian Superior was stabbed and fell into the river valley. We tried to find him, but the flow of the water was too strong. We were only able to find Lian Superior's sabre and...." Gu Zuo stopped speaking. Instead, he raised the sabre and presented Du Hao with Lian Feng's mask.

The sunrise gave the silver mask a layer of gold. It looked very tragic underneath the radiance.

Du Hao didn't ask the eunuch beside him to bring him the items. Instead, he took a few steps forward and took the items from Gu Zuo's hands. At the same time, there was suddenly a noise. Quickly following was Xiao Lu's screams: "Oh no! Come and help! Prince Consort has fainted!"

Du Hao's heart sank as he turned around and saw Lin Shan's white face. His heart felt twisted and in pain. "Hurry and help! Send the Imperial physician!"

"Send the Imperial physician!" Everyone started yelling everywhere. A couple of guards clumsily tried to pick Lin Shan up. At this moment, a strong pair of arms carried her away.

Du Hao's eyes were filled with anxiety as he carried Lin Shan horizontally to his residence. Behind him was a big mess; some were screaming and some were crying. The whole Palace was chaotic. No one noticed a little eunuch sneaking out from the crowd and headed towards the Eldest Prince's residence.

"To report to your Highness, your subordinate saw it with his own eyes. It is definitely true." In Hua Qing Palace, Du Ye had assigned his trusted aide, Han Ying, into the Eastern Palace. Han Ying told Du Ye everything he knew and saw.

"Oh?" Du Ye had a poker face as he calmly stated, "So Prince Consort actually fainted."

"Your subordinate saw it during the chaos. It is absolutely true. She didn't fake it."

Du Ye cunningly smiled: “The Crown Prince and an Imperial guard fighting over a woman. Fascinating. Truly fascinating!”

“Your Highness, if the Emperor is dead for good, then why don’t we allow the soldiers from outside to....”

Du Ye’s eyes flashed: “When were you given the authority to speak?”

Han Ying was so scared that he instantly got down on his knees: “Your subordinate talked too much. Your subordinate knows his wrongs. Please forgive me!”

“Get up.” Du Ye waved his sleeves.

“Thank you for your forgiveness. Thank you, your Highness!” Han Ying trembled as he got up. He was already covered in sweat.

“Remember, whenever I am assigning you something, never question or speak. Just do as I say. Understand?”

“Your subordinate understands.”

“Good. You may leave.”

“Your subordinate will take his leave....” Han Ying sighed in relief as he turned to leave. But the moment he stepped out, another subordinate entering directly stabbed his sword through his heart. Han Ying fell down onto the ground.

Right before he died, Han Ying turned and stared at the expressionless Du Ye: “Your Highness, w-why.....”

Du Ye slowly walked up to him with a disappointing look on his face: “Never question or speak. You just promised me, why don’t you understand?”

The other subordinate pulled out the sword and Han Ying struggled for a few seconds then died with his eyes opened.

“Never ask or speak. Until death, understand?” Du Ye harshly looked at the one that killed.

“Your subordinate understands.”

Han Ying’s body was dragged out. There was a pool of blood by the doorstep; as if it could foretell an upcoming gory battle.

*A biao ju is a place that you can go to if you want to deliver items to certain locations (they're supposed to be very powerful people who can keep the items safe. They will send people to deliver your items).

Promoted post: [Life and Blogging](#)

Chapter 65

To my dear readers,

This chapter is very sad. (But don't worry, we all know Lian Feng isn't really dead..:P. He will come back eventually...but before then, lots of crazy things will happen).

Chapter 65

Currently, Du Hao was panicking inside Ming Yue Palace. The Imperial physician was taking Lin Shan's pulse.

"Your Highness, please do not worry. Prince Consort fainted from shock, but he is alright. As long as he takes his medication and rest, he will wake up fine." Then, the Imperial physician left the room with Xiao Lu to boil the medicine.

Du Hao went over to the bedside and saw Lin Shan's pale face. Her eyes were tightly shut and her lips had no colour to it. His heart ached. At that moment, he was jealous. He was envious of Lian Feng's past, his encounters, and even the fact he fell down into the river valley.

If I was the person who fell, would you be this upset?

He couldn't help but stroke Lin Shan's face with his fingers. Bitterness lingered around his heart.

At this moment, Lin Shan suddenly opened her eyes and calmly gazed at Du Hao.

"Lian Feng?" She whimpered. Her voice was light.

Du Hao didn't shake his head, instead he grasped Lin Shan's hand. Yet, she rejected him as she flung his hand away.

"You're not Lian Feng..." Lin Shan started talking to herself, "Lian Feng went to get the antidote. He's not back yet. The sky is already dark. What if he got lost? He has to go such a long way. He must be starving. I'm going to go prepare some food for him to eat." Then, Lin Shan tried getting up from the bed as she swayed.

Her every sentence stabbed into him like needles. Du Hao held in the pain as he

pressed Lin Shan down: “You just woke up. Don’t get up.”

“Don’t stop me. I need to peel some walnuts. Lian Feng likes to eat walnuts. He likes the little ones. He likes it when I peel it for him....”

It was as if Lin Shan had gone into her whole little world. Regardless of how Du Hao tried to stop her, she insisted on getting out of bed. She started overturning trunks and boxes for walnuts.

Huh? Where are the walnuts? Xiao Lu must have ate it all. I’m going to lecture her...”

“Song Luo, stop. Luo Luo!” Du Hao anxiously stopped Lin Shan from looking for Xiao Lu, “Don’t be like this. You’re still half asleep. Sleep a bit more, okay? Be good....”

“I am awake. Stop blocking me! I’m going to wait for Lian Feng by the Palace gate. He isn’t back yet. I bet he wants me to wait for him by the gate. He’ll come back if I wait for him. I’m going...” Lin Shan’s voice became lighter and lighter. Finally, she broke down in tears. “You... stop blocking me... stop blocking me...I’m begging you....I’m begging you...” She couldn’t pretend any longer as she nearly fell down onto the ground.

Du Hao tightly hugged her. He could feel her hopelessness from her tears. Every sound was ripping his heart apart. The woman he loved was crying for another man, yet the only thing he could do was to hold her close.

Lin Shan cried for a very long time. Her thoughts were an utter mess and her eyes looked lost. She sobbed as she scolded: “Lian Feng! On March 5th, I entered the Palace. You came to pick me up and threw me onto the horse. On March 18th, you couldn’t tell the difference between wine and aphrodisiac. I had to knock you out with a stick. Did you wanted to become a father? On March 20th, you got punished through beating; yet you said you were fine. If I didn’t help you apply medication, were you planning to die from pain?

On May 7th, you left me with a shitty horse. It wouldn’t listen to me and it looked down on me. Just like you! On June 15th, you secretly changed my clothes while I was unconscious. You pervert! You ate my tofu and then you ran. You thought I didn’t know? On July 6th, you took my jade pendant and said it was dowry... on September 16th, you promised me you will get the antidote. You

said you will take me away once you get back. It has been 5 days, but you're still not back yet. Are you a man? How can you not keep your word? Give me back my dowry.... give it back.....”

Lin Shan continued to weep and wail until she was so exhausted that she couldn't speak anymore. Eventually, she passed out.

When the last sobbing sound disappeared, Du Hao breathed a sigh of relief. He closed his eyes. At that moment, he seemed to understand. Perhaps this woman had made the right choice...

— — —

By the time Lin Shan woke up, Du Hao was gone.

Since they failed to get the antidote, the Emperor's illness became more severe. As the Crown Prince, Du Hao had to constantly monitor his father's condition as well as handle the Imperial Court. He had no choice but to leave Lin Shan for the time being.

“Master, you are awake?” Xiao Lu carried the medicine into the room. She noticed Lin Shan sitting straight on the bed. Xiao Lu was happy and quickly rushed towards her. However, the moment she got up close, she stopped.

Xiao Lu had never seen her Master looked like this before. Lin Shan's eyes looked empty and hopeless. It was as if her spirit had been taken out of her. She was the total opposite of the usual lively Lin Shan. Xiao Lu was horrified as her hands started to tremble. She carefully called: “Master? Master? Master....”

After calling five or six times, Lin Shan finally had a reaction. She slowly turned towards her with an expressionless face.

That look caused Xiao Lu's eyes to turn red. She could accept it if Lin Shan cried and screamed; even if Lin Shan said she wanted to die. But seeing her Master turn into a living corpse was too much. Xiao Lu's heart ached and tears spilled out. She quickly rubbed her eyes with her sleeves as she presented the medicine to Lin Shan.

“Master, drink the medicine first.”

Lin Shan didn't take the bowl of medicine from Xiao Lu. Her eyes fixedly stared

at the thick substance in front of her.

Xiao Lu was afraid Lin Shan was turning insane so she quickly pressed: “Master? Master! Drink the medicine! Come on... drink it and it will all be fine....”

Xiao Lu pushed the thick medicine in front of Lin Shan and the sharp stench instantly went up her nose. Lin Shan lifted her head up and asked: “What type of medicine is this?”

Xiao Lu didn’t expect Lin Shan to react this way and immediately said: “This is what Sun Physician prescribed you. He said as long you drink it, you will be cured.”

Cured? Lin Shan pondered over the word. Then, she abruptly raised her head and said: “I’m not ill. I am not drinking it.”

Xiao Lu knew Lin Shan had suffered through shock and hadn’t recovered. Therefore, she was freaking out as she consoled: “Master, your servant knows the medication is bitter. But good medicine tastes bitter. Just drink it and sleep. When you get up, everything will be ok. Please drink it....”

“I’m not drinking it!” Lin Shan exclaimed as she furiously shook her head, “I don’t want to sleep either. I’m leaving the Palace.” Lin Shan was firm and decisive. She seemed very clear headed.

Xiao Lu was astonished. She looked at Lin Shan and saw that her spirit had returned. Lin Shan’s eyes revealed determination and certainty. She grabbed onto Xiao Lu’s hand and declared: “Xiao Lu, let’s leave the Palace to find Lian Feng!”

Promoted post: [Communication](#)

Chapter 66

To my dear readers,

Happy Halloween! This chapter took me SO LONG and it was so hard to translate. -_-” The story has been kind of slow lately, but it will pick up in Chapter 68. You are going to be SOOOO SHOCKED.

Chapter 66

Lin Shan’s words caused Xiao Lu to freak out.

Oh my goodness, it’s over!! The shock is too much for Master to handle! Even Gu Zuo, who is known as the Palace’s most honest man, said he saw Lian Feng falling down the river valley with his own eyes. How could Lian Superior be alive? Yet, Master is demanding that we look for him. Has she turned insane?

At this moment, Lin Shan had already regained her mind.

Who says Lian Feng is dead? If he is dead, I demand to see his body. So far, they haven’t been able to find his body. This means that there is a chance he is alive! As long as there is hope, she is not going to give up so easily. As long as there’s a possibility that he’s alive, she will find him! Even if the chances of finding him is one out of ten thousand, she will look through the ends of the Earth.

Her optimism gave her a sudden boost of energy, and she crawled out of bed. Lin Shan commanded Xiao Lu: “Pack our things and leave the Palace with me. We’re going to find Lian Feng.”

— — —

Du Hao never expected the woman who cried as if her livers and guts were torn in pieces would recover so quickly. At the time, it seemed like Lin Shan was never going to get out of her traumatic state. By the time he realized that Lin Shan was not the type to mope and submit to the will of the Heaven, it was too late.

This time, Lin Shan truly left. She even took her treasure box from underneath the pillow. There was a letter on the empty table. It looked like it was written by

a dog -all the letters were crooked: I went to find Lian Feng. I'm sure we will meet again one day.

Du Hao scrunched up the letter as blue veins popped out from his forehead. His fingers were tightly clenched: "Song Luo, you fool!"

"Ahh-choo!" Lin Shan sneezed in her Eunuch outfit.

Xiao Lu was anxious: "Master, are you alright?"

"I'm fine." Lin Shan shook her head. She had never felt so determined before. Her body was filled with strength. "Let's find an inn first to organized our things. Then, we will head towards the Black Mountain."

The two of them left the Palace very quickly and changed out of their Eunuch outfits into two Scholars outfits. They found an ordinary inn on the west side of the Capital that would make it more convenient for them to go on their journey.

Lin Shan gave the waiter a silver sycee* and ordered him to find her a horse carriage. The waiter's eyes shone when he saw the silver. He nodded and bowed as he took the money and ran off in search of a carriage.



*A reader told me this is a sycee! Haha. In case you don't know what it is, I found a picture to give you an idea.

Xiao Lu stared in astonishment: "Master, your servant finally understands why you love money so much. It turns out money is very important!"

"Now you know?" Lin Shan rolled her eyes, "Money isn't everything, but without money, you're screwed. We need to find Lian Feng so we're going to

need to use a lot of money. Watch and learn.”

Xiao Lu obeyed and continuously nodded. But then, she hesitated: “But Master, if we cannot find Lian Superior, are we going to keep looking forever?”

Xiao Lu didn’t think before she spoke, and Lin Shan’s mood immediately dropped. Just as Xiao Lu realized her mistake, Lin Shan suddenly lifted her head and firmly stated with an abnormal amount of positivity: “Yes, we will keep looking until we find him!”

Although she knew they wouldn’t find anything, at that moment, Xiao Lu couldn’t help but became as confident as Lin Shan. Perhaps Lian Superior was still alive...perhaps they really will find him...

Sometimes, a person’s determination can be a very scary thing. It’s like a donkey chasing after the dangling carrot. Those with hope will never stop going forward. Lin Shan felt like she had fallen into this state and she could not stop. She knew if she stopped, she will immediately turn depressed. If she gave up hope, then she will definitely never see Lian Feng again.

It was a sleepless night. The next morning, the waiter brought them to the horse carriage he had purchased. When Lin Shan and Xiao Lu saw it, they were dumbfounded.

T-that....was considered a horse carriage? It honestly looked like a broken frame with a cloth on top of it. The horse appeared to be weak and worn out. To make things worse, the one controlling the horse was an old man that was at least eighty years old. His hair was all white and he had a very thick mountain accent. He greeted Lin Shan: “Masta, where ya want ta go yo?”

Lin Shan felt like she had been struck by lightning. Xiao Lu tightly refused to let go of the waiter’s hand: “You’re so corrupted! We gave you a silver sycee and you found us this broken carriage?”

The waiter had a hoodlum attitude: “It is not my fault. The Emperor is ill and the country is in a mess right now. There is a lack of supply. A silver sycee? Even if you gave someone a gold sycee, they might not find something as good. Look at this horse, it is so lovely! Look at this carriage, it is so sturdy!” As he spoke, he tapped onto the carriage and the window fell off.

Lin Shan: “.....”

Xiao Lu: “.....”

At that moment, the horse driver spoke up: “Masta, he is right. Ma horse is fast ah. Fasta than a donkey!”

Lin Shan nearly cried. This horse can compete against a donkey? I’ll chop off my head to let you use as a seat!

Although the horse carriage was shocking, what the waiter said was somewhat true. Since the Emperor was ill, all the entrepreneurs saw it as an opportunity to make a profit during this unstable time. They started hoarding the horses; making the supply very low to raise the prices. Now that the demand was high, they were making a lot of money. Who cares about those who can’t afford it?

As a result, Lin Shan and Xiao Lu ended up on the horse carriage that was supposedly better than a donkey carriage. Along the way, the horse driver sang in the dialect that they couldn’t understand.

Normally, it would only take about a day or so to arrive at the outskirts of the Black Dragon Mountain if they spurred a fast horse. Unfortunately, the horse carriage that Lin Shan rented was much too shabby. It was slow and shaky. After heading out for half a day, they had barely exited the city gates.

Lin Shan was already suffering from horse sickness as she nearly puked out her intestines. When she looked up at Xiao Lu, her servant looked paralyzed. Xiao Lu couldn’t even stand. She was just mumbling repeatedly: “Water...water....”

Lin Shan quickly took out the water canteen, but there was no water remaining. She ordered the horse driver to find water, but surprisingly, the horse driver was willing to do everything else but that.

“Ownlee one horse ma. If I gone, you two steal my horse ah?”

It took awhile for Lin Shan to understand the driver. She finally realized the horse driver was afraid they would take his horse and run.

Lin Shan looked at the horse that couldn’t even chew grass. She twitched. Umm, please. Mister, I’d rather steal a donkey than your horse!

Anyhow, the horse driver was too stubborn and refused to go regardless of

what Lin Shan said. Lin Shan had no choice but to go off and search for water on her own. Fortunately, there was an abundant supply of water on the outskirts of the Capital. Lin Shan quickly found a spring and filled up the water canteen.

She went back for Xiao Lu. But when she came back, her eyes nearly popped out.

What the f***? Where was the horse carriage?

The highland where they were resting was empty. There was only a weak Xiao Lu sitting next to a tree. She looked like she had lost all her senses.

Lin Shan felt an explosion in her mind. She instantly started shaking Xiao Lu: “Xiao Lu! Xiao Lu! Wake up!!”

Xiao Lu weakly opened her eyes and asked as if she was dying: “Master, do you have water?”

“Water your head!” Lin Shan was almost in tears, “Where’s the horse carriage? Where’s the horse driver? Where’s all our stuff?”

Xiao Lu appeared lost as she looked around her. She shook her head: “I don’t know....”

At that moment, Lin Shan knew. They have been scammed.

Promoted post: [When Kevin Won](#)

Chapter 67

To my dear readers,

This chapter was very awkward. Haha. I hope you enjoy it nonetheless. The poem was super weird...I tried. Haha.

By the way, please turn off your adblock to support me. My numbers for September came in, and I only earned \$9.51 from ads. I have been translating for a year now, and so far, Wordads has only paid me once because it won't pay me unless I make over \$100. *cries* I still need another \$45 dollars to get paid the second time. Please help me or donate to me if you can!

P.S. I'm not sure why Lin Shan still wants a prostitution home...I thought she changed her mind.

Chapter 67

The horse carriage was gone. The horse driver was gone. Most importantly, their things were all gone. There goes her land, her ox, her house, and her dream of opening a prostitution home! Lin Shan wanted to die.

Seeing the devastated look on Lin Shan's face, the weak Xiao Lu tried to comfort her on the side: "Master... don't be upset... I always carry our treasure with me...he didn't take it away..."

What? Lin Shan's eyes lit up. Treasure? Xiao Lu took out a heavy sack from behind her butt. She looked extremely proud: "Master, look...."

Woah! It's so heavy! Lin Shan's hope started to flare up. Such a heavy sack, there must be at least a hundred taels! I guess my prostitution home is still happening! And my ox plus land. Woo hoo!

Lin Shan was filled with excitement as she opened the sack. But the moment she saw what was inside, her face froze.

Xiao Lu's "treasure" was wrapped very securely in the sack. It was the Heaven stone that the Emperor had bestowed her. On it were the words "Peace and Prosperity". The four golden words were shining at her.

At that moment, Lin Shan had an urge to crash her head against the stone. Xiao Lu, oh Xiao Lu! Why did you hide this shitty rock so well? You are playing me, aren't you? Lin Shan was about to explode on Xiao Lu, but when she looked up, Xiao Lu had already lost consciousness. Funny enough, she had a triumph smile on her face.

Lin Shan: “.....”

Lin Shan went from being the newly rich, to a person with only a shitty rock. In addition, she had a sick patient to take care of. What a tragedy. Just when Lin Shan felt like her life couldn't get any worse, Xiao Lu started having a fever.

Currently, Lin Shan didn't have time to regret. As she felt Xiao Lu's forehead getting hotter and hotter, she decided she had no choice but to return back to the Capital. Finding Lian Feng will have to wait.

Just like that, they returned after leaving for half a day. The difference was, they left wealthy and returned empty.

They were fortunate enough to have found an ox cart that happened to be going back to the Capital. Hence, under the rhythm of the ox's snorting, Lin Shan once again returned back to the place she had planned to leave behind forever.

By now, Xiao Lu's fever was so high that her life might be at risk. But Lin Shan had no money on her. She had to make a difficult choice.

Either she returns to the Palace or go find her parents.

But neither choices were good for her. If she returns to the Palace, she might never have the chance to escape again. If she goes back home, Du Hao might create trouble for her family.

Lin Shan was very conflicted. At this time, the semi conscious Xiao Lu suddenly pulled her sleeve: “Master... I... I'm f-fine...let's not return.... w-we still need to find Lian Superior....” Xiao Lu had no strength left in her voice. Lin Shan's eyes immediately watered.

This servant had been with her from the moment she had arrived into this world. Although Xiao Lu could be impulsive at times, she was definitely super loyal towards her. To be honest, she didn't treat Xiao Lu that great. At least, in comparison, Xiao Lu treated her much better.

Thinking of this, Lin Shan felt a layer of remorse. She had already lost Lian Feng. She didn't want to lose Xiao Lu as well.

Lin Shan grabbed onto Xiao Lu's hand and firmly stated: "No. We are returning to the Palace. I'm going to make sure you're cured!"

Hearing this, Xiao Lu panicked: "Master. Y-you can't go back! If you go back... you won't be able to come back out!" Since Xiao Lu was anxious, the volume of her voice increased, "Actually... I have a relative in the Capital..."

Relative? Lin Shan's eyes lit up: "What relative?"

Xiao Lu thought about it for awhile: "Based on the family hierarchy...it should be....my second uncle from my mother's side's son's aunt...."

Lin Shan: "....."

It turned out that Xiao Lu wasn't speaking gibberish. After passing by many alleys, they finally arrived at a small alley where they found a nearly eighty years old granny that lived by herself. The old lady had not seen Xiao Lu for years and was extremely emotional. She had tears running down her face as she embraced Xiao Lu. She refused to let go regardless of what was being said: "Cui Hua, your Great Aunt misses you so much. How did you become so thin? Don't worry, I will find a physician for you!"

It turned out that Xiao Lu's original name was Cui Hua. Lin Shan was surprised. At this moment, the old lady had already returned with a physician. The physician took Xiao Lu's pulse and said that her fever was not too severe. However, Xiao Lu's body was weak. Therefore, they would have to take extra care in order to ensure she heals properly.

The physician's words caused Lin Shan to breathe a sigh of relief. At the same time, she realized that Xiao Lu was only an ordinary girl. If Xiao Lu were to run around with her, it will be very hard on her health.

After pondering for a day, Lin Shan decided to make a huge decision before Xiao Lu woke up. Honestly, deep down, she wasn't sure whether she would be able to find Lian Feng. Under the circumstances, she shouldn't drag down anyone else with her. Not to mention, Xiao Lu was one of the closest people to her. Thus, she decided to leave on her own.

Lin Shan decided to secretly leave in the middle of the night. Before she left, she placed the remaining bit of money she had on her as well as the Heaven stone for Xiao Lu and her Great Aunt. She knew what she gave was nothing, but at this moment, it was all she had.

After exiting the alleys, Lin Shan looked up at the starry sky. Underneath the low constructions around her, she suddenly felt like the sky was wider, the moon was bigger, and the stars were prettier. At that moment, she had an urge to recite poetry from her head:

“The cool wind is excited.
The autumn moon has no boundaries.
Causes me to miss my man.
A day feels like years.
Although my beauty
may not hide the moon and shame the flowers,
nor captivate the birds and beasts,
but I,
I have a big heart
and I,
experience joy and sorrow with my man!”

According to the golden scientific laws of going back in time, at this moment, usually the protagonist would meet a beauty after reciting a poem. Although Lin Shan wasn't in the mood to think of love, she couldn't help but turn extremely curious. She wanted to know whether the golden scientific law was true. Thus, after reciting her poem, she carefully looked around her surroundings.

Who knew if it was a coincidence or the golden law taking effect, after looking around, Lin Shan actually noticed a shadow approaching her.

It was a man that walked like the wind. He was wearing a bamboo hat as he glided in his worn out clothes. He had a smoking pipe in one hand; he drew out the smoke, but blew out loneliness. (Lin Shan is just being super dramatic right now)

Lin Shan kept looking. Slowly, she realized the man looked very familiar. When he got closer, the person suddenly reacted as if he saw a ghost and turned and

ran the other direction.

It was then Lin Shan realized, shit! It's the old man that stole our stuff!

At that moment, she felt the adrenaline running through her body. She loudly hollered: "Stop!" Then, she ran after him. She ran after him like Ultraman running after a monster. Her potential was fully aroused.

Lin Shan chased the old man through the busy streets. She chased him for two full streets. Finally, she caught him.

The old man couldn't outrun her. He was out of breath as he begged for mercy: "I'm wrong. I'm wrong.... please big boss, let me go ah....."

Obviously, Lin Shan wouldn't let him go so easily. She grabbed onto his collar and demanded: "Where is my money?"

"Gone ah....."

"What are you talking about? I had so much money. How can it all be gone? Tell me now or I'm going to bring you to the court!"

The old man nearly fell down when he heard the word "court". He cried as his snots and tears rolled down: "It's true. Gone ah... money is there ah! There!"

Lin Shan looked at where the old man was pointing. She finally understood why the old man was still a scammer in his late seventies or early eighties. He was a gambler!

In front of her, she saw the word "casino". The money she took so long to rack in had floated away like the cloud.

Promoted post: [What am I trying to prove?](#)

Chapter 68

To my dear readers,

This chapter was quite shocking to me. Haha. I hope you like it. It's funny..!!
Ahaahha Lin Shan, oh Lin Shan.

By the way, if you're confused, you'll find out in the next chapter!!

Chapter 68

At that moment, Lin Shan was boiling angry.

"You f**ker, don't you have any face? You're so old and you're still gambling? Your mother gave birth to you and worked so hard to support you, yet this is how you repay her? You're a terrible human being. Gamble when you were ten, twenty, thirty...and now you're freaking seventy! You should be ashamed of yourself. Even a dog has a life more meaningful than yours!"

Lin Shan's uproar definitely caused quite a sensation in the busy city. Not only was the old man stunned, but the gamblers around were astonished as well. Originally, they were planning to secretly gamble in the middle of the night, but the young lad's words were quite true. They were now hesitating.

Furthermore, even the ladies from the brothel across the street wanted to join in the fun. They found it very manly of Lin Shan to yell at the gambler so openly on the streets. Their young hearts started to stir.

Soon, more and more people surrounded them. It created such a commotion that even the boss of the casino noticed. The moment he heard a young lad was yelling at a gambler outside of his casino, he was enraged.

F**k! No wonder I have no business today. It must be your fault! How dare you come and ruin my business!? Are you tired of living?

The casino boss came out with a group of strong men. He stormed through the crowd and harshly grabbed onto Lin Shan, whom, at this moment, was lecturing very passionately. The casino boss yanked Lin Shan by the collar and threw her onto the other side.

Obviously, Lin Shan's small body was no match against the big casino boss. She felt herself losing balance and was about to crash against the wall, when suddenly, a hand wrapped around her waist and embraced her from harm.

"Wow, another one who's not afraid to die? How dare you guys ruin my business. You want to die?" The casino boss shrieked as he approached them with his men.

The person who saved Lin Shan lightly laughed. Clearly, he did not take them seriously.

The laugh sounded familiar and Lin Shan looked up. But the face she saw was a face she had never seen before. From the side, he looked approximately twenty. His eyebrows were dark and sharp like a sword, his eyes were bright like stars, and the bridge of his nose was quite straight. Overall, based on appearance, he was of high quality. But his eyes were honestly too arrogant. They were even more arrogant than Du Hao's!

At this moment, the casino boss and his people were infuriated by the young man's grin. Without a word, they charged straight at them.

The man didn't seem to care. It wasn't until the group of people were in front of him before he started waving his fan around. It turned out he had concealed weapons hidden from his fan. With a blink of an eye, all his weapons accurately struck the opponents. All the men were now howling on the ground from pain.

Seeing how they were no match for the guy, their opponents immediately ran. As for those who were watching, they were also afraid of meddling in the wrong affairs. Therefore, everyone instantly left. In a matter of seconds, only Lin Shan and the young man remained. At the moment, he still had his arms around her and she couldn't move.

Lin Shan breathed out a sign of relief as she tapped the guy on the shoulder: "Hey...thank you for helping me, hero. I am truly thankful. Could you release me?"

The young man made a sound but ignored her.

Lin Shan was confused. She thought she wasn't being sincere enough. Therefore, she included a smile: "As the saying goes, 'you pull out a blade when

you see injustice'. Brother, I will never forget your kind deed as long as I have teeth. Please release me, brother."

The young man continued to ignore her.

By now, Lin Shan couldn't take it anymore: "Hello!? I told you to let go. If people see two men hugging each other, they're going to misunderstand!"

The young man finally reacted. He looked at her with disdain and snorted: "You consider yourself a man?"

Lin Shan was shocked. Umm.... this guy saw right through my disguise? She was about to say something when she felt a pain struck the back of her neck. She lost consciousness.

Right before she passed out, she heard the man boastfully say: "I told you. One day, you will be under my control."

Lin Shan woke up from hunger. In a daze, the smell of delicious food went up her nose. She wanted to follow the smell, but discovered she couldn't move a single step. It was then she abruptly opened her eyes.

There was a table in front of her, and a man sitting leisurely beside it. The man was wearing a red outfit. The red was the colour of blood, and at the corner of the lower hem was a black tree peony. It looked exceptionally enchanting.

Lin Shan immediately thought of someone, but when she looked at him, the person was a total stranger.

Lin Shan couldn't help but feel troubled. She had no money on her and she didn't know the guy, why did he knock her unconscious and kidnap her?

That's right. At this moment, Lin Shan's upper body was bind to a seat. All she could do was watch the delicious food in front of her as her stomach rambled. It was torture.

The man sensed movement and his starry eyes looked towards her direction. He looked amused, which angered Lin Shan.

"Who are you? Why did you kidnap me? Let me go!" Lin Shan yelled. Sadly, she was too hungry. She had no strength when she yelled. It was definitely not

persuasive at all.

The person laughed at her and ignored her questions. He started drinking wine. Not only that, he was drinking in a very carefree manner. Furthermore, there was a dog by the table. The dog was busy chewing on a drumstick and totally disregarded Lin Shan's existence.

The fact that the dog ignored her was too much for Lin Shan. She started fuming. She started coming up with insults. You son of a bitch! You're the grandson of a tortoise!

She said every nasty insult she could think of, but the man acted like he couldn't hear her. He continued eating as if nothing happened.

Finally, Lin Shan had no more strength to yell. She quiet down and started using another method. She started chanting like a broken record: "What you're eating is not rice; it's cow shit cow shit cow shit. What you're drinking is not wine; it's horse pee horse pee horse pee. Ohhhh so nasty...."

Under this chanting, the man could no longer be calm. He smashed his wine cup onto the table and his complexion didn't look good. He gritted his teeth and said: "Are you done yet?"

"No!" Lin Shan continued to mutter: "Cow shit cow shit cow shit. Horse pee horse pee horse pee..."

Poor man. He nearly spat out his wine. He was so disgusted that he reached out and struck Lin Shan's acupoint on her throat. Immediately, no sound came out of Lin Shan. She was like a cassette tape that was stuck. All she could do was stare at him with hate and resentment. She could only speak through her eyes.

The man was probably a clean freak. He reached out his long and slender fingers and started rubbing her above the eyes. Lin Shan was so shocked that she immediately shut her eyes.

Oh my goodness, I have encountered a pervert! I'm doomed!!

Fortunately, it seemed like the pervert wasn't too crazy. After awhile, Lin Shan didn't sense any other movements so she secretly peeked. But she was nearly frightened to death.

Holy shit! Next time can you not stand so close to me when you're wearing red? Even if you're good looking, you will still scare me to death!

The person looked at her for awhile. Suddenly he frowned as he murmured: "Ugly woman." Then he stood up and swung his sleeve across her. Lin Shan's acupoint had been unlocked.

The moment Lin Shan noticed she could talk, she blurted: "Yes, I'm ugly. I'm soooo ugly! Sir, you shouldn't kidnap such an ugly woman. It's a disgrace to your taste. Why don't you let me go and find a beautiful woman instead!?"

"I'm not interested in beautiful women."

Lin Shan seemed to have come to a realization: "Oh, I know! You're interested in beautiful men!"

"Shut up!" The person's expression darkened. He furiously glared at her. At the same time, the dog that was resting by the table suddenly bounced up and started barking vigorously at Lin Shan.

Promoted post: [Are your expectations killing your relationships?](#)

Chapter 69

To my dear readers,

I hope you're no longer confused! The story is about to get crazier.

Chapter 69

Lin Shan was stunned by the man and the dog. She immediately shrank back like a quail as she mumbled to herself: You are not interested in beautiful women nor men. What do you like then? At this moment, her glance landed on the fierce dog. She froze.

Woah, bro. Your taste is too strong!

The way Lin Shan looked at the man caused him to feel goose bumps all over his body. He yelled: "Song Luo!"

Lin Shan was about to say something, when the dog barked in response. Then, the dog obediently went back to its corner.

Lin Shan was flabbergasted. It took her awhile to react. But when she finally did, she looked super pissed: Are you kidding me? You named your dog that? Couldn't you at least find a decent looking one? Oh my goodness! This one is a tragic sight. A tragic sight, I tell you!

Just as Lin Shan was steaming from anger, the man suddenly smiled cunningly at her: "Miss Song, are you hungry?"

This smile caused Lin Shan's danger radar to beep. Despite being very hungry, she refused like an honourable woman: "Not hungry!" But at that moment, her stomach started to growl. The sound was so loud, it drowned her voice.

Lin Shan was so embarrassed that she looked down and pretended to be dead (not literally).

"I'll let you eat if you want." The man lightly laughed and waved his sleeve. Somehow, the thick rope that was around Lin Shan's wrists came loose. Lin Shan rubbed her sore wrists as she stared oddly at the man.

"Eat. Aren't you hungry?" A bowl of red braised pork was pushed in front of Lin

Shan. It had just the right amount of fat on it. The sweet aroma went up her nose and caused Lin Shan to feel a strong craving.

Usually, under these type of circumstances, Lin Shan would think to herself, “I’m going to die regardless I eat or not. So why don’t I just eat and fill my stomach first?” But for some strange reason, this time, her mind decided to casually ask: “Did you add poison to it?”

“Of course.” The man actually nodded. He looked at her expectedly.

Lin Shan’s chopsticks froze in mid air as she gawked at the man. Her face looked troubled: Bro, are you toying with me? If there’s poison, why are you telling me? If you tell me, do you think I would eat it?”

“You’re toying with me, aren’t you?” Lin Shan said with a stiff face.

“I told you there’s poison in the meat, yet you think I’m toying with you. What if I told you, there’s poison in the wine, and all the dishes? Even the seat you’re still on has poison on it. Do you still think I’m toying with you?”

Lin Shan trembled and the meat from her chopsticks fell onto the ground.

“Song Luo” instantly went after it and swallowed the entire piece. Immediately, “Song Luo” fell over and started throwing up white foam. It started to twitch and struggled for a few seconds, and then took its last breath. The entire incident happened within five seconds. Lin Shan’s eyes and mouth were wide opened from shock.

“You.... monster!” She nearly jumped out of her seat as she pointed at the man, “Although the dog was ugly, you didn’t have to be so cruel. Are you human?! You....”

“Don’t worry.” The man calmly responded, “It will be your turn next. Calm down.”

Right away, Lin Shan stopped talking. Tiny beads of sweat started forming on her forehead. Her heart started to beat furiously. Oh God, does this person really plan to kill her? What would he gain from it though?

Just as she was panicking, the man murmured: “What? Are you afraid? If you want to die a better death, why don’t we do an exchange?”

By now, Lin Shan's back was drenched from fear. Yet, she pretended like she was fine: "You... what do you want?"

The man absentmindedly smiled: "I heard the Emperor bestowed you the Heaven stone?" He said this in a very casual manner. He was entirely different from the monster he was a second ago. In addition, he was tapping the table with a rhythm.

At this moment, a shocking thought appeared in Lin Shan's mind. She didn't even think twice as she blurted out: "Du Jing? You are Du Jing!"

When her accusations came out, the man looked astonished for a moment. But he quickly composed himself. The smile deepened on his face: "Not bad. You could still tell. I guess I have no choice but to kill you...."

Lin Shan's gut feeling was correct. Based on his actions and words, plus his split personality, it was totally aligned with Du Jing. Furthermore, this guy even admitted it himself. Therefore, it was definitely Du Jing. But how come his face looked different?

"Confused, eh?" The man looked amused, "Have you heard of the technique of face changing?"

Lin Shan nodded to show that she had.

"Then have you heard of the world's best face changer? Jiang Hu's hundred face scholar, Ji Bai Yu?"

Lin Shan shook her head.

The guy raised his eyebrows: "What?"

Lin Shan was so scared that she quickly nodded: "Yes I have. I have..."

The man looked satisfied as he continued: "That's right. I am the young Master of the Red Phosphorous Hall, Ji Bai Yu!"

To be honest, Lin Shan had never heard of the name Ji Bai Yu. However, she had heard of Red Phosphorous Hall from Xiao Lu numerous times. Apparently, the Red Phosphorous Hall was a secret organization that had recently appeared in Jiang Hu. Those from this organization were poison experts and their martial arts were also very unique.

The most well known figure was the Mistress of this place, Ji Hong Lin. Although she was a woman, she was vicious and merciless. She practiced all sorts of poison martial arts and had killed many martial artists. Even the Clan leader of Shaolin was once injured because of her.

At this moment, Lin Shan realized how dangerous her situation was. This was not simply a personal issue between her and Ji Bai Yu. Instead, it was much deeper than that. Somehow, she got involved with the legendary monstrous Red Phosphorous Hall, and there was most likely a huge conspiracy behind this. Whatever it was, it had something to do with the shitty rock she almost threw out.

Mother! It's a piece of shitty rock. What kind of secret could it hold? Lin Shan honestly couldn't think of anything.

The only thing she was sure of, though, was that Ji Bai Yu went all out for it. He even disguised as Du Jing in order to get it. This meant that the Heaven stone meant a lot to him. Based on the fate of the dog, he would probably kill her right after he found out the location of it. For her life's sake, Lin Shan decided to lie.

"I don't know." Lin Shan stated.

"I knew you would be tight lipped." Ji Bai Yu had clearly anticipated this result. He smiled, "That's why I have prepared these dishes for you, Miss Song."

Lin Shan looked at the dead dog and broke into cold sweats.

Promoted post: [From the bottom to the top](#)

Chapter 70

To my dear readers,

This chapter was very easy to read in Chinese but very hard to translate in English. Ugghhh it took me forever.

Are you guys shocked? The author will keep surprising you.

P.S. If you like my work, please support me by disabling ad block or donating if possible! It takes me so many hours to translate. SoOOOooooOOOoo many.

Chapter 70

At this moment, Ji Bai Yu had already gotten up to introduce the dishes: “You see this white poached chicken? I have placed a colourless liver gut decay powder in it. After you eat it, your intestines will slowly rot. Eventually, everything will decompose from within.”

Lin Shan: “.....”

“You see this cake right here? Inside, I put in our special formula from Red Phosphorous Hall. It’s called, “the death of the half step”. After you eat it, you will die the moment you take half a step. Not only that, there will be a smile on your face.”

Mother! Isn’t that the “smiling half step crazy pill”? Lin Shan thoroughly lost hope.

“You see this plate of spare ribs? After you eat it, your muscles will slowly start to disintegrate. From the outside, you wouldn’t be able to tell. But ultimately, you just need to lightly tug, and the entire skin will....”

“Stop!” Lin Shan cuts him off. She felt like she was going to go insane. “Don’t tell me anymore! Just kill me. Get straight to the point!”

Ji Bai Yu shook his head: “That’s not happening. I’m not done playing yet. Why don’t we start off with the spare ribs first?” Then, he used a pair of chopsticks and was about to stuff it down Lin Shan’s throat.

Lin Shan was so scared, she felt like her soul left her body. She tried to fight Ji

Bai Yu with all her might, but he easily confined her from the lower waist. The chopstick was about to go in, when suddenly, there was a knock on the door. Gui Mei came in.

“Young Master, Mistress wants you to see her immediately.”

“Ok.” Ji Bai Yu said in a moody tone. He finally released her. The moment he let go, Lin Shan quickly hid under the table. Lin Shan traumatically gasped for air.

“You’re no fun.” Ji Bai Yu rolled his eyes at her as he fixed his attire and left.

Gui Mei spoke up from outside the room: “Young Master, Mistress says to bring Song second lady with you.”

At that moment, Lin Shan clearly saw the disgusted look Ji Bai Yu had on his face.

The Red Phosphorous Hall was located underground. It was very complicated to get to. In addition, there were many hidden secret traps. Ji Bai Yu led the way, and Lin Shan followed. Behind her was Gui Mei. She couldn’t run even if she wanted to. Lin Shan was definitely a captive.

At this time, they had arrived at the entrance hall. Little by little, the stone door opened. A strong fragrance slapped Lin Shan right in the face. The fragrance was so heavy that she nearly choked.

Is this place liveable? Lin Shan thought to herself.

Behind the stone door revealed a very big stone room. There were fresh flowers all around the room. The flowers were still blooming despite the fact that there was no sunlight in the room. However, the colour looked slightly abnormal.

When Lin Shan took another glance, she felt the cold sweats returning. Oh God! Behind the flowers were tiny snakes. The snakes were about the sizes of her pinky finger. Lin Shan stared wordlessly at them. Based on the amount of flowers in the room, there had to be at least a couple hundred snakes.

At that moment, Lin Shan felt sorry for Ji Bai Yu. What type of messed up place is this? No wonder he turned out the way he did. He had no choice!

The moment they entered, the stone door closed. The woman who was standing in the middle of the room also turned around. Lin Shan secretly took a

peek and was instantly shocked by Ji Hong Lin's beauty.

Originally, she thought Ji Hong Lin was Ji Bai Yu's mother; therefore, she should be at least forty or fifty years of age. Surprisingly, the lady looked around seventeen eighteen. She had red lips and white teeth and her skin appeared to be youthful. It was totally different from her imagination. She was even doubting whether that was the actual Ji Hong Lin.

Ji Bai Yu politely greeted the young lady: "Mother."

What the f**k? A twenty years old man calling a young lady mother?! That was messed up! Lin Shan stood behind Ji Bai Yu and didn't dare to utter a word. Thoughts were racing through her mind.

Wasn't the Heaven child governess something like this too? Seventy or eight years of age, yet still looked forever young due to practicing devil magic? Ji Hong Lin probably belonged to that category.

As expected, the moment Ji Hong Lin said, "You may rise.", it revealed her age. She sounded like an aged woman. Even if she wasn't sixty, she was at least fifty.

Wow, if this technology existed in modern salons, it would be so popular! Lin Shan thought to herself.

At this moment, Ji Hong Lin focused her attention on Lin Shan.

"Song second lady?" Ji Hong Lin questioned.

Her aura was so strong that Lin Shan only dared to nod in response.

"Sure enough, you're a beauty."

Lin Shan was touched. Ji Bai Yu, your mom has better taste than you!

"Too bad. Regardless of how beautiful you are now, once you turn old, men won't want you anymore."

Ohhhh. A woman that had suffered from a heartache. She absolutely matched the villains from wuxia novels! Lin Shan was proud of her strong reasoning capabilities.

While she was thinking, somehow Ji Hong Lin ended up beside her. She lifted her chin and at that moment, Lin Shan felt like her acupoint had been struck. She

couldn't move at all. She had no control while Ji Hong Lin lifted and turned her face around to look from different angles.

After awhile, Ji Hong Li murmured: "You are beautiful, but not refined enough. There is still some differences between you and the bitch. Looks like the Du men's tastes are deteriorating..."

Ji Bai Yu stood on the side and didn't say a word.

"Yu-er, you said Du Hao likes her?" Ji Hong Lin questioned.

"Your son has seen it with his own eyes. I know for sure he likes her."

"Do you like Du Hao?" Ji Hong Lin suddenly turned to ask Lin Shan.

Lin Shan quickly shook her head: "No... I don't like him!"

"HAHAHAHAHAHA....." Ji Hong Lin laughed out loud, "Cheng Yun, oh Cheng Yun. You played around with so many women and even had a few children of your own. Yet, you are such a coward. This is your revenge!"

Wow. Not only was she hurt from a past relationship, but it was with Du Hao's dad?

Lin Shan felt like she was being charred by lightning. She could totally tell where the story was heading. The Emperor must have dumped Ji Hong Lin and Ji Hong Lin's love for him must have turned into hate. Now, she was twisted and wanted to get revenge on the Emperor.

But what Lin Shan didn't expect was Ji Hong Lin to turn viciously at her: "No! This is not enough revenge! I'm unsatisfied!"

Lin Shan had a very bad feeling: Umm, aunty, what do you want from me?

"I want his offspring to suffer the same pain as me. Watching the one he loves marry someone else. I want him to suffer eternally. I want him to live a life of solitude!"

Lin Shan thought, oh no! This aunty is nutty!

Just as she expected, Ji Hong Lin pointed at her and Ji Bai Yu: "I want you to select a date to get married!"

Promoted post: [Haters](#)

Chapter 71

To my dear readers,

Next chapter is going to be so funny. I can't stop laughing. Too bad it's so hard to translate. -_-". The author has a very good sense of humour. Anyway, Lian Feng isn't going to be back until Chapter 76. But when he comes back, you guys will be very happy!!!

Chapter 71

Ji Bai Yu frowned but didn't say a word. On the other hand, Lin Shan shouted without thinking: "No!"

Ji Hong Lin smiled: "Do you think it matters whether you agree or not?"

Lin Shan's expression immediately stiffened.

Wow, this woman is so messed up! She could instantly make up her mind and force her son to marry me? That's absurd! She's a hopeless cause.

Lin Shan quickly directed her glance towards Ji Bai Yu.

Bro, are you a man? Your mother wants you to marry the woman you just tried to poison! Step out and say something!?!

Ji Bai Yu didn't even look at her. Instead, he respectfully said to Ji Hong Lin: "Your child will obey your command."

At that moment, Lin Shan was stunned. She pulled onto Ji Bai Yu's sleeves: "Are you crazy?! Why are you agreeing to it!? Didn't you just tried to poison me? Poison me! I don't want to marry you!"

The corner of Ji Bai Yu's mouth twitched.

"Yu-er, is Song second lady speaking the truth?" Ji Hong Lin appeared to be amused.

"Your child did have that intention." Ji Bai Yu blankly stated.

"If that's what you want, after you two get married, you can do whatever you want with her."

“Thank you for your permission, Mother!”

This time, it was Lin Shan’s turn to twitch. What type of geographical and social conditions created this mother-son pair? It was totally comparable to a high quality aircraft! (I don’t get it..but ok)

At this moment, Lin Shan was annoyed. She gritted her teeth and snarled: “You old witch. Give up. You might as well kill me. I’d rather die than marry your son!”

Lin Shan felt a chill breeze and her throat was tightly clutched by sharp fingernails: “Who are you calling an old witch?” Ji Hong Lin’s voice sounded menacing. Her eyes looked as if she wanted to devour a human, “If you dare to repeat once more, watch me kill you!”

Deep down, Lin Shan was trying to tell herself to be calm, but under these circumstances, she couldn’t do it. Her back was drenched with sweat as her lips trembled. She didn’t dare to say anymore, but Ji Hong Lin didn’t let her go. Ji Hong Lin used her sharp nail and embedded it across Lin Shan’s neck. Lin Shan’s delicate skin was immediately reddened and started to bleed from the impact; it was about to split open.

Lin Shan was in a lot of pain but she didn’t scream. Instead, she stood her ground and made an intense eye contact with Ji Hong Lin. The nail was about to go through her throat.

Suddenly, Ji Bai Yu spoke up: “Mother, why are you in such a rush to kill her? Your child isn’t done playing yet.” While he was speaking, he looked deeply into Lin Shan’s eyes.

Ji Hong Lin finally released her. Lin Shan felt a breath of relief as she crouched down and started coughing vigorously. A few seconds ago, she actually thought her life was going to end and her mind had gone blank. Now that Ji Hong Lin had released her, her heart was filled with frustration and anger: Lian Feng, where are you? If I had died like this, you would’ve never seen me again!

She was upset, but she didn’t cry. Lin Shan continued to glare bitterly towards the mother and son.

Ji Hong Lin looked entertained and smiled evilly: “True. There’s no fun if she

died like this... Gui Mei!”

“Your subordinate is here!” Somehow, Gui Mei appeared out of nowhere. Just like her name, she was like a ghost*.

Ji Hong Lin waved her hand: “Bring Song second lady to change into a female attire. Her current outfit is irritating me.”

“Your subordinate obeys your command!” Gui Mei replied as she grabbed Lin Shan by the arm.

“I’m not changing!” Although Lin Shan was afraid, she planned to fight to the death.

“Do you think you have a choice?” Ji Hong Lin laughed, “Feel your neck.”

Neck? Lin Shan froze. Like a reflex, she touched her neck. Her finger felt a sticky substance. When she took a look, she realized the blood on her neck had turned black. The old witch had poisoned her! Lin Shan’s face darkened.

“Don’t worry.” Ji Hong Lin looked unbothered, “The poison isn’t going to activate so quickly. As long as you follow my orders and marry Yu-er, I will give you the antidote. If you don’t listen to me, then three months from now, your hair will turn all white and your face will be filled with wrinkles... and you shall watch yourself die...”

“You.....” Lin Shan was totally speechless. It took her awhile to react. She wanted to rebut, but decided to keep the words to herself. At this moment, she knew Ji Hong Lin spoke the truth. Instead of risking her life, she might as well try to prolong it for as long as she could. Perhaps she might find a way to escape.

Lin Shan stayed in silence as she followed Gui Mei out of the stone room.

— — —

The fact that Lin Shan surrendered made Ji Hong Lin felt great. The moment Lin Shan left, she turned to her son: “Yu-er, do you remember the heaven silkworms I have been seeking for all these years?”

“Your child remembers.”

“The heaven silkworms originate from the Hmong border. They are extremely toxic, but if applied properly, they can guarantee longevity and extend

youthfulness. I have searched for nearly ten years, and finally I have found two of them; one male and female. Come and let me show you.”

“Yes.” Ji Bai Yu nodded as he followed this vain woman to look at the heaven silkworms.

— — —

At the same time, Lin Shan was currently following Gui Mei to the treasure room to change.

After taking many twists and turns, Lin Shan felt goose bumps all over her body. No matter how many times she called out, Gui Mei ignored her. She decided to tug on Gui Mei’s sleeves.

“Young Miss, please let go.” Gui Mei said without an expression.

Young... Young Miss? Lin Shan was shocked by the title. She wiped her sweats and asked, “Where are we going? This place is too big. I’m dizzy from all the turns. Can you take me somewhere else so I can get some fresh air first?”

Gui Mei didn’t respond but pointed towards the wall.

Lin Shan didn’t understand. She used her hand to feel the hard stone wall: “What? In order to exit, I have to crash my head against the wall first? No way. This surface is too hard....”

Gui Mei’s mouth twitched as she used her hand to press down the stone that activated the wall. The wall immediately opened and at that moment, a blinding light shone into Lin Shan’s eyes. When she could finally focused, her eyeballs almost popped out.

Holy shit! This is too cool!!

The stone room was filled with rare treasures. Brilliant lights and vibrant colours emerged from the darkness.

“Young Miss, please!” Gui Mei stated.

*Gui means ghost in Chinese.

Promoted post: [My flaws](#)

Chapter 72

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Ysha** for his/her generous donation to me! I'm so touched by any donations because I know you guys don't have to donate to me. Thank you for choosing to support me if you can. If I sum up all the hours I spend on translating, I honestly make less than a \$1 an hour. It's really sad. -

_-” Nonetheless, I'm thankful to all my readers and those who have donated and written nice comments to me. Thank you, everyone!

P.S. This chapter was really funny when I read it in Chinese. But after staring at it for 3-4 hours, I don't know if it's funny anymore. You tell me. Haha. I tried!!!

Chapter 72

Lin Shan swallowed and carefully walked inside. The moment she entered, the stone entrance shut behind her. Gui Mei lit a candle and the room instantly brightened. Lin Shan realized she was surrounded by eight bronze mirrors (like an octagon).

On the stone table in front of her were all sorts of dresses made from gold and silver silk. They looked dazzling and elegant. The colours were so bright; it was literally a feast for the eyes.

“Young Miss, please choose one.”

Wow, although the witch is cruel, she's sure generous!

Lin Shan randomly picked up a dress and couldn't help but admired the exquisite details.

I bet even the Palace can't compete with the luxurious items from here. Ji Hong Lin's abilities to accumulate treasures is phenomenal!!

“Please change into the dress, Young Miss.” Gui Mei stated from the side.

“Stop calling me Young Miss left, Young Miss right. Can't you see that I'm being forced?” Lin Shan was annoyed as she rolled her eyes at her, “Leave the room. I am going to change now.”

“Your subordinate will stay and watch Young Miss change.”

Lin Shan was irritated: “Umm, what I have, you also have. Why do you have to watch me? Go look in the mirror and admire your own!”

The corner of Gui Mei’s mouth twitched. However, she didn’t say a word.

“What? Unless I have what you don’t have!” said Lin Shan as she looked at Gui Mei’s chest. Immediately, she came to a realization. She patted Gui Mei’s shoulder with sympathy: “I can understand how you feel. At one point, I didn’t have anything either. Each day, I would stare at other women with envy. That was an awful feeling....”

Gui Mei finally crumbled. She responded: “Your subordinate will wait for Young Miss outside.” Then, she quickly vanished.

“Hey! Wait! I’m not doing talking! Actually, small has its benefits. When you’re pretending to be a man, you don’t have to do much. Do you know how hard it is to disguise as a man when your chest.....hey!!?”

Since Gui Mei left, Lin Shan stuck out her tongue. She started humming as she changed.

Honestly, Lin Shan couldn’t remember the last time she dressed as a woman. She had to fiddle with it for awhile before she was able to take her “breast strip” off.

With great difficulty, she finally managed to changed into the dress. Lin Shan twirled around once and decided she must take advantage of the old witch. She inserted a pearl hairpin into her hair and took a high quality looking jade bracelet as well. After slipping the bracelet onto her wrist, her eyes greedily scattered for more.

Suddenly, she noticed a jade buddha by the corner of the room.

Ohhhh! That looks expensive!

Lin Shan’s eyes shone as she excitedly went over to lift it. But the jade buddha wouldn’t budge. However, Lin Shan was determined. She tried lifting it a second time. It still wouldn’t move.

Lin Shan was now angry. She forcefully twisted the sculpture, and heard a

sound. Suddenly, the secret door behind the buddha slowly opened.

Woah! Is this the legendary secret entrance?! Lin Shan was delighted. Since Gui Mei was still outside, she decided to go in and take a look.

Behind the secret entrance was a small tunnel. Lin Shan followed the tunnel and felt colder and colder as she kept going. When she got to the end, she realized it was an icy warehouse. Inside the room were huge pieces of ice. It was so cold that she couldn't stop shivering.

Psssh, I thought I found a secret exit. What the heck is this place?

Lin Shan was a bit irked and decided to head back when she suddenly noticed a refined jade case in the middle of the room. It was sparkling and translucent. The carvings were also very outstanding. It was definitely a Grade A item.

Looks like I didn't waste my time after all!

Lin Shan was thrilled. She quickly went over to the jade case and stroked the delicate carvings. Then, she opened the case to see what was inside. It turned out it was two white worms rolled up together. It looked disgusting.

Eww, gross!!

Lin Shan wanted to throw up and instantly dropped the case. The two worms fell out and the female one landed on top of her foot. Lin Shan screamed as she forcefully kicked her the worm off of her. There was a crunch sound and the female worm had perished.

"What are you doing?" At the same time, Ji Hong Lin's angry voice was heard.

Lin Shan lifted her head and saw Ji Hong Lin's twisted face. She knew she had gotten into big trouble. Lin Shan frightfully took a step back and coincidentally stepped onto the male worm.

There was another crunch sound, and now both the husband and wife were dead.

Ji Hong Lin's face was colder than ice. It took her a moment to react. Then, she hysterically shrieked: "Tie her up. Tie her up!!!"

Lin Shan was now tied up. Even her fingers were tied. It was comparable to a crab that was caught. Seeing her like this, Ji Bai Yu smirked.

“Song second lady probably never thought she would end up like this, eh? How does it feel to be tied up?” He looked amused.

“Ah pah!” Lin Shan grinded her teeth as she scowled, “You act like you’re superior in front of me, yet when your mother forced you to marry me, you didn’t even dare to fart. Are you a man?!”

Lin Shan’s words caused Ji Bai Yu’s face to darken. His eyes revealed his killer aura as he grabbed her by the collar. Their faces were very close to each other and Lin Shan could see how furious he was. He definitely wasn’t faking it. She was honestly scared but beneath the surface, she was a strong woman. Hence, she stared back and refused to back off.

The two of them glared at each other for a long time. Just when Lin Shan was about to quit, Ji Bai Yu gave her a peck on the cheek.

Lin Shan was stunned by this gesture. Wow, he was playing me? She was raging on the inside. Just as she was about to yell, Ji Bai Yu spoke up and interrupted her: “If you’re wondering whether I’m a man or not, you’ll naturally find out on the night of our wedding.” Ji Bai Yu smiled mockingly at her. He looked completely different from his vicious face a moment ago.

Since he was so blunt, Lin Shan’s face turned red. She couldn’t help but feel embarrassed and frustrated. She opened her mouth again, but someone knocked the door.

“Young Master.” A subordinate entered and whispered into Ji Bai Yu’s ears. Ji Bai Yu’s expression immediately changed and he got up to leave.

“Hey, if you have guts, don’t leave!” Lin Shan opened her mouth and a cotton cloth was stuffed in her mouth.

“You’re so annoying. You’ll see whether I have guts in a few days!” Ji Bai Yu glared at her as he walked out.

Ji Bai Yu left for a long, long time.

Since this place was underground, there was no sunlight. Lin Shan couldn’t tell whether it was day or night. She just knew she was so hungry that her mind was spinning.

The servant girl who delivered food to her untied her. Her arms and legs were numbed long ago. In her mind, she went from a crab to a chicken suffering from avian flu. She lied on the table for a long time before she had any strength to move.

Deep down, Lin Shan cursed the mother-son pair for being so cruel. At the same time, she no longer cared about her image as she clasped the bowl with both hands and gobbled the congee that was in front of her. She didn't care whether it was poisonous or not. Under these circumstances, she'd rather be a full ghost than a starving ghost.

Promoted post: [New Years Resolutions](#)

Chapter 73

To my dear readers,

After this chapter, I still have 15 more to go!! Novelupdates will tell you there are only 73 chapters. However, that's the version Amery read. The version I read is different. The ending I read is also different. In addition, I also split the chapters up differently. Don't worry. The story will end well.

Chapter 73

Surprisingly, the congee wasn't poisoned. Lin Shan ate two bowls and none of her body parts started to bleed or fall apart. Even the servant that delivered food to her left silently. From the looks of it, nothing was going to happen.

Lin Shan couldn't help but felt unease.

Could Ji Hong Lin really have forgiven her for killing the heaven silkworms? No, no, no! There aren't many forgiving people out there; Ji Hong Lin is definitely not one of them! She is nuts. She would never let her go this easily. What does she want to do with her?

Lin Shan thought about it for so long that she started to have a splitting headache. The areas that she was tied up previously started to throb as well. It was as if she was being tear apart. Her eyelids started to get heavier and heavier. In the end, she couldn't stop it any longer and fell into a deep slumber.

Lin Shan had a dream. She dreamt that she was about to get married. She was wearing a red wedding robe and everyone was running towards her congratulating her. Her parents were holding her hands as tears rolled down their faces. They were reluctant to part with her. Even her friends from the modern world were wearing ancient attires and wishing her happiness.

Lin Shan was ecstatic. She was finally going to marry Lian Feng! Everyone was saying that they will last a lifetime. Underneath her bridal veil, she felt a mix of excitement and nervousness. She couldn't wait until her groom lift up her veil.



In Ancient China, the bride would be wearing all red and her face would be covered by the red veil. Normally, the groom will lift it up when they are in the room.

The groom finally arrived. She could hear his footsteps. It was strong and steady. She could feel his hot breathing as he faced her. Currently, she was imagining Lian Feng's expression.

The veil was finally lifted and the images in front of her looked very sharp. Instead of seeing Lian Feng, it was Ji Bai Yu's teasing smile she saw. The corner of his mouth was raised and he looked mockingly at her.

Lin Shan was so shocked that she screamed and slapped him. But instead, she heard a woman yelling, "Ah!"

How come it was a woman?

Lin Shan woke up and saw an angry woman in red clothing. On her face was a clear print of her palm.

"Uh..s-sorry about that! I didn't do it on purpose." Lin Shan awkwardly smiled as she apologized. However, the woman was enraged and had already lifted her hand to return her slap.

Fortunately, Lin Shan reacted quickly. She ducked her head and the woman ended up slapping the bed beam instead. Her hand instantly turned red. It was so painful that she became all flustered and exasperated: "Fasten this slut up. I am going to beat her to death!"

While she was still speaking, two of her subordinates already came over. One

grabbed hold of Lin Shan on the left, the other on the right. Then, the angry woman lifted her hand with no restrain. She was about to slam it down.

Lin Shan quickly yelled: “Wait, you can’t hit me!”

The woman’s hand hovered in mid air. She smiled at her with disdain: “I can’t hit you? Who do you think you are?”

“Well, who are you?” Lin Shan countered.

The woman was astonished by Lin Shan’s reaction. She angrily blasted: “Who I am is none of your business!”

“Of course it is my business. I might be a prisoner, but I’m going to be your future Young Miss. Your Mistress is the one who wants me. Who do you think you are? You even dare to hit me?” Lin Shan suspected that the woman wasn’t sent from Ji Hong Lin and she went all out.

As expected, the woman didn’t dare to slap her anymore. However, her attitude was still very repulsive. “Pssh! Young Miss? Do you actually think you will get that position? Mistress is just trying to get revenge. Look in the mirror. Young Master would never be attracted to your type. You’re trash!”

“Even if he’s not attracted to me, it’s your Mistress’s decision. If you slap me and caused me to be unpresentable, I don’t think your Mistress will forgive you!”

“You!” The woman in red didn’t say anymore, but she was still furious. After pondering for a few seconds, her eyes turned and revealed her spite. “Hahaha.. you think just because you said those words I can’t do anything with you? Today, I’m getting revenge for my sister no matter what!”

Then, she suddenly pulled out three steel needles.

Lin Shan was stunned. Are you freaking kidding me? Do you think you’re Rong momo*? How many crazy people live in this secretive place?



*This is the character Rong momo from the Mainland Drama “Princess Pearl”. She was the Empress’s aide and known to be very vicious with punishments.

Lin Shan was in despair as she tried to altered the situation: “You must have made a mistake. What revenge? I can’t even save myself. How can I hurt your sister? Do you think I’m a daoist immortal?”

“Stop with the bullshit. If you didn’t try to escape, why would my sister be punished? Too bad for you, you met me today!”

“Wait, your sister is Gui Mei?” Lin Shan finally figured it out. Ji Hong Lin was probably raging so hard that she blamed Gui Mei for letting her escape into the icy warehouse.

“Oh? Now you remember? Well, it’s too late!” The woman in red stabbed the needle into Lin Shan’s arm.

It was so painful that Lin Shan nearly fainted. Now, the woman was about to stab the second needle. Fortunately, someone stormed in and stopped her.

“Stop, Ting Lan!” Gui Mei rushed in. Her face looked pale and she looked much weaker compared to before. However, her presence was still very powerful. She slapped Ting Lan across the face: “Are you crazy? She’s Young Miss. What if you killed her?” Gui Mei screamed.

Ting Lan’s eyes immediately turned red.

“Sister, I’m helping you get revenge!”

“Get what revenge? It was my fault. I was too careless. Why are you blaming someone else?”

“Sister! I....” Ting Lan was so mad, she wanted to spit blood. She looked at the firm Gui Mei, and then at Lin Shan, who was almost unconscious. She stomped her feet and left red eyed.

After Ting Lan left, Gui Mei felt relieved. She turned around and ordered the two subordinates: “Bring Young Miss and follow me.”

Lin Shan had no idea how long she was being carried. She didn’t open her eyes until she felt hot steam surrounding her. It was then she realized she was in a stone room. In the middle of the stone room was a stone hot spring. It was piping hot.

“Help Young Miss remove her clothes.” Gui Mei commanded. Two of the female servants came over and started stripping Lin Shan.

By now, Lin Shan wasn’t in so much pain anymore. Seeing how she was being stripped, she quickly started to fidget: “What are you guys doing? Let me go! Let me...”

Of course, the two servant girls would never take her orders. They took off all her clothes and shoved her into the hot spring. Water splashed everywhere and Lin Shan even swallowed a few gulps of water. She wanted to climb out, but someone held onto her arms and legs, and another person started to wash her.

What kind of feeling was that? She felt like a pig ready to be slaughtered. What an unlucky pig she was. After she was cleaned, she was going to be chopped up. Her market price will be fifteen dollars a pound.

But the treatment of the pig was too good! After bathing, she was even given a massage! They even sharpened her nails and painted them. The colour of the nail polish was from a flower. It was red and it made everything felt very surreal.

Suddenly, Lin Shan recalled her dream and had a very bad premonition.

—-Could she be getting married?

Promoted post: [Recap](#)

Chapter 74

To my dear readers,

Lian Feng will be back in Chapter 76! Be patient! Sorry for the late release. I haven't had time to translate until today. Anyhow, please support me if you can by donating and/or turning off adblock! If all of you turn off your adblock, I might make a dollar from this chapter. LOL

Chapter 74

Lin Shan's prediction was correct. Ji Hong Lin was serious. Despite the fact that she stepped and killed her beloved heaven silkworms, the stubborn woman was going to make her son marry her simply because she wanted to get revenge on the current Emperor.

In the past, the Emperor dumped her. Now, Ji Hong Lin was going to make the Emperor's son suffer.

Sometimes, a human's determination was truly scary. The worse thing was when the person had to make innocent victims suffer too!

Lin Shan was a sacrificial victim. Currently, she was poisoned and had no idea where her lover was. In addition, she was being forced to marry a man she didn't even love. What type of bullshit story was this?

The red wedding robe was handed to her. It was a thousand times more beautiful than what she had imagine. Furthermore, since she already had the curves, it looked even more captivating. However, Lin Shan wasn't content at all. She felt like she was about to enter a dead alley. Lian Feng was the only person on her mind, but she had no opportunity to escape to find the person she cared about the most.

The red candle lights flickered, and the gorgeous bride lowered her eyes; only making her look even more ravishing.

Gui Mei's eyes dipped as her injuries from the beating started to throb.

This is the lady that Young Master was going to marry? She is beautiful. She's so beautiful that she felt ashamed of herself. Her hope should surely be

extinguished now. She should have known. Their statuses were totally different. To him, she was probably just a servant that had followed him for a long time. Their relationship was a master servant relationship. What was there to hope?

In this world, those suffering would always assume the others were happier than them. The truth was, everyone's the same.

Speaking of which, Lin Shan was truly something. She was about to marry again. The first time, she married a woman. Soon, she will marry a man. She was a groom once, and now she was a bride. From all of history, those who could indulge in both man and woman were probably in the single digits.

Then again, she lived two lives and was going to marry twice; yet the person was still not the man she wanted. It was either a bratty princess or a crazy young master. The former often yelled at her and hated her guts. The latter was even more extreme; he only married her for revenge. After marrying her, he was going to break her.

What a depressing story.

Although Ji Hong Lin only wanted to get revenge, she didn't cheap out on the process. The entire area was decorated and many guests were invited. The lifeless underground Palace suddenly became very joyous.

Lin Shan felt like she was being forced to die. She tried to escape a few times, but the maids easily grabbed hold of her and brought her back. In the end, due to her unwillingness to comply, the maids discussed with Gui Mei and stuffed a pill into her mouth.

The Red Phosphorus Hall was known for their poison. After ingesting the pill, Lin Shan quickly lost all her strength. She was like a puppet as the maids did her makeup and put on the hair crown.

After a few hours later, everything was finally ready. Once the lucky hour was approaching, a bridal veil was covered over her head and she had a maid on each side assisting her out.

Ji Bai Yu had been waiting for awhile. Although he was wearing a wedding attire, he didn't look like a happy groom at all. On the contrary, Ji Hong Lin looked very satisfied as she sat in the high seat in the back centre of the room.

Lin Shan was pressed to the ground on her knees. Then, the MC hollered, “The first bow, to worship the Heaven and the Earth!”

The two maids behind her rudely pushed her head down. Since she ate that pill, she had no strength. Being shoved was a terrible feeling. Then, she heard laughter all around her as the red candle lights swayed.

At that moment, Lin Shan felt wronged. Not only was she forced to marry someone, Lian Feng suddenly popped up in her mind.

Didn’t he say he would marry her? He had already kissed the places that should have been kissed. He had already touched the places that should have been touched. He had even stolen her dowry. Why was she in this position now?

At one point, Lin Shan had hope. Deep down, she kept telling herself that Lian Feng wasn’t dead. He was going to come back and find her one day. But at this moment in time, she couldn’t lie to herself anymore. The truth was slapping her ruthlessly in the face.

He’s dead. Even his body was washed away. How could he come and find her?

Thinking of this, Lin Shan felt all the sorrows coming up all at once. Although she had no strength to move, she could still cry. She started to wail.

Generally, people attend weddings in high spirits. It was very odd to hear crying all of a sudden. As they paid closer attention, it sounded as if the bride was crying?! Everyone was shocked.

Ji Bai Yu’s brows furrowed. Lin Shan was starting to sob louder and louder. The louder she became, the worse it sounded.

It sounded so bad that the MC couldn’t even handle it. If the bride wasn’t wearing a hair crown and covered by the bridal veil, he would have thought they had arrived at a funeral. As a professional MC, how could he permit such a defective wedding to take place? Therefore, he swallowed the last sentence “Husband and wife, bow to each other”.

Ji Hong Lin was losing patience: “What are you waiting for? Hurry up!”

The MC didn’t say a word as he flung his head.

Lin Shan was crying even more hysterically. She started to scream as well:

“You’re not allowed to die! Who let you die? If you die, who’s going to marry me? You didn’t even marry me and I’ve already become a widow. You have no soul.....!”

Not only was Ji Hong Lin furious; now, even Ji Bai Yu’s face was turning black.

“Don’t let her cry anymore. Hurry and finish the ceremony and take her away!” Ji Hong Lin screeched as she waved her hand in frustration. Thus, the two maid pressed Lin Shan’s head down without the MC’s instructions and then dragged her out of the room.

The two maids carried Lin Shan back to the room, but Lin Shan still hadn’t stop crying. She was making their positions very difficult. The two maids looked at each other. Maid A said: “Mistress ordered us to stop her from crying. But she’s not stopping. What are we going to do?”

“What else can we do? Should we poison her and make her mute? Young Master isn’t actually serious about her anyway.”

“Are you crazy? You know Young Master’s temper. If anything, he would be the one poisoning. Not us.”

“Um.....” Maid B felt troubled. After a few moments later, she thought of something. She lifted her head and got very close to Maid A, “How about we use

“That?”

“Yeah! That!” Maid B had a crafty look on her face.

“!” The other brightened, “Are you sure that’s okay? Would it turn out alright?”

“What can happen? Plus, they’re going to have sex anyway. If Young Master sees his bride being so proactive, maybe he will even praise us!”

Maid A hesitated for a second. Then, she nodded: “Let’s do it!”

Originally, Lin Shan was crying. Suddenly, someone lifted her veil and stuffed a pill in her mouth. A maid raised her hand and karate chopped her neck. Lin Shan’s body soften as she fell unconscious.

Promoted post: [5 signs you’re in a toxic relationship](#)

Chapter 75

To my dear readers,

I would like to thank **Josephine Foong** for her donations to me! This is the second time Josephine has donated to me. I appreciate it so much. Thank you for choosing to support me!! ❤️

This chapter was odd to translate. It sounded a lot more normal in Chinese. Or perhaps, I've read it too much and now my brain isn't working well again. I hope you like it! Guess who's back next chapter?

Chapter 75

Lin Shan fainted for a very long time. It wasn't until she heard the door open that she woke up all groggy. She felt a strange heat running through her entire body. It was as if something was stirring from within, and it was controlling her. She couldn't think straight at all.

Ji Bai Yu had no idea that Lin Shan was drugged. When he saw her laying on the bed with the bridal veil on the side, he was very annoyed. True, he hated Song Luo. He wanted to torture her for revenge, but not marry her! Uggghhh. Now he had to marry this woman and she caused him to lose face in front of everyone at the wedding. And what was she doing? Taking a nap?!?

He was irritated. He walked towards the bed and shoved Lin Shan rudely: "Hey. Wake up!"

Lin Shan was already hot to begin with. Now that she was shoved, she felt even hotter. Her hands tightly gripped the blanket and her whole body started to tremble.

Ji Bai Yu realized something was wrong. He quickly flipped her over. When he looked down, he was astonished. Lin Shan's eyes looked foggy and her cheeks were scarlet. She appeared to be mentally confused as she tugged onto the front piece of her outfit. She was moaning: "Hot.... I'm hot...."

Ji Bai Yu had been adopted by Ji Hong Lin ever since he was young. He had seen all the poisons from here. With one sniff, he could tell Lin Shan had taken

aphrodisiac. In addition, it was the ultra strong kind. The drug was several times stronger than the regular kind. If the taker did not have sexual intercourse within a certain time period, the person would lose her/his mind and suffer worse than death.

Of course, Ji Bai Yu was happy to see Lin Shan suffer. But he didn't expect Lin Shan to look so stunning. Originally, he thought she was unattractive under male clothing. But right now, the woman in front of him was very seductive. She looked extremely tasty.

Who in the right mind would refuse to eat a stunning beauty that was presented in front of him? Ji Bai Yu didn't hesitate at all as he pounced on her.

Lin Shan felt a breeze on her breasts and regained some logic back. She opened her eyes and saw Ji Bai Yu taking off her clothes. She immediately tried to gather all her strength to push him away.

Ji Bai Yu was surprised. He didn't expect Lin Shan to have any strength left to resist after taking the aphrodisiac. He looked amused and stopped his actions. He watched her as he smiled mischievously: "What? Aren't you suffering? I'm trying to help you."

"Get off me!" Lin Shan tightly clasped onto her clothes, "F**k off!"

"Are you sure about that?" Ji Bai Yu laughed, "Look at you. You can barely wait until I touch you...." As he spoke, he gently used his fingers to stroke Lin Shan's face. Lin Shan slapped his hand away.

"Y-you... don't touch me...." She was struggling to talk. The drug was activating again. Her whole body felt as if she was being nibbled by hundreds and thousands of ants. However, her logic was still there. She kept pushing Ji Bai Yu away.

What type of person was Ji Bai Yu? Women would cry and beg for him to touch them. He had never met a woman who refused his touch. After being rejected by Lin Shan again and again, he was fed up: "Fine. Don't accept my help. You're going to suffer even more without me."

"I don't care if I die. G-get....out!!!" Lin Shan barely had any strength left. But for some reason, she could still kick. She kept trying to kick Ji Bai Yu off the bed.

Although Ji Bai Yu wasn't a righteous man, when it came to sexual intercourse, he had some principles. As long as the woman didn't want it, he would never force it upon her. But based on the current situation, Song Luo probably wouldn't be able to hold off for much longer... At this moment, Ji Bai Yu felt satisfied.

Ever since he had met this woman, she had ruined so many of his plans. Deep down, he wanted to teach her a lesson long ago; however, he never had the chance. Now, he was finally getting his revenge. Ji Bai Yu decided to sit back and pulled a chair to watch Lin Shan go through this tormenting process.

Ohhhh. He is such beast! If I had strength, I would bite him to death!

But currently, Lin Shan could barely save herself. Fortunately, now that Ji Bai Yu was further away, her temperature was slightly lowered. Yet, all of a sudden, there was another fire igniting within her. She wanted to throw herself into an ice cube.

Initially, Ji Bai Yu was enjoying watching Lin Shan suffer. But to his dismay, it appeared that Lin Shan was able to resist; and he was the one having trouble instead.

Then again, it was late into the night and the red candlelight was flickering. The air was filled with the scent of the aphrodisiac and there was an alluring woman lying on the bed in front of him. Under these circumstances, any normal functioning man would find it difficult to resist.

However, Ji Bai Yu saw this as a contest. Regardless, he must hold on until Lin Shan begged him. If not, his male pride would suffer too much.

In order to last until the end, Ji Bai Yu decided to go for a walk. Later when the drug had activated a bit more, Song Luo would naturally beg for him. Thinking of this, Ji Bai Yu got up and hummed a tune and left the room.

Since Ji Bai Yu left, Lin Shan felt slightly more calm, but the drug continuously eroded her mind and body. She felt like she could no longer reason, and she was starting to hallucinate. In her fantasy land, Lian Feng was slowly undressing her. He lightly kissed her neck.... but suddenly, the hallucinations disappeared. Instead, it was replaced by an uncontrollable hunger.

Lin Shan knew she couldn't hold off for much longer. If Ji Bai Yu returned now, she might really lose her virginity to him. At this moment, there was movement by the door. Lin Shan was afraid. Before she totally loses her mind, she forced herself to stand up and grabbed onto the wine bottle (made from clay). She stood by the door frame and decided to fight until death.

The footsteps were light, but they were definitely heading towards her direction. The moment the door creaked, Lin Shan used all her strength and lifted the wine bottle to smash against the person's head.

There was a soft groan, but the intruder did not collapse. Lin Shan had used up all her strength and fell into the person's arms.

— — —

Ji Bai Yu was still walking around aimlessly. His pride and ego was fighting an intense battle with his natural horny instincts. His mind was flooded with the images from the room. The harder he tried, the more difficult it was for him to stop thinking about it.

Suddenly, he seemed to have come into a realization. Why was he so conflicted?

I opened this path. I grew this tree. I married this woman. The woman in my room is my bride. Why should he be avoiding contact? Thinking of this, Ji Bai Yu closed his fan and rushed back into the room.

The moment he opened the door, his face darkened.

The bed was still there. The table was still there. The candles were still there. But the bride was gone!

On the wedding night, the bride was missing. This news quickly spread across the entire Red Phosphorous Hall. Ji Bai Yu was so angry that his face looked green. He knew Lin Shan was poisoned though, so she couldn't have gone far. He ordered his people to find her no matter what.

Within the time it took to burn an incense, the entire Red Phosphorous Hall was running around holding torches in their hands. Footsteps were haste. Everyone was searching for the missing bride.

Promoted post: [富二代 showing off](#)

Chapter 76

To my dear readers,

Sorry, I haven't been feeling too well and I've also been very lazy. I finally finished this chapter! Haha. Cliff hanger again! LOL ♥♥

Please turn off your adblock to support me!

Chapter 76

In a daze, Lin Shan heard lots of noises going through her ears. She thought she was hallucinating again. She wanted to speak, but the moment she opened her mouth, it was tightly covered. Someone whispered "Shhh" into her ear.

The soft whispering naturally brought a light breeze. Lin Shan thought it was very comforting and started to rub against the person. Since she was physically fighting Ji Bai Yu earlier, her neck area was actually exposed. Coincidentally, the person's arm was touching her neck area. It felt very sensational to her. She wanted to rub against it even more. Lin Shan started to rub against the person. But after rubbing a few times, the arm tightened and she couldn't move anymore.

"Stop moving." The person muttered.

It's him? It's definitely him! Lin Shan forced her eyes opened and saw the familiar face. She nearly cried out from joy. But then she quickly changed her mind: This has to be a hallucination. Why would Lian Feng be here? He's already....Thinking of this, Lin Shan wanted to burst into tears.

Seeing Lin Shan's shriveled expression, Lian Feng thought he had hurt her and instantly loosened his grip. But the moment he loosened his grip, Lin Shan started to rub against him again. At this moment, she had totally lost her mind. Basically, her body was just doing whatever it pleased.

Lin Shan's hands started to wander. She started to pat Lian Feng's clothes. And she started to go lower and lower.

Lian Feng was shocked by her behaviour. He wanted to stop her but a team of searchers happened to walk by. He didn't want to alert them so he could only

remain in the same position. Behind him was the ice cold surface of the rock wall, but in his arms was an overheating soft body of a young woman.

In addition, Lin Shan kept groping him. Lian Feng was in between ice and fire and it was torture.

Lian Feng couldn't take it anymore and decided to knock Lin Shan unconscious. But before he could strike, Lin Shan started to moan and the sound attracted some attention towards them.

Right away, a person started to head towards their direction.

Lian Feng was tense. He tightly gripped onto the sabre. He knew they were about to be exposed. But suddenly, the person was stopped by someone else.

"I think they are up ahead. Let's go!"

The person then changed directions and ran after the guy. Soon, the entire team was gone.

Lian Feng sighed a breath of relief under the darkness. Then, he almost freaked out. Lin Shan actually started taking off his belt. She was starting to touch the lower parts of his body. At this rate, before they can escape, he was going to be naked!

For precaution's sake, Lian Feng struck Lin Shan's acupoint and carried her towards the exit.

The interiors of the Red Phosphorous Hall was complicated, but one can easily be discovered. Although Lian Feng was very careful, he was soon spotted by the servants. They started to chase them and Lian Feng pulled out his sabre. The blade flashed and the ones who were leading the group started to fall down.

After the first group of enemies fell, more people started to swarm towards them. On one hand, Lian Feng was fighting amongst them. On the other hand, he was trying to retreat towards the exit.

At this moment, another person rushed towards him with a sword. Lian Feng turned around and blocked the hit. The person fell down but another guy was about to secretly stab Lian Feng from the back.

Currently, Lin Shan was very dizzy from all the spinning. She lifted her head and

saw blades flashing everywhere. Without thinking, she lifted her fist and punched someone in the face. Poor guy grabbed his face and fell onto the ground. Lin Shan turned around and smiled at Lian Feng's face. Then, she passed out again.

Lian Feng didn't know whether he should laugh or cry. But thanks to Lin Shan's punch, they were no longer totally surrounded. Lian Feng was able to leap and escape from the Red Phosphorous Hall.

Lian Feng whistled and Wu Ying appeared instantly. Wu Ying had been waiting outside all this time. Lian Feng got onto the horse and disappeared through the forest before the people could catch them.

The jolt from the horse woke Lin Shan up. The drug was still activating within her. The breeze from the wind felt very nice and her mind started to clear up a bit. She suddenly started to worry: Oh my goodness. Why am I flying? Wait. I'm not flying. I'm on a horse? Hmm how come this horse looks so familiar?

She started to ponder but thought she was hallucinating again. Except, this time, the hallucination felt more real than it had ever been.

Was it real? Then, the person holding her must be...

Lin Shan was very conflicted. She wanted to turn around and see, but she was afraid she would be disappointed if she turned around. After awhile, she finally decided to look back: I'm just turning around to make sure. It wouldn't take a piece of my meat! Thus, she gritted her teeth and turned back.

Unexpectedly, the moment Lin Shan turned around, Wu Ying was cut off by the mountainous road. Wu Ying immediately halted and Lin Shan flew off the horse. Originally, Lian Feng would have been able to hold onto her, but since she turned around so suddenly, he was caught off guard and reacted too slowly. All he could do was throw his body onto Lin Shan, and the two of them rolled down the hill.

Lin Shan felt the sky spun and only heard branches snapping and wind blowing. After rolling until all her guts had almost poured out, they finally came to a stop.

Lin Shan felt as if all her bones were nearly broken, but she didn't care. She quickly got up and looked at the man. The two of them were at the bottom of

the slope. There wasn't much visible light from the moon, but it was enough for Lin Shan to see his face clearly.

It's him. It's really him!

Lin Shan could hear her heart pounding. It was as if it wanted to pop out. She tried to suppress her volcanic emotions and quietly asked: "Is it...you?" She was careful. She blinked and looked into the eyes of Lian Feng. She was worried it was too good to be true.

Lian Feng looked at her but didn't say a word. He nodded slightly and Lin Shan could no longer hold back her emotions. She used all the strength she had and tightly wrapped her arms around him. It was only then she allowed herself to believe that everything was actually real.

He was truly living. He was breathing. He could speak. It wasn't an imaginary dream.

Lian Feng didn't move. He had his arm around her shoulders. He was also very emotional. He had teamed up with Du Hao to fake his death in order to trick Du Ye. He couldn't wait to reunite with her. Yet, he didn't expect her to secretly leave the Palace to look for him.

Knowing how much she had suffered broke his heart. He felt as if his heart had been stabbed by knives.

Lian Feng was not good at sweet talk. The only thing he could do was quietly embraced her. He could feel her temperature in his arms. At that moment, he felt like Lin Shan was his. No one can snatch her away.

The two of them hugged each other for a long time. They hugged until Lian Feng felt a slight tremble from Lin Shan. He released her and lifted her face. She was obviously crying. Her eyes were watery and her cheeks were still red from the drugs. He felt so bad for her and reached out his hand to wipe the tears away. Then, he started to use his finger to stroke her tender and lovely face. A wonderful feeling emerged from his mind.

Without any hesitation, Lian Feng kissed Lin Shan on the lips.

This wasn't an intense kiss, but it was very long and gentle. It was filled with longing and it was slowly occupying her body and mind. The drug instantly

activated again and Lin Shan was no longer holding back. She used both hands and wrapped around Lian Feng's neck as she deepened the kiss.

Lian Feng didn't expect her to be so proactive and he was a bit astonished. With a blink of an eye, she had already taken off his outer garment. Their skins touched and the fire within Lin Shan was becoming more and more fierce. Her actions started to become more and more wild.

Lian Feng knew she was drugged so he quickly grabbed onto her wrist and forced her to stop: "Shan Shan. Shan Shan. Stop!"

He had to keep yelling at her before she stopped. Lin Shan was out of breath as she said in a raspy voice: "What?"

"You've been drugged. Don't be so rash. Calm down!" Although Lian Feng was horny, his logical side occupied too much space in his brain. He had to suppress his emotions to remind Lin Shan.

Lin Shan was truly Lin Shan. She raged: Calm your freaking head! It's because you were too calm in the past, I almost got married to someone else. This opportunity is so rare. Maybe it isn't the best time or place. But both of us are here. We have to hurry before we regret!

Promoted post: [10 facts about me](#)

Chapter 77

To my dear readers,

Sorry for the slow releases. I'm honestly not feeling well. I still want to finish the novel by the end of this year but it might take me longer depending on how I'm feeling. Please be patient.

I hope you guys are satisfied. Haha. It's a very cute chapter (a bit odd as well due to the translations). Please support me if you can.

Chapter 77

Not sure if it was the drugs or Lin Shan's innate abilities, this time Lin Shan was giving it her all. She didn't even wait for Lian Feng to respond as she savagely started to devour him again. Then, Lian Feng lifted her face and growled in his deep voice: "Shan Shan, tell me, are you sure you really want to do this?"

Lin Shan clenched her fists and said: "I do! More real than a pearl! Before she could finished talking, Lian Feng flipped her over and went on top of her.

This kiss was much more intense and deeper than before. This time, Lian Feng's lips had no intentions of parting. Instead, he slowly made his way down her cheek. He left a tiny mark on her neck...

Lin Shan felt like she was high. Her mind was blank and her body felt like it was out of control. She kept her arms tightly wrapped around Lian Feng's neck. But after awhile, she realized something was wrong. Why were they still making out? At least take off some clothes? She curiously popped her eyes opened and noticed Lian Feng was frowning. He looked unsure of what to do next.

This was truly a tragedy for a pure virgin in the Ancient times. No one to teach, no porno books to read, and no porno to watch! How would he learn on his own? It was definitely too difficult. Under these circumstances, the modern Lin Shan was surely much more educated in comparison.

No problem! Perhaps we may have never eaten pork, but we have seen pigs run! I'll follow the book. One step at a time! We'll get there!

Lin Shan felt a surge of energy as she lifted her sleeves and started to strip Lian

Feng. In a matter of seconds, she took off everything. When Lian Feng's strong, muscular, tan chest was exposed, Lin Shan was dazzled. The drugs started to activate again as she swallowed her saliva and went beast mode...

Anyhow, although the process wasn't very smooth and the movements were not very standard, they ultimately did it.

Lian Feng's penis was erect and the moment it entered her, Lin Shan felt a throbbing pain. She wanted to yell but moaned instead. It was very satisfying.

In a daze, she looked up at the sky. The sky was filled with endless amounts of stars. The stars gradually became one as it reflected into her pupil. Deep down, it had become one of her most unforgettable memories...

It was the beginning of Autumn. The wind blew a dried up yellow leaf as it spun in the air and landed on Lin Shan's face. It woke her up from her dream.

Lin Shan opened her eyes and after looking around, her face immediately turned red. She was in Lian Feng's arms like a quail.

It was a battlefield. A battlefield, I tell you! The process was actually quite different from what I had imagined. It didn't feel as good as the book said, but we did it! We went all out and gave everything we had. Even now, I could still clearly remember every move from last night. Every line he said, every time our skin touched....

Thinking of this, Lin Shan felt a pressure coming through her nose and she started having a nosebleed on one side.

Lian Feng could feel Lin Shan fidgeting and woke up. When he opened his eyes and saw Lin Shan bleeding from one nostril, he was shocked: "What happened?" He was very anxious as he quickly dug out his handkerchief to wipe her face.

Lin Shan didn't resist as Lian Feng wiped her face. He was very focused as she stared at him smiling like a fool.

Soon, Lian Feng started to feel a bit embarrassed by Lin Shan's smile. He thought of what happened last night and started to blush. At this moment, from the corner of his eyes, he subconsciously noticed the garments Lin Shan had

flung away last night. He suddenly recalled her flesh and last night's memories came rising up like a tide. It caused his body temperature to go up several degrees.

Lian Feng quickly avoided eye contact as he picked up the clothes. He wanted to help Lin Shan stand, but Lin Shan rejected his hand. Instead, she placed her arms around his neck and pounced on him once more.

This good morning kiss was not light at all. Lin Shan was almost sitting on him. Her legs were around his waist and their bodies were glued together. Lian Feng was on the bottom, while she was on top. A certain area couldn't handle this type of excitement and started to react again.

It looked as if all was going to break loose when Lin Shan suddenly stopped. Her eyes had a mischievous gleam as she stated: "You better tell me everything or we're not continuing!"

Wow, it only took her a night to learn how to threaten a man. What a smart girl.

Lian Feng didn't know whether he should cry or laugh. Stopping in the middle of his erection was not easy. But knowing Lin Shan's temper, he knew if he didn't clarify, she might make these type of threats very often in the future. For the sake of his penis, Lian Feng sadly lifted her off of him.

"It's a long story. Put your clothes back on first. I don't want you to catch a cold."

Lin Shan pouted but obeyed as she put her clothes back on. She was trying to put on the wedding gown (the inside part) from last night, but it was extremely complicated due to the design. With her head down as she dressed herself, Lin Shan started to complain: "I swear, I'll just be a man from now on. It's so much work to dress as a woman."

Suddenly, Lian Feng grabbed onto her hand as he started helping her button up. His eyes looked very gentle and kind: "This is more suitable for you. You look like a lady."

Lin Shan felt a sweetness overdose, but she still wanted to pout: "Are you saying, I used to look manly? I didn't look good?"

“That wasn’t my intention. Please don’t misunderstand...”

Seeing how worried he was, Lin Shan giggled: “I was doing it on purpose. I can’t believe ...mmm...”

She was kissed.

Then, Lian Feng fixed her outfit and lightly said: “I also did it on purpose.”

Lin Shan: “.....”

The last part of the outfit was the bright red outer garment. Lian Feng didn’t put it on Lin Shan though. Instead, he tossed it aside.

Lin Shan felt bad: “Don’t throw it out. The material is worth a lot. I’ll go and wash it. Next time I get married, I can wear it again....”

She was about to go over to pick it up when Lian Feng pulled out his sabre and waved it twice in the air. The elegant wedding gown was split in pieces: “Next time, you’re going to be my bride. No need to wear someone else’s wedding gown.”

Lin Shan was shocked by the coldness of Lian Feng’s voice. She suddenly came to a realization.

Although this guy doesn’t say much, it doesn’t mean he isn’t possessive. Last time, she could already tell during the incident with the mountain thieves.

Lin Shan swallowed. She kept looking at the expensive garment. What a waste.

“Let’s go!” Lian Feng grabbed Lin Shan’s hand, “Wu Ying should be nearby. We’ll talk as we go.”

Promoted post: [The truth about success](#)

Chapter 78

To my dear readers,

This is actually the last chapter of many online versions of the raws. However, I have another 10 chapters for you! Don't worry. The story is good. Just be patient because I can't translate so fast due to pain and laziness.

This chapter took me FOREVER. I hate it when it goes in story mode because it makes translating so much harder...

P.S. I am still confused as to how Lian Feng survived after being stabbed..

P.P.S. Please excuse me if I have ridiculous typos. I always try rereading the chapters a few times but I usually still miss them. Apparently, last time I wrote, "Lian Feng killed Lin Shan on the lips" instead of kiss. WOW. LOL (Thanks for correcting me, Comrade!)

Chapter 78

While they were on their way to find Wu Ying, Lian Feng explained the entire story to Lin Shan.

Since the Emperor was critically ill, Lian Feng was ordered to go to Black Dragon Mountain to find the antidote. Deep down, both he and Du Hao knew Du Ye's intentions were not innocent. Du Ye was the Eldest Prince, but he had always been placed around the borders. It was definitely not a coincidence that he had arrived back during this critical period when the Emperor was so sick. Most likely, Du Ye had something to do with the Emperor's sudden illness.

At the time, Du Ye had returned to the Capital with a hundred thousand soldiers. Du Ye's soldiers were stationed right outside of the Capital. This wouldn't have been so worrisome if it weren't for the fact that Du Hao only had approximately ten thousand of his men guarding the Capital. If the Emperor were to die, Du Ye would certainly invade the Palace and attempt to become the next Emperor. Under the circumstances, Du Hao would have surely lost.

During this crucial period, if Lian Feng were to find the antidote, it would definitely turn the story around. But obviously, Du Ye wouldn't let Lian Feng ruin

his evil plan that he had carefully crafted from years ago. Thus, before Lian Feng left the Palace, he had already arranged a person under him into Lian Feng's team.

The goal was to ensure that Lian Feng would not make it back alive. That was why there was a traitor during their journey.

But that was only what it appeared to be from the outside. Du Ye had underestimated Du Hao. The truth was, Du Hao had been preparing for Du Ye all along. He had secretly been training an elite force of twenty thousand soldiers in the suburbs of the Capital.

Although twenty thousand was not a huge number, these soldiers were skillful and disciplined. They had participated in many secret operations and did very well. Since they were so capable and dominant in combat, they were known as the "Army of the brave".

However, this group of elite soldiers were very mysterious. Ever since Du Hao returned in triumph, they had vanished without a trace. In reality, Du Hao had hid them because they were his backup plan. In the event that something was going wrong, it would be the time to use them.

But Du Ye was not stupid. In order to prevent his plan from becoming the Emperor's, he had inserted secret spies all over the Palace. Even a mosquito would not be able to escape from his sight. Who would be able to communicate with anyone from the outside?

At this time, Lian Feng had exposed his identity to Du Hao. This was actually beneficial to Du Hao. Lian Feng decided to do an exchange with him: Lian Feng was willing to help Du Hao become the next Emperor and get rid of his enemies as long as Du Hao would grant him and Lin Shan freedom afterwards. That was why he said, "I will give you the world for one person."

Du Hao was a smart man. If he had to choose between power and love, ultimately, he would not give up everything for a woman. Therefore, he accepted Lian Feng's proposal. They will put on an act and report Lian Feng's death. Then, Lian Feng would contact his secret forces and ambush Du Ye's huge army.

Clearly, Du Hao had chosen the right person for the job. Since Lian Feng looked exactly like him, when Lian Feng carried the jade pendant and appeared in front

of the troops, the morale of the army increased substantially.

The twenty thousand soldiers then met up with the ex-mountain thieves and came up with the best ambushing plan due to their familiarity with the landscape. Within a night's time, they were able to defeat Du Ye's hundred thousand soldiers.

Although it may seem very surprising that they won, it naturally made sense. Lian Feng had the right timing and location working for him. In addition, the soldiers were ecstatic to fight alongside with their "Crown Prince". Whereas, their opponents had no idea that they even existed. They had no commanding officer and they weren't prepared. Hence, it was no surprise that Du Ye's army lost despite having five times more soldiers.

The defeat of his army stunned Du Ye. He was so close to becoming the next Emperor.

True. He was the one behind the Emperor's sudden illness. As the Eldest Prince, he should have been the Crown Prince. But since his mother was a commoner, he wasn't given that opportunity. In the past, he thought as long as he could demonstrate he was more capable than his brother, the Emperor and Empress would change their minds and value his existence.

But he was wrong.

Not only did the Emperor not treat him better due to his spectacular successes, he saw him as a threat to Du Hao and wrote an Imperial edict and sent him off to the borders. Although it may have looked like the Emperor was being fair (since Du Hao was also sent to fight), but in reality Du Hao had the military power.

Although he was given the title of a General, but in actuality, he had no authority. He was sent to the harshest conditions of the Northwest border, and that would have been basically his life.

His dream was totally shattered by his father's decision. During his time at the borders, Du Ye went through a drastic change. He slowly became more cold blooded and ruthless. He vowed that he was going to take back everything that was supposed to be his.

At this time, Du Ye unintentionally discovered a poison. This poison had no colour and taste. Even a silver needle would not be able to detect it*. As long as someone constantly mixed it in with the food and water, eventually the poison will appear like a disease. No one would know they were poisoned.

When Du Ye discovered this poison, he realized his opportunity had finally arrived. He managed to overtake the main General working alongside with him and got hold of the military power. Then, he secretly sent his people to test out the poison in Black Dragon Mountain. He wanted to ensure that the poison would still be effective in a different climate and location.

In addition, he contacted the old counsellors who had always been very supportive of him. Slowly, he was going to control everything and replace Du Hao as the future Emperor.

Du Ye's plan was half successful. He was only one step away from achieving his dream. But he was too careless with his last step. He thought he was the only one who had undergone tremendous change. He failed to realize that Du Hao had also matured and changed from his own experiences.

The reason why he lost was because he had overestimated himself and underestimated his opponent.

By the time Du Hao's troops had arrived into the Capital, Du Ye had already secretly fled from the Palace.

Perhaps, he was bitter and planned to get revenge; but even if he wanted to, the chances were low. As of now, his dream of becoming the Emperor will only remain a dream.

After hearing Lian Feng's explanation, Lin Shan was utterly shocked: "So are you telling me this was an act the entire time? You and the Crown Prince planned this all along?"

"Yes." Lian Feng nodded.

If Lin Shan had the ability, she would pounce on Lian Feng and bite him to death.

It turned out she was tricked by the brothers! What a waste of my tears! They're shameless. Shameless, I tell you!

Lian Feng could tell Lin Shan's complexion wasn't looking so good. He tried to relieve the situation: "I know I should have told you this beforehand, but Du Ye is too meticulous. We were worried any mistakes on our parts would ruin all our previous efforts. That's why...."

"So you guys decided to use me to trick Du Ye into thinking that you were truly dead so that he would have his guard down?" Lin Shan looked like she was ready to kill someone.

Lian Feng remained silent but nodded his head.

Lin Shan was so furious that she nearly leaped off the horse: "Stop! Stop! I'm not going any further. I'm breaking up with you!"

They went too far. They schemed everything while she remained clueless and cried hysterically. She even thought of committing suicide if Lian Feng was dead. She was more embarrassing than a crown. She's not going to forgive! No!

Lin Shan rolled off Wu Ying's back and stormed off. She muttered angrily: "Don't even try to stop me. I might as well go back and marry Ji Bai Yu instead...."

Before she could finish talking, her wrist was firmly grasped. Then, she was pushed back against a tree. Lian Feng was leaning on her and his eyes looked cold: "What did you say?"

Originally, Lin Shan was just venting. But now that Lian Feng was glaring at her, she felt like she was a tiger that was stuck. Now, she had no guts left and started to stutter: "I-I.... I'm going to break up with you...to go.... marry..Ji Bai Yu...."

Lian Feng's face became darker and darker. His dark pupils stared into her soul: "It was wrong of me to lie to you, but I will not allow you to break up with me. And definitely not marry Ji Bai Yu. You understand?"

This was an apology? How come I feel like I'm being threatened?Lin Shan felt hopeless. Did she find herself a bad man? Within a night, her loyal man was becoming more like an Emperor. At this moment, she had a bad feeling she was going to be controlled by this guy for life.

The truth was, she was already controlled.

*In the past, it was common for people to stab their food/drink with a silver needle to detect if it was poisoned. If the needle turned dark, it would imply that the food/drink was poisoned.

Promoted post: [Your Addictions are toxic](#)

Chapter 79

To my dear readers,

I only need to accumulate \$10 and I will be able to get paid on WordAds! Please support me by turning off your adblock and clicking some ads! I'm at \$90.15!! (Keep in mind, I've only been paid **once** since I started translating on Oct 2015. This will be the second time).

P.S. I hope you like this chapter! It's quite funny. Haha.

Chapter 79

After Du Ye disappeared, Du Hao used a lot of manpower as he tried to track down his whereabouts. At the same time, he got rid of all the old counsellors who were against him. Basically, he had reverted the tragedy and swept away all the obstacles towards his future title of the Emperor.

At the same time, after the Emperor had taken the antidote, he had gotten a lot better. However, due to being poisoned for far too long, his body was no longer in the same condition as it once was. Although he was still the Emperor, he had passed down a lot more of the responsibilities to the Crown Prince. Most predicted that within half a year, the Crown Prince will officially become the Emperor.

Whenever there was going to be a political power change in the Palace, there was bound to be disturbance. Despite the fact that Du Ye was no longer a threat, Du Hao still constantly had to be on alert. He must be totally prepared in case something else was to happen. The entire Imperial Court was entering a very edgy state.

While the Imperial Court was getting ready for a switch in power, Lin Shan and Lian Feng were finally together after experiencing so much. Somehow, Du Hao managed to convince the Emperor to not to chase the whereabouts of the Prince Consort and his Imperial bodyguard. However, the Emperor deeply missed his daughter.

On his sickbed, the Emperor sent out an Imperial edict. He will heavily reward

anyone who could find his beloved daughter.

The notice announcement was distributed all over the Capital. Everyone knew that the Princess was missing. It was a hot topic amongst the citizens. The notice announcement was even placed on the outskirts of the Capital.

Looking at the terrible portrait of the Princess while craving for the reward, Lin Shan, who was living in seclusion, was starting to become restless again.

“Hey, why don’t we go find the Princess? We can exchange for a couple more cows!”

If Du Ming Yue knew her husband was comparing her to cows, she would probably smack her head against a tofu and die (I don’t get it...isn’t tofu soft?)

Lian Feng clasped his hands around Lin Shan’s face and turned her face away from the notice: “Stop dreaming.”

“Hey hey hey! Don’t grab my face. I need my face to make money!!!” Lin Shan mumbled. Suddenly, her legs went soft and she almost fell down. Luckily, Lian Feng was quick and managed to hold onto her. If not, she would have fallen straight on her face.

“Why are you so careless? How can you fall down while walking....” Lian Feng sighed as he stabilized her. He grabbed onto her hand but his face immediately stiffened, “Your hand...”

Lin Shan looked down and instantly freaked out. In the middle of her left palm, there was a lump of black air surrounding it.

Lian Feng’s face complexion didn’t look good: “You’ve been poisoned?”

“I.....” Lin Shan appeared to be in shock. After a few moments later, she nodded, “Umm.. I guess so....”

Lian Feng panicked and shook her wrist: “When? Who poisoned you? Why didn’t you tell me!”

Lin Shan was stunned by his reaction as she muttered: “About a month ago... at the Red Phosphorous Hall... Ji Hong Lin’s nail was poisonous and she....” At this time, Lian Feng’s expression was turning more gruesome by the second. Lin Shan rushed to explained, “I was going to tell you but when I saw you, I was too

emotional and I forgot....”

You!” Lian Feng was speechless. This was a life and death matter. How can she forget?! He seized her by the hand and said: “Let’s go!”

Lin Shan tried to pull back: “Go where?”

“Obviously, go find Ji Hong Lin for the antidote!”

What? Go back? Lin Shan started to get anxious: “Wait a second. Don’t be rash! They have so many people and their mindsets are messed up. She’s nutty, man! Last time, we were lucky that we escaped. If we go back, we’re just running into a trap. Why would she give us the antidote?”

“Even you know it’s difficult to get the antidote, yet you didn’t tell me ahead of time!” Lian Feng was clearly furious.

Lin Shan felt tongue tied. Then, she started to act innocent and pouty: “I told you.. I forgot... the moment I saw you, I wanted to mate with you..hehehe... ohhh I’m so shy!”

“.....” Lian Feng nearly spat out blood.

Although Lin Shan appeared to be calm, she knew being poisoned was a big deal. Last time, Ji Hong Lin told her that the poison will activate in three months. Time was tight. They must find the antidote as soon as they can.

Based on the current situation, the likelihood of Ji Hong Lin giving them the antidote was slim. Therefore, Lian Feng decided they should ask the jiang hu doctors from the Black forest. Those two were able to create an antidote that dissolved Du Ye’s poison; perhaps they could create an antidote for Lin Shan’s poison as well.

Thinking of this, the two of them set out on that very night to the Black forest.

Actually, the jiang hu doctors from the Black forest used to be quite famous at one point. Ten years ago, their “Supernatural Heroic Bird Medical” title was well known throughout jiang hu. However, these type of supernatural abilities were actually all made up and exaggerated in wuxia novels. The truth was, sometime these doctors could cure patients. But there were also many times that the patients end up dead because of their treatments. After awhile, the doctors

ended up with many enemies chasing after them. Thus, “Supernatural Heroic Bird Medical” had no choice but to hide within the Black forest.

Logically, since the couple had resided within the Black forest for so long, their skills should have improved. But after the female doctor took Lin Shan’s pulse, she shook her head: “I, little supernatural bird, have seen all sorts of poison. I’m afraid this poison cannot be dissolved.”

Lin Shan almost spat out blood: Little supernatural bird my ass! You’re an old supernatural chicken!

“No no. I think this poison could be dissolved!”

Lin Shan’s eyes brightened: Supernatural doctors are really supernatural! They know I can be cured with one look!

The old man nodded slowly: “Just give me three years and I will be able to invent a potion that can dissolve this poison!”

Lin Shan wanted to burst into tears. You two are playing me, aren’t you?

Just as Lin Shan was in her emotional but tearless state, Lian Feng calmly stated: “I know you two have very amazing abilities. Please help us think of a solution so that she can overcome this.”

“Um....” The two doctors made an eye contact and shook their heads in unison.

The doctor stroked his beard: “I can’t think of anything right now. Perhaps you should take her around and see some places before her life ends....ah! Your woman is biting me! Ai ya, wife! This woman might have a mad dog disease... help!!!!”

“The Supernatural Heroic Bird Medical” immediately fled.

“Pa!” Lin Shan rubbed her mouth, “If you have no abilities, just admit it and stop with the bullshit. Next time I see you again, I’ll bite you again!” She started to ramble on and on. When she turned around, she was faced with Lian Feng’s stressful expression.

“Calm down.” He lightly fixed her hair as he gently asked, “Are you hungry? I can hunt a mountain pheasant for you.”

The moment he mentioned food, Lin Shan was excited: “Ok! I’ll make you Hua Ji! It’s very delicious!”

Thus, Lian Feng hunted the pheasant. The condiments were from the doctors’ home. The fire was created by them. The hole* was dug by Lin Shan using the golden sabre....After spending half a day preparing, Lin Shan finally cooked her Hua Ji.

Lian Feng sat on the side. He silently watched her as his eyes revealed his concern.

“It’ll be ready soon!” Lin Shan clapped the soil away from her hands. She confidently sat down next to Lian Feng as she proudly bragged, “Don’t underestimate my cooking skills. Back in my hometown, my father was a chef. He was so good. I have also inherited his talents...” Lin Shan continued to babble on and on. She totally did not notice Lian Feng’s deeper glances.

“What’s your hometown like?” Lian Feng suddenly asked.

* I think the pheasant had to be cooked underground or something.

Promoted post: [Can Men and Women be purely friends?](#)

Chapter 80

To my dear readers,

I can't believe we're at chapter 80! I should be finished translating this by the end of the month. I hope you have enjoyed the story so far!

Chapter 80

Lin Shan was a bit shocked. This was the first time Lian Feng had asked about her past. Normally, she was the one who would talk nonstop while he listened.

Lin Shan thought about it: "My hometown..hmm, I can tell you but you will probably find it unbelievable....." She started telling Lian Feng all the things that had happened during her era. While she was explaining, she used her hands to show a lot of comparisons. She was afraid he wouldn't understand.

"Do you think I'm making it up? Since I've been here for so long, it even sounds a bit farfetched to me." Lin Shan mumbled. She thought Lian Feng wouldn't take her seriously.

Instead, Lian Feng looked at her very attentively: "If it's from you, I believe."

It was only six words, but Lin Shan suddenly felt a surge of warmth. Is this what it feels like to be trusted? Even though it sounded so ridiculous in this world, he still chose to believe me... thinking of this, her nose started to tingle. She gazed at him and they made eye contact. Lian Feng's lips started to inch closer.

Just as their lips were about to touch, Lin Shan suddenly bounced up: "Ai ya! My pheasant!"

They were too into their conversation and she had nearly forgotten about her pheasant. Fortunately, it was just a teeny bit overcooked. It wasn't burnt on the inside. The moment she unwrapped it, the heavenly aroma surrounded them. Anyone around them would have drooled.

Lin Shan was very proud on the inside. Ever since she had met Lian Feng, she had always lost face in front of him. Surprisingly, this time she actually succeeded. Once he had tried her cooking, he would definitely be impressed and praise her nonstop.

Lin Shan closed her eyes as she envisioned Lian Feng's expression after he eats the pheasant. Suddenly, she was interrupted by a loud voice.

"Holy shit! What's that smell? It smells soooooo good. I'm dying from hunger!"

How come this voice sounded so familiar? Before Lin Shan could react, another voice popped out: "Pssh. It's your fault. You can't even hunt a pheasant. What a waste of your muscles!"

"You nasty woman. If you didn't suck at cooking, I wouldn't be so frail that I couldn't strike a pheasant!"

"Pah! You have no skills yet you blame me. Are you a man!?"

"I'm not a man, and you're not a woman..."

Their bickering was getting closer and closer. By the time Lin Shan reacted, two familiar figures appeared in front of them. The four of them stared at each other in astonishment.

Lin Shan was the first one to snap out of it. She yelled: "Princess!"

Du Ming Yue snapped out of her shock and grabbed He Lao San and ran.

However, because they were too hungry, they had no strength. Within a couple of steps, Lian Feng pulled them back and threw them onto the ground.

Lin Shan finally got to examine the two up close. He Lao San was still the rough looking man that he was. However, Du Ming Yue had changed a lot. She was no longer wearing her glamorous attire and her hair was worn like a married woman. If Lin Shan hadn't known her previously, she would never believe the mischievous princess and this young woman was the same person.

"Who are you? How dare you treat me so rudely?" Du Ming Yue started to yell. Suddenly, her eyes landed onto Lian Feng. Instantly, fear was seen from her eyes, "B-brother?! Don't bring me back. I'm not going back! Even if you kill me, I refuse to go back!" Then, Du Ming Yue grabbed He Lao San's hand and started backing away.

He Lao San had never seen Lian Feng's real face. He thought Lian Feng wanted to bring Du Ming Yue back to the Palace. Therefore, he took out his double blade and decided to fight until death with Lian Feng.

Lin Shan could tell the situation was escalating in the wrong direction. She quickly went in between the guys and hollered: “Stop! We are not here to kidnap anyone!”

Her statement managed to calm everyone down. But Du Ming Yue hid behind He Lao San as she glared at Lin Shan in an untrusting manner: “Who are you? How did you recognize me?”

Lin Shan turned around and looked at Lian Feng. After Lian Feng nodded, she faced Du Ming Yue and sighed: “Princess, I’m Song Luo.”

Du Ming Yue’s jaw dropped. She was stunned.

“So you’re telling me, you’re not the Second Song Master? You were a woman all along?” While Du Ming Yue questioned her, she stared at Lin Shan’s chest for confirmation.

Lin Shan covered her chest and took a step back: “Replacement guaranteed if fake. If you don’t believe me, ask him!” She pointed at Lian Feng.

Lian Feng’s expression was stiff. Before he could say a word, Du Ming Yue burst into tears.

“I knew something was wrong with you! Wah! I worked so hard to get marry and I ended up marrying a woman! Not only are you a woman, you are having an affair with my brother. I don’t want to live anymore. I am going to kill myself....”

While she was crying, both Lin Shan and He Lao San wanted to fall apart. However, Lian Feng calmly interrupted her: “Don’t misunderstand. I’m not Du Hao.”

“Wah! If you’re not Du Hao, who are you? You think I’m a three years old child?....wah!”

Her sobbing was deafening and Lian Feng couldn’t help but crinkled his brows: “I’m Lian Feng.”

“Lian Feng? You think I’m blind? You....” Suddenly, Du Ming Yue stopped crying. She stared at Lian Feng’s golden sabre and froze. Then, she lifted her head up and carefully examined the person in front of her. She weakly said, “What? Are you really Lian Feng?”

Lian Feng nodded as he turned towards Lin Shan.

Lin Shan immediately stood out: "It's true. He really is Lian Feng. Just like me... replacement guaranteed if fake!"

Du Ming Yue was very troubled.

This person was Lian Feng? How come he looked like Du Hao? And Song Luo... why was she with Lian Feng? Wasn't she having an affair with Du Hao?

Du Ming Yue was confused. She wanted to turn around and ask He Lao San, but He Lao San was busy drooling at the pheasant: "Who cares who they are? Why don't we eat first?!"

Du Ming Yue: "....."

Lin Shan: "....."

Lian Feng: "....."

They split the pheasant amongst them. But poor Lin Shan only got the ass. By the time she lifted her head, He Lao San and Du Ming Yue had already devoured the whole thing.

Lin Shan didn't know whether she should laugh or cry. But Lian Feng handed the thigh to her: "You can have mines."

Lin Shan was so touched. Then, she heard Du Ming Yue whining: "Look at him and look at you! I must be blind to want to be with you. I want to break up with you!"

He Lao San's mouth was filled with meat as the oil dripped down from his mouth:" Humph. You don't know shit. This is called a couple going through happiness and pain together."

"Humph your head. When did you start learning how to use idioms, huh?"

"Because you have taught me well, wife!"

"...who's your wife? I want to break up with you. I'm going back!"

Go back? Lin Shan's eyes lit up. She thought about the reward on the announcement notice: "Why don't I bring you back then!?"

The moment she said that, Du Ming Yue ran behind He Lao San as fast as

lightning. She warned Lin Shan: “I’m not going back. Even if you kill me!”

Lin Shan was speechless. Pssh. That Du Ming Yue. She said she wanted to go back. Then she changes her mind right away.

Lian Feng waved his hand, indicating for her to calm down: “Don’t worry. We’re not going back to the Palace either.”

Promoted post: [Zootopia](#)

Chapter 81

To my dear readers,

I'm sorry for the slow releases. I'm currently not feeling well and it has been extremely difficult for me to concentrate and translate. I will try to translate whenever I am feeling better. Fortunately, some of these chapters are very short.

Chapter 81

"You guys are...." He Lao San held onto his piece of pheasant as he deeply analyzed the two of them. Suddenly, he came to a realization, "Oh! You guys must have escaped from the Palace, right?"

"What. What?!?! You two escaped from the Palace?" Du Ming Yue's eyes lit up. She looked extremely interested as she turned towards Lin Shan, "What happened? Do tell! Let us all cheer up!"

Lin Shan: "....."

Considering how they were already at this point, Lin Shan didn't see the need to conceal any longer. Therefore, she told them everything; from start to finish. Lin Shan told Du Ming Yue why she was disguised as a man to begin with, and also the relationship between Lian Feng and Du Hao. Lastly, she mentioned how Ji Bai Yu disguised as Du Jing and how he kidnapped her.

After she was finished, Du Ming Yue's mouth couldn't close from shock. Originally, she thought her eloping with a mountain thief was already outrageous enough. She did not expect Lin Shan's experience to be a thousand times more twisted than hers. It took her almost the entire afternoon to line up all her thoughts. Suddenly, she felt a bit depressed.

As a Princess, she had always been spoiled by everyone. Suddenly, she realized everyone whom she dealt with turned out to be fake. Her husband was fake. The Imperial bodyguard was fake. Even her Third brother was fake! What's actually real?! She turned around. He Lao San was smiling foolishly at her while holding his pheasant.

Fine, at least the mountain thief and pheasant was real.

“Based on what you’re saying, we don’t even know whether Third brother is actually alive?” Du Ming Yue questioned.

Lin Shan nodded: “I’m assuming Ji Hong Lin had hid him somewhere. Ji Hong Lin is so evil. I don’t think she would kill someone that could still be of use.”

“That’s so strange...” Du Ming Yue looked hesitant, “Logically, if Ji Hong Lin wanted to get revenge on Father, she could just get Ji Bai Yu to disguise as Third brother and assassinate him. Why did he have to hide his true identity for so long?”

Lin Shan thought about it: “I think they’re searching for something.”

Immediately, He Lao San who was currently crouching down eating his pheasant inched closer: “What are they searching for? Is it worth a lot?”

“Worth a lot my ass!” Lin Shan spat out her words, “I don’t get it. The Red Phosphorous Hall is so freaking big already. Why would they want a stinking piece of rock? They need to grow up....”

“Rock?” Lian Feng became alert, “What rock?”

“The Heaven stone that the Emperor had bestowed to me. Something about how the previous Emperor had written the words himself. It’s a piece of rock...” Lin Shan grumbled.

Lian Feng’s face lit up. He instantly looked a lot more relived. He grabbed onto Lin Shan’s hand and said, “Let’s go! Take me to see the Heaven stone.”

Lin Shan didn’t expect Lian Feng to be interested in the rock as well. However, seeing how excited he was, she didn’t want to ruin his mood. Therefore, she promised to take him to see the stone.

He Lao San was definitely not interested in looking for a piece of rock. He immediately lost interest and stated he was going to take Du Ming Yue elsewhere to hide from the Imperial court. He didn’t want them to find Du Ming Yue.

Therefore, they were going to split up from the home of “The Supernatural Heroic Bird Medical”. But suddenly, Du Ming Yue threw up.

The moment Du Ming Yue threw up, He Lao San was so anxious that his face turned red and neck expanded. He gripped onto Lin Shan and accused her for poisoning Du Ming Yue with the pheasant.

Lin Shan was also panicking: “You also ate my pheasant and complained it was filthy. Yet, you ate more than her and you’re fine!”

“Um....” He Lao San didn’t know how to respond. He scratched his head as he thought about it. Du Ming Yue started vomiting even more severely.

He Lao San started to freak out and rushed to find the two doctors. After taking Du Ming Yue’s pulse, the female doctor instantly smiled: “Young man. You haven’t done your job! Your wife is pregnant yet you had no idea.”

What? He Lao San’s eyes popped out. Right after, the Black forest rang with his enthusiastic scream: “I have been a gangster for over twenty something years. Finally, I will be a dad! Muahaahahahahaha!”

Du Ming Yue lied on the bed as she smiled lovingly.

Lin Shan had never seen Du Ming Yue with this type of expression before. It was hard for her to adjust. She wanted to say something but Lian Feng pulled her out.

“Let them be happy. Let’s not meddle in their affairs.” Lian Feng advised.

Lin Shan looked towards the direction of the house: “I find it so strange. A few months ago, Du Ming Yue was a spoiled mischievous Princess. Now, she’s going to be the mother of a child? Did you see her expression? It’s as if she became a totally different person”

Lian Feng took advantage of the situation as he embraced Lin Shan and kissed her on the forehead: “You silly girl. People can change.”

Change? Lin Shan was surprised. Suddenly she felt like fate was truly amazing. It had the ability to turn a bratty Princess into a good wife and mother.

“When we have children, you’re not going to find it strange.” Lian Feng fixed the hair on her forehead. His voice turned super gentle.

Did he say....children? Lin Shan felt a sweetness overdose.

If I could have children with Lian Feng, that would be pretty good. But very

quickly, she remembered the poison in her body and couldn't help but become discouraged. She opened her mouth to say something, but hesitated.

Lian Feng didn't give her the chance as he kissed her on the lips: "Let's go and bid farewell to the Princess."

Promoted post: [Can you preserve the culture once the language is lost?](#)

Chapter 82

To my dear readers,

Sorry for being slow. I will try to pick up the pace this week.

Chapter 82

After leaving the couple, Lin Shan and Lian Feng went on the path towards the Capital.

It had already been more than a month since their departure. Within a month, those who used to back up Du Ye were all removed from their positions; regardless of how low or high their rankings were. The names of all the removed officials were posted next to Du Ming Yue's notice. A lot of villagers were shoving around to take a glimpse of it.

Lin Shan was curious and also took a look. But instantly, her expression stiffened.

"What's wrong?" Lian Feng came over and asked.

Lin Shan's voice shook as she pointed to the notice: "My....my father...."

That's right. Song Xian's name was actually on the list. Lian Feng did not expect this either. He steadied Lin Shan and consoled: "Don't panic. Let's go find out the situation."

On that very day, the two of them disguised themselves and went around looking for clues. They found out that although Song Xian was on the list, the Imperial court ruled that he was too old and had accomplished a lot for the country and decided to spare his life. They only took away his title and his residence. Song Xian was ordered to retire and no longer participate in any political matters.

When Lin Shan found out her father's life was spared, she felt relieved. Although her father lost his government position, at least he was alive. At least he wasn't locked up in a cell.

But suddenly, she felt very uneasy. Her father was already so old. He had

always done his job very honestly and thoroughly. There was no way he could be part of a conspiracy. At home, it would take him a long time to even consider about killing a cockroach. Logically, her father wouldn't and shouldn't have anything to do with the Elder Prince. What was going on?

Lin Shan and Lian Feng decided to go and visit her parents to find out the cause of the issue.

It had been said that ever since the Imperial court took away Song Xian's position, he had left with his wife to rely on their daughter-in-law's family. They were now staying with General Yang Sui's family at his residence.

Once Lin Shan found out, she and Lian Feng rushed to the General's residence that very night. In order to prevent disturbance, they didn't directly pay a formal visit. Instead, Lian Feng secretly slipped into the residence with Lin Shan.

As a General, Yang Sui's residence definitely had strict security. However, Lian Feng's martial arts abilities were too good. He managed to sneak into the residence with Lin Shan without being detected. After the two of them entered the residence, they quickly overheard that her parents were staying at another courtyard. Therefore, they immediately left. Surprisingly, they ended up bumping into Song Lin Feng on the way.

Song Lin Feng's martial arts abilities were not below Lian Feng's. The moment he heard movement from the courtyard, he had already rushed out with his sword. But before he could pull out his sword, he saw the female version of Song Luo with the Crown Prince. He initially thought something was wrong with his eyes.

Right away though, he noticed the golden sabre on Lian Feng's waist and figured out half the story. Then, he did a silent signal and led them to a private room.

The moment they entered the room, Song Lin Feng pinched Lin Shan: "You stinky brat. You finally decide to return, eh!?"

Lin Shan was in so much pain that she started to tear up: "Hey! Don't be so rude. I'm your sister!"

Song Lin Feng rolled his eyes at her: "What? Were you actually hoping for me

to cry and embrace you since it has been so long?”

Lin Shan was so angry that she couldn't think of a comeback. She looked at Lian Feng for help but Lian Feng actually turned away and pretended he didn't see. At that moment, Lin Shan crumbled: Men cannot be trusted!

Just as Lin Shan was being moody, Song Lin Feng got to the main point: “I know why you two are here. I can tell you everything, but before that, I want to know what's going on between you guys.”

Song Lin Feng deeply stared at Lian Feng and asked, “Are you going to tell me or the stinky brat?”

“Who's the stinky brat?!” Lin Shan refuted. Song Lin Feng pushed her face aside, “When men are talking, go on one side.”

Lin Shan: “.....”

Although Song Lin Feng tried to disregard Lin Shan, the story wouldn't be lively if Lin Shan didn't explain it. Therefore, after Lian Feng gave her the signal, Lin Shan lifted her sleeves and explained everything from start to finish.

After she was done, Song Lin Feng appeared to be deep in thought.

Lin Shan was impatient and directly asked him: “Why am I doing all the talking? You still haven't told me why Father's name is on the list. Why would Father be on the removal list?”

Song Lin Feng lifted his head up as he lightly laughed: “What? Even you can detect something is wrong?”

“How would I *not* detect something is wrong?” Lin Shan was annoyed. She was starting to feel that her brother and her bazi* signs did not get along with each other.

Song Lin Feng didn't care that he was driving his sister nuts. He continued on: “Actually, you two are overlooking a person. He is the biggest winner of this.”

What? Lin Shan was confused. There was a big BOSS behind the scenes?

Song Lin Feng looked at her and calmly stated: “The Emperor.”

*Bazi = birth date characters used in fortune telling. It has something to do with the time, the date, the hour you were born...(very hard to explain)

Promoted post: [ISIS's PR campaign and rap](#)

Chapter 83

To my dear readers,

I have asked Amery nicely to postpone his maintenance on his site for a few more weeks. Therefore, you guys can read the first 12 chapters now (if you're a new reader)! Thank you Amery for being so kind!!! By the way, this chapter isn't that great (too serious).. so I translated the following one as well. It will be released shortly.

Chapter 83

That's right. The Emperor is the key element to everything. Song Lin Feng icily laughed: "Do you really think the Emperor is honestly so foolish? He is extremely clever...."

Song Lin Feng started from the beginning. As Lin Shan listened, the story started to unfold.

Although the Imperial court appeared to be calm on the outside, there was actually a lot of internal conflict. Basically, there were three groups in power. The leading group was definitely Team Du Ye. This team mainly consisted of old officials and counsellors. They had a lot of power to rally supporters and often used their accomplishments for the late Emperor to get their way. Even the current Emperor didn't dare to mess with them.

The next group was Team Du Hao. Most of the people in this group were the younger officials and counsellors. They had their own beliefs and were adaptive and innovative. However, they lacked strength. Without the Emperor backing them up, they would not be able to exist.

Under these circumstances, the third group was definitely crucial. It turned out the third group was Team General Yang Sui.

Yang Sui was born in the Capital. For many generations, his ancestors were Generals. By the time he had gotten the position, Yang Sui was at the highest position that had ever been. He had the biggest military power and he had cultivated countless of military leaders. Currently, all of them had very important

positions in the Imperial court.

If we include Yang Sui's military power with his leaders, it would represent more than half of all the military power within the Imperial court. Plainly speaking, the Emperor wouldn't dare to touch the man.

Thus, Yang Sui was known as the "Lord of high accomplishments". Although the Emperor appeared to respect and honour him, deep down, the Emperor saw him as a threat. The Emperor wanted to get rid of him in fear that he would go against him in the future. If Yang Sui decided to join Team Du Ye, the results would be inconceivable.

Therefore, the Emperor was troubled. How could he put Du Hao in power as well as control and limit Yang Sui's power?

At this moment, an opportunity arose.

Princess Ming Yue suddenly stated she wanted to marry the Song Family's son. The Emperor was smart. Right away, he could see the benefits of the marriage. Song Luo was Song Xian's second son. Song Family's eldest son Song Lin Feng had married Yang Sui's only daughter, Yang Bi Yuan. Yang Sui was extremely satisfied with his new son-in-law.

Immediately after the marriage, Yang Sui wanted to breed Lin Feng as his successor. The Emperor saw this and sent out a marriage decree. On the outside, it would appear he was doing this for his daughter's happiness, but deep down, he was using Song Luo to control Song Lin Feng and Yang Sui.

"So you're telling me the Emperor purposely arranged the marriage?"

"That's correct." Song Lin Feng nodded, "Not only that. I suspect he knew early on that the Princess actually wanted to marry me. He only pretended to make the mistake. It was all part of his plan."

After Song Lin Feng was finished talking, Lin Shan was in shock. If what her brother said was true, then it would explain why the Emperor refused to take back his words despite Du Ming Yue telling him that she wanted to marry her brother instead. Wow. So although the Emperor appeared to love his daughter very much, in reality, he put his power first. He was willing to sacrifice his daughter's happiness in order to remain in power.

Thinking of this, Lin Shan suddenly realized why Du Ming Yue would rather roam around with He Lao San than return back to the Palace. Although she was loved, she couldn't escape the fate of being a victim for power.

Lin Shan revealed an enlightened expression, "So originally, the Emperor could use my marriage to Du Ming Yue to control you and the General. But now that I'm gone, he has no one. Therefore, he decided to use Father, am I correct?"

"You're not as stupid as I thought." Song Lin Feng smirked as he knocked Lin Shan on the head.

Wow. The Emperor was despicable. Lin Shan gritted her teeth. However, in order to hear more gossip, she decided to swallow her words and continued to listen on. As expected, Song Lin Feng continued speaking.

"Actually, this time, the Emperor's motive is different. Now, the situation has changed. Back then, there were three groups in power. Although there were a lot of conflicts, there were restrictions on all sides. As a result, it appeared to be quite calm. However, currently the Eldest Prince is gone. There are only two groups in power now. In order to preserve his political power, the Crown Prince has gotten rid of all those associated with the Eldest Prince. Now, many are in the state of fear.

Under these circumstances, the Emperor obviously doesn't want any more trouble. Therefore, he used Father. On one hand, he wanted to show off his mighty strength. On the other, he wanted to give us a warning; as long as you're faithful to me, you'll be fine. Hence, Father became the sacrificial victim of this power struggle."

By the time Song Lin Feng was done talking, Lin Shan was so furious that she was biting her teeth: "Father is already so old, yet he has to accept this punishment just because of this old geezer. Too unfair!" Then, Lin Shan realized it wasn't nice of her to call Lian Feng's father an old geezer. She quickly turned to look at his reaction.

She noticed Lian Feng was more quiet than usual and his complexion didn't look too good. She wanted to ask him what was wrong but her brother was a step ahead of her.

"Has Lian brother detected anything strange?"

Lian Feng's face darkened but he didn't say a word.

Song Lin Feng continued: "Now that I've heard about Lian brother's background. Why don't I make a daring hypothesis?"

Lin Shan could tell something was wrong. Why was her brother staring at Lian Feng so intently as he said this? And Lian Feng's expression was turning darker and darker.

"If my thoughts are aligned with Lian brother's, there's no point in staying in the Imperial city. Just take the brat and go far away."

Lin Shan couldn't handle the suspense any longer: "What the heck is going on? Stop spinning in circles and get to the point. It's making me sick!"

"Why are you in such a rush?" Song Lin Feng rolled his eyes at her, "Based on my opinion, the Emperor's meeting with Lian brother was not a coincidence."

"If it wasn't a coincidence, then what was it?" Lin Shan was anxious.

"You have no patience! I can't say for sure, but I'm just making an assumption. Right? Lian brother?" Song Lin Feng looked deeply into Lian Feng's eyes, "Do you want me to continue? Want to see if our conclusions are similar?"

Lian Feng didn't say a word but Lin Shan pressed: "Then say it!"

Song Lin Feng smiled and continued on: "At the time, the Emperor could see that the Crown Prince was losing power and control. He was afraid his Eldest son would take advantage of this situation and thus sent both sons to the borders to fight. He wanted to train their bodies and souls. Although it appeared to be fair, he just wanted to get rid of his Eldest son and foster the Crown Prince."

Lin Shan's mind suddenly snapped and realized what Song Lin Feng was about to say. She immediately wanted to stop but Lian Feng blocked her with his stiff face; indicating it was alright for her brother to continue.

"The Emperor found out he had another son, and sent people to find out the whereabouts of Lian brother. He shockingly realized the son that was living amongst the people was identical to the Crown Prince. As a result, he thought of a plan. In case something were to happen to the Crown Prince, he still had another son as a backup. Thus, he wouldn't lose either way. He then

coincidentally met Lian brother..and coincidentally was under attack....and coincidentally....”

“Say no more!” Lian Feng finally interrupted him. His expression was grim.

“I’m not finished yet. Why are you in such a rush?” Song Lin Feng continued on, “Actually, I had always thought it was strange. Based on the Emperor’s intellects, how could he not realized the brat was a woman? The only explanation was he wanted to use my stupid sister to control us. In addition, he could control you. Since the Crown Prince made it back alive, he no longer needed a backup....”

“Enough!” Lin Shan screamed, “Are you finished? What backup? Lian Feng is Lian Feng. He is not anyone’s backup!”

Promoted post: [The Virtual World](#)

Chapter 84

To my dear readers,

I have never released two chapters together. This is the first time. Translating is hard work so please support me if you can. The story is almost over. I'm going to try my best to finish the story before the year ends.

Chapter 84

"I said I was making an assumption. You don't have to be so worked up about it." Song Lin Feng stated.

Lin Shan was so mad that she wanted to bite him, but Lian Feng stopped her.

"Song brother." He said, "Regardless of whether it's true or false, I was never part of the Palace to begin with. Now that the Eldest Prince is no longer a threat, my mission is complete. My only wish right now is to be with the one I love. I don't want to meddle in the Palace's affairs any longer. Pretend what happened today was a dream. We never came here and we will never return. Please help us take good care of your parents. Farewell."

Then, he grabbed Lin Shan and left.

Lin Shan knew Lian Feng's mood was awful. Thus, she didn't say anything else as he pulled her out. But by the time they exited the residence, Lin Shan couldn't help but comforted: "Don't listen to my brother. He might look like a decent man, but he has a terrible conscience. He saw us together so he purposely wanted to make you angry....hey, stop walking so fast! I can't catch up. Hey!"

She was careless and almost tripped. Fortunately, Lian Feng's arms were quick and managed to stop her fall.

"Are you alright?" His expression looked a bit softer.

Lin Shan nodded and whispered: "Are you mad at my brother?"

Seeing how careful she was being to avoid making him mad, Lian Feng realized he was losing his cool and forcefully smiled: "Don't over think. It has nothing to do with your brother."

Lin Shan was stunned. She quickly blurted: “Do you actually think what he said is true?” A moment later, she kind of regretted it and added in, “I think he’s just making it up. Even if the Emperor was cruel, he wouldn’t do that to his son. Blood is thicker than water....”

“Blood is thicker than water?” Lian Feng bitterly responded, “See what he has done to the Princess and you can tell he is cruel.”

Lin Shan didn’t know how to respond. She opened her mouth but nothing came out.

Instead, Lian Feng was the one comforting her: “Don’t worry about me. I had already predicted this outcome. There is never unconditional love in an Imperial household. There’s only forever power. Chances are, the Emperor wanted your brother to say those words to me...” When Lian Feng was speaking, he sounded like he didn’t care but through his eyes, loneliness could be seen. Lin Shan’s heart ached.

“Are you saying that my brother and the Emperor planned this? That’s it. I’m going back to argue with him!”

Lin Shan was about to explode. Just as she turned around, Lian Feng hugged her from behind.

“Don’t go.” His lips were on her ear. His voice was so gentle that it was melting her heart. Lin Shan didn’t move as she held her breath.

It was late. There were not a single person in sight. Only the moon was shining through the dense leaves of the tree. It revealed its shadow.

“I don’t care about anyone else as long as you’re by my side... you’re the only thing I need...”

Lin Shan felt like her heart was going to stop beating. Was this a confession? He was willing to give up everything as long as he had her? He just wanted to grow old with her? Who would have thought there would be a man who would do this for her? What else is there to question?

Lin Shan didn’t think anymore as she turned around and pressed her lips against Lian Feng’s.

On this long alley, underneath the ancient tree was a couple kissing. The sparse moonlight stretched out their shadows and overlapped them together; just like their hearts.

From a distance, a figure stood up. His long emerald robe couldn't hide his powerful Emperor aura. His pupils were pitch black; it reflected a dark sky without stars and moon.

"Are you sure this was a good idea?" Song Lin Feng came out from behind the tree. He had an awkward look on his face.

Du Hao didn't reply. After watching Lin Shan and Lian Feng's direction for awhile, he lightly murmured: "Perhaps this was the best outcome..."

What should have left has left. This power hungry land is not suitable for them. As for him... Du Hao laughed at himself. He belonged here...and could only belong here.

Knowing that her parents were fine, Lin Shan felt like a stone was lifted from her chest. At the same time, she finally had the energy to worry about her own stuff. Right now, she had to find Xiao Lu to get the Heaven stone back.

To be honest, she knew Ji Bai Yu really wanted that Heaven stone. It wasn't like she didn't think it could be a treasure of some sort. But after analyzing for a long time, she had determined it was just a piece of shitty rock. The only thing that could potentially be worth something was that the words were written by the previous Emperor. But even if the words were worth money, it couldn't be sold. Why would Ji Bai Yu want it?

"I'm telling you. There's nothing good about that rock. I have already looked at it at least a couple hundred times." Lin Shan warned Lian Feng.

But Lian Feng was calm, "It doesn't matter whether the Heaven stone is useful or not. Since Ji Bai Yu wants it, it has a value. We can use it to exchange for the antidote."

"True!" Lin Shan suddenly realized. Why didn't she think of this? Use the shitty rock to exchange for the antidote! Since Ji Bai Yu wants it so badly, he will definitely be willing to trade! Thinking of this, Lin Shan saw a glimmer of hope.

She excitedly took Lian Feng to find Xiao Lu.

As expected, Xiao Lu was still with her Great Aunt. The moment she saw Lin Shan, her eyes turned red: “Miss. Your servant thought she would never see you again....” She started to wail.

If Lin Shan wasn’t standing there in front of her, she would have thought Xiao Lu was crying at a funeral.

“Stop wailing. I’m fine! See?” Lin Shan consoled.

Xiao Lu stopped crying and used her snotty hands to touch Lin Shan. Once she realized her Master was fine, she noticed the man behind Lin Shan. It was the masked Lian Feng. She immediately understood as she smiled like a pervert: “Miss, you managed to grab hold of your man, eh?”

Lin Shan’s face turned red: “Nonsense! We are here for serious business. Remember the Heaven stone I left you? Is it still here?”

Heaven stone? Xiao Lu tilted her head and thought about it: “Yeah! My Great Aunt placed it in the cellar to crush and marinate vegetables!”

Wow. A treasure from the late Emperor had ended up in the cellar to crush and marinate vegetables. If the Heaven stone had a life, it would have probably committed suicide by crashing against the wall.

Lin Shan said to Xiao Lu: “Take me to it!”

They entered the cellar, and the smell of marinated vegetables was everywhere. As expected, the Heaven stone was quietly squishing a jar of salty Chinese cabbage.

Lin Shan panicked: Oh shit. This rock has gone through so much. Would Ji Bai Yu actually believe it’s the real one? Looks like I have to soak it in water for a day to get rid of the salty smell.

Thinking of this, Xiao Lu had already taken the Heaven stone out for her. The words “Peace of Prosperity” looked even more abstract after it had been in the jar for so long.

Lin Shan pinched her nose and wanted to ask Lian Feng. You honestly think this rock can trade for the antidote? But she noticed Lian Feng’s expression had

changed. His eyes were staring intently at the Heaven stone; as if he had discovered something.

“Look at those words.” He said, “Doesn’t it look like a map?”

Promoted post: [Nerdy guys on relationships](#)

Chapter 85

To my dear readers,

Merry Christmas! I hope you guys are having a wonderful time with your loved ones. Unfortunately, there is only one chapter today. It takes too much brain juice from me so I'm too tired to think. Nonetheless, I hope you like this chapter.

Please support me if you enjoy my work!! ♥

Chapter 85

Lin Shan was stunned. She rubbed her eyes and closely examined the Heaven stone. After being soaked in the salty cabbages, the four words actually appeared like a map!

Could there be a secret chamber? The two of them exchanged glances. Lin Shan was the first to speak: "In order to prevent them from doing bad deeds, we should first go and check out the place before giving it to Ji Bai Yu. What do you think?"

Xiao Lu muttered on the side: "Miss. You clearly just want to find the treasures for yourself. What a hypocrite...."

Lin Shan: "....."

Since Lin Shan was so stubborn, Lian Feng ultimately decided to check out the place first. It wasn't that he was greedy, but since the map was the late Emperor's remnant, it was most likely a very expensive or prized possession. If Ji Hong Lin was going to use it to do harm, both of them would feel terrible.

Therefore, the two of them followed the map and quickly arrived at the Eastern forest of the Imperial city.

Lin Shan was familiar with this forest. Last time, she was here during the Equestrian competition. This was where she fell into a hole with Du Hao and almost lost her life. She never expected to be back again. Although she looked the same, she was no longer the Song Luo from before. Lin Shan felt a bit moved as she stepped back into the forest.

The map she was holding was what she had copied down last night from the Heaven stone. Perhaps because it had already been decades, a lot of the area already looked nothing alike. It took the two of them a very long time before they were able to somewhat figure out where they were. By then, it was almost noon.

From her bundle, Lin Shan took out a snack to nibble on as she analyzed the landscape around them. At this moment, her elementary countryside emergency knowledge finally came to use. If the leaves and branches were dense, that was the south side. If the leaves and branches were sparse, that was the north side*.

She was mumbling north and south and didn't realized Lian Feng had came up next to her.

"What are you looking at?" He asked.

"I'm trying to figured out the direction." said Lin Shan, "Look at the trees. The dense part facing the Sun is south. That means, east is that way. We can't go wrong if we head east!"

"Let me see." Lian Feng took the map from her and instantly his brows started to furrow.

"What's wrong?" Lin Shan pressed forward.

"This. Something is wrong." Lian Feng pointed at a spot on the map, "Look. Logically, we should be able to see a highland if we are facing east. But there's nothing right now."

"Let me see?" Lin Shan was curious. She looked at the map and the area around her. Indeed, it was not the same.

"That's so strange...." She was confused. They should be on the right track. Could they have missed something earlier? Just as Lin Shan was doubting herself, Lian Feng interrupted and said: "Regardless, we have already gone so far. We might as well keep heading east. Maybe we'll discover something."

"Okay!" Lin Shan agreed and they continued to head east.

They went further and further into the Eastern forest. But the deeper they went, the denser the plants became. It was extremely difficult to walk through.

The two of them continued for a very long time but still didn't see the highland that was indicated on the map.

By now, the sky was starting to turn dim. It looked like a huge storm was approaching. Lin Shan looked up at the sky and started to worry: "It's going to rain soon. Do you think we went the wrong way? Perhaps we should come back tomorrow?"

Lian Feng was also not as confident as he was before. He thought about it and nodded: "Okay. Let's go back to analyze the Heaven stone again. Perhaps we missed something. We can return tomorrow."

Lin Shan nodded as well: "It's definitely better we leave now. When this place gets dark, you can't see anything. If you're not careful, you'll fall into a hole. Last time....ah!" Before she could finish speaking, Lin Shan slipped and lost balance. Lian Feng tried to stop her fall but they both ended up losing balance and fell into a hole.

After the sky spun, Lin Shan opened her eyes. She realized Lian Feng had tightly embraced her from harm. Despite falling from such a high height, she wasn't hurt at all. Unfortunately, there was a light cut on Lian Feng's face.

"Are you ok?" Lin Shan rushed to help him wipe his face, but Lian Feng stopped her. His eyes swept around the area. "This is...."

Lin Shan took a look around her surroundings and suddenly exclaimed: "This... this is the hole that I fell into last time. Even the rock looks the same!" She wasn't afraid at all. Instead, she went down her memory lane. She contently remembered the rock that smashed against Du Hao's face.

"Aiiii. Last time it was even darker when we fell in. I could barely see anything. Now that we're here, the rock actually looks pretty damn good. Look at this! It even has a decorative design...." As she murmured, three lines appeared on Lian Feng's forehead. He reached out and struck the design with the palm of his hand.

They heard a "hua" sound and suddenly another hole opened up beneath their feet and they slid down.

Lin Shan's mouth was filled with mud. When she got up, her entire body was

dusty and grey. It was pitch black. Fortunately, Lian Feng had something on him and were able to light up something. When she could finally see what was in front of her, her mouth was wide opened like an O shape.

There was actually a huge rock chamber here? It was clearly manmade. There was also a rusty old smell in here. Lin Shan couldn't help but shiver. She quickly grabbed onto Lian Feng's arm.

Lian Feng patted her hand to comfort her as he took his lit object and inspected and felt the walls. When he found the lamp, he lit it and Lin Shan realized how big the entire chamber was. In the centre of the room was a small red satin case.

Lin Shan suddenly had a realization. The highland indicated on the map was actually not a highland but this chamber! What they were looking for must be in here. It was probably in that case!

Lin Shan's eyes gleamed. She wasn't terrified any longer as she excitedly opened the case.

Oh my goodness. Whenever this woman finds something valuable, it's as if she had been injected with chicken blood. Lian Feng couldn't even stop her. Luckily, there didn't seem to be any secret traps in here.

But after Lin Shan took a look at the object, her face looked very troubled.

"What is it?" Lian Feng came closer.

"This..." Lin Shan pointed to the case and appeared depressed, "Now I know the most painful thing is not getting something invaluable. But instead, getting something that is very valuable but cannot be sold."

That's right. There was actually a Ruler's seal in the case. Beside the Ruler's seal was a note that was written on sheep skin. There were a couple hundred characters that indicated the cause and effect of this seal.

During the early years of the current dynasty, there was a lot of upheaval and epidemic diseases. The people were suffering tremendously. After inquiring around, the late Emperor finally hired a fortune teller to calculate the country's fate. Apparently, the man was well acquainted with feng shui* and could predict the end of the dynasty. It was something that could not be changed

However, since the people were suffering so much, the fortune teller decided he couldn't just sit and watch. After having a private discussion with the previous Emperor, he created this Ruler's seal and buried it on the Eastern side to save the country.

This was the seal that was created.

Lin Shan didn't believe in feng shui but when she saw the description on the note, she was shocked. Luckily she was being a treasure hunter (like her usual self) and came here to take a look. If Ji Hong Lin had found the Ruler's seal, the results would have been inconceivable!

She wasn't sure if the feng shui thing would really destroy the country, but the Ruler's seal represents Imperial power. If someone evil were to use it, it could destroy the world.

"We can't let Ji Hong Lin find this. Let's leave!" Lin Shan stated.

Lian Feng remained where he was and didn't move.

"Come on! Let's go!" Lin Shan urged.

"If we don't give this to Ji Hong Ling. How are we going to get rid of your poison?" Lian Feng blurted.

*How accurate is this? I have no idea if the author is just making things up.

** Feng shui is " (in Chinese thought) a system of laws considered to govern spatial arrangement and orientation in relation to the flow of energy (qi), and whose favorable or unfavorable effects are taken into account when designing buildings." (basically, some superstition stuff)

Promoted post: [Guess who is featured in an interesting podcast? \(me\)](#)

Chapter 86

To my dear readers,

Sorry I have been so slow. I ended up sleeping the entire day because I wasn't feeling well. This chapter is super short. I know you guys are probably freaking out by the end of it but don't worry. Remember, it's a comedy! There will be a happy ending.

Chapter 86

Uh... Lin Shan didn't know what to say. She felt torn on the inside: True. Without the Ruler's seal, they wouldn't have anything to trade with Ji Hong Lin. How would she get rid of her poison then?

Just as the two of them were being indecisive, a voice interrupted the silence.

"No need to think. I am going to take the item and your poison will remain! You two will die here! Muahahahaha...."

Lin Shan could recognize Ji Hong Lin's monstrous voice right away. Ji Hong Lin appeared at the entrance where they came from. Her face was also ashy as she stood from above.

This proves that what they show on TV was fake. Regardless of how "boss" you are, when you're going through a dirty hole, you're still going to look like shit.

As for Ji Bai Yu, he was standing behind his mother as he shook off the soil. It looked like he didn't care to get involved.

Lin Shan realized the old witch must have discovered their tracks early on and purposely used them to find the national treasure. Thinking of this, she quickly reacted as she tightly hugged the Ruler's seal: "You old witch. If you dare to even touch a piece of our hair, I will shatter this seal!"

Ji Hong Lin's expression instantly darkened when Lin Shan called her an old witch. She gritted her teeth and threatened: "Go ahead and shatter it. This seal is the lifeline of this dynasty. If you shatter it, you will be condemned in history."

"Don't try to scare me. I don't believe in these stuff!" Lin Shan refuted as she

lifted her arms.

Ji Hong Lin could tell Lin Shan was actually going to do it and panicked: “Yu-er!”

Ji Bai Yu immediately leaped into the air to steal the item. He was very fast. Before Lin Shan could react, Ji Bai Yu’s fan and sword was already flashing in her face. It looked like the item was about to be taken away when Lian Feng stepped in and blocked his moves. In a blink of an eye, the two of them were fighting in the stone chamber.

As this moment, the ground shook from the violent rainstorm from above. The sound of heavy rain started to slam onto the ground.

Since Ji Hong Lin saw that Lian Feng was occupied by Ji Bai Yu, she decided to go steal the Ruler’s seal from Lin Shan. Lin Shan could tell what was about to happen and quickly yelped and ran behind something.

Hearing Lin Shan’s scream, Lian Feng immediately went to the rescue. Ji Hong Lin had no choice but to fight him. The mother and son were attacking him two to one. Originally, Lian Feng had the upper hand but now he was starting to lose. Lin Shan knew Lian Feng was losing and started worrying from her hiding spot.

As the three of them were fighting closer to her, Lin Shan stepped out and lifted the Ruler’s seal to smack Ji Hong Lin on the face. Ji Hong Lin didn’t manage to block in time and a bloody scar appeared on her face.

“You!” Ji Hong Lin shrieked and turned somewhat insane. She viciously attempted to strike Lin Shan, but Lin Shan was fast enough and avoided it. The palm landed on the architecture instead.

Right after, a small piece of loose rock fell on Lin Shan’s head and Lin Shan froze. Raindrops started falling on her face. She was about to look up when Ji Hong Lin was about to strike again.

This time, she was too slow and couldn’t avoid. She could tell she was about to be a goner when a figure suddenly appeared in front of her and blocked the palm.

“Yu-er? You!” Ji Hong Lin looked at the person in front of Lin Shan shockingly. Her expression was twisted.

Ji Bai Yu didn't respond as he flew over and started fighting with her.

Within a blink of an eye, their enemies were now fighting each other. Lin Shan couldn't understand why but she had no time to worry about that because more and more loose rocks were falling everywhere. The stone chamber was created too long ago and was no longer a safe structure.

The rain had already loosen the foundation and Ji Hong Lin's forceful palm had shaken the soil. Now, it was no longer able to support itself and was about to collapse.

Lin Shan hollered: "This place is going to collapse. Run!" Her voice alerted the three that were fighting but Lian Feng was the one who first reacted. He wanted to grab Lin Shan and leave, but Ji Hong Lin refused and blocked their exit.

Lian Feng had no choice but to fight Ji Hong Lin. He turned and screamed at Lin Shan: "You leave first!"

"I'm not leaving without you!" Lin Shan cried in response as she threw the Ruler's seal on one side and wanted to help Lian Feng.

"Take her!" Lian Feng shrieked at Ji Bai Yu.

Ji Bai Yu stopped fighting and deeply locked eye contact with Lian Feng. Then, he turned around and embraced Lin Shan as he flew towards the exit.

After a glaring light, an earth shattering amount of rain fell onto Lin Shan. There was a loud bang behind her. It was so intense that her mind turned blank. She didn't care that her body was covered in mud as she used all her strength to fight off Ji Bai Yu. She wanted to rush back in but the hole was no longer there.

Everything turned black and Lin Shan lost consciousness.

Promoted post: [Conforming to society](#)

Chapter 87

To my dear readers,

Happy New Year! I'm so sorry for being so slow. I wanted to finish this in 2016 but it's already 2017 and I still have one more chapter. *sigh*. Anyhow, the author did a total switch so I hope you're not too unhappy or unsatisfied with the chapter. At least, it's not a tragedy?

I wanted to finish it but I don't have enough willpower and brain power. I'll attempt tomorrow night (no guarantee).

Chapter 87

Three years later

"Mother, child wants to practice wu wu*. Child wants to practice wu wu..."

"Practice martial arts? You can't even talk properly. Go go go. Go play elsewhere! Don't hinder your mother from making money!" Lin Shan impatiently waved her hand as she continued looking at the accounting book.

The little boy continued to pull on the corner of her outfit: "Mother, child wants to practice wu wu..practice wu wu..."

Finally, Lin Shan snapped: "Lian Yun Cheng! If you keep bothering me, I'm going to tell Boss Huang to bring Ru Hua over to play!" The little boy stared at her blankly as he turned and wobbled away.

"Miss!" Xiao Lu saw this and couldn't help but comment, "Young Master is so small, why are you scaring him? It's not like you don't know Boss Huang's daughter always kiss our Young Master whenever she sees him. Yesterday, Young Master even cried because of her!"

"WHAT?!" Lin Shan was shocked, "That Ru Hua dares to eat my son's tofu?"

"Not only Ru Hua. Yesterday, the wet nurse took Young Master to watch a sideshow and he was ambushed by the Young ladies. Aside from Boss Huang's, there were also Boss Qian's, Boss Li's, and Boss Yang's daughters...."

"Are you kidding me?" Lin Shan exploded, "How dare they eat my son's tofu?"

They don't want to live anymore, huh!? That's it. I'm going to go and hunt them down!" Lin Shan slammed down the accounting book and stormed out.

Xiao Lu rushed behind her as she yelled: "Miss, don't go out. There's a bunch...."

Lin Shan didn't care. She lifted her sleeves and was about to reason with the mothers. But the moment she came out, she was surrounded by all the mothers.

"Ai ya, Miss Lian, you've finally came out! My Ru Hua says she fancies your Yun Cheng. I think they are quite compatible with each other. Why don't we set them up? We can plan ahead. What do you think? Miss Huang smiled as she came up to her.

"Uhhh excuse me. It's not your turn?! Your daughter Ru Hua looks as fat as a pig. How can she compete with my Duo Duo?" Miss Qian shoved Miss Huang as she turned to Lin Shan, "Sister. Don't listen to her. Our Duo Duo is much better. Her name is good luck too. Qian Duo Duo**. The moment she marries into your family, profits will come in from all sides!"

"Pah! Why are you trying to gain wealth from a daughter in law? You might as well ask the God of Wealth!" Miss Li got in between the women and grabbed onto Lin Shan's hand, "Miss Lian, they're all speaking nonsense. My daughter is the best choice. She has both integrity and talent, and she is very clever. Where else would you find such a good girl?"

Lin Shan started to sweat: "Isn't your daughter a bit too old?"

"What's wrong with that? An older woman means more gold blocks. If your son marries my daughter, he can carry five gold blocks***!"

Lin Shan: "....."

"What the heck. What is with all the commotion? Miss Lian, my Fang-er is the best match for your son!"

Lin Shan was almost in tears: "Isn't your Fang-er a boy?"

"Yeah! What the hell! He's a boy. Are you nuts? My Ru Hua is the best choice!"

"My Duo Duo is the best choice!"

"My daughter is the best choice!"

“.....”

Lin Shan couldn't stand the bickering anymore and went back inside: Mother, this world is too scary! I can't even protect him as his mother. I guess I should let him learn martial arts!

Lin Shan decided to allow her son to learn martial arts.

In the courtyard, Lian Feng was currently practicing his sword moves. He could tell Lin Shan was frustrated and he pulled back his sabre and asked: “What's wrong?”

Lin Shan muttered: “I have decided to let our son learn martial arts!”

Lian Feng chuckled: “Yun Cheng is only two and a half. Why are you in such a rush?”

“How can I not be?” Then, Lin Shan explained the dramatic scene from earlier. After she was finished, she started to wring her wrist, “If I had known this was going to happen, I wouldn't have wanted a son. A daughter would have been much better....”

Lin Shan started becoming more and more unreasonable, “It's all your fault. Why do you have to look so hot? Look what you did to our son. He's so young and all these little girls already want him...oh yeah! I heard a pretty woman came to find you in the Martial arts building yesterday. Who is she, huh? Tell me the truth. Are you having an affair with another woman.....?”

Lin Shan was getting too ridiculous and Lian Feng reached out to cover her mouth: “You speak too much nonsense.”

“What nonsense....I'm just...mmm.... trying to take preventive measures....
&*&%^&*&.”

“That was a female disciple from the Sword Spirit Hills.”

“What? Ji Bai Yu sent someone to look for you?” Lin Shan was surprised. After what happened three years ago, they had never seen him since. Ji Hong Lin died in the stone chamber and Ji Bai Yu left the antidote and disappeared. Legend had said that he had disbanded The Red Phosphorous Group and changed his name to Qin Yu. He used all of Ji Hong Lin's treasures and formed his own Sword Spirit

Hills and quickly became one of Jiang hu's righteous figures. Lin Shan was pleasantly surprised.

But why did he send someone to contact Lian Feng? What did he want? Lin Shan was confused and gazed at Lian Feng strangely.

*wu = martial arts. Think of wuxia. He's saying wu wu like a baby... either he is stuttering or he doesn't know how to say just "wu" LOL

**qian means money. Duo means a lot. Qian Duo Duo could sound like "a lot of money". The author is trying to be punny.

*** I don't understand that logic but ok...

Promoted post: [My adventures on discord](#)

Chapter 88

To my dear readers,

I'm finally done! I hope you liked the story. If you have read the entire novel, thank you!!

Chapter 88

"She came to give me an invitation." said Lian Feng.

"What invitation?"

"Ever since the former Martial Arts Leader Qin Hao Tian was killed twenty five years ago, the martial arts circle has been missing a leader. This time, Sword Spirit Hills is organizing a general convention to select a new and suitable leader to lead the heroes."

Oh, I see. So he's not looking for trouble. Lin Shan sighed a breath of relief. But very quickly, she realized something: "What did you say the former Martial Arts Leader's name was?"

"Qin Hao Tian."

Lin Shan was shocked and her mouth was wide opened like an O shape: "Qin Hao Tian? Qin Yu? Could they be...."

"You're correct." Lian Feng nodded, "Twenty five years ago, Ji Hong Lin used poison and killed off Qin Hao Tian's family. She took Qin Hao Tian's infant son and adopted him as her child. Three years ago, Qin Yu finally got his revenge for his parents."

After hearing this, Lin Shan deeply sighed. She actually had no idea why Ji Bai Yu suddenly decided to switch sides when they were in the stone chamber. Now that she realized he had been suffering in silence for years, she couldn't help but admire him.

"So, are you going to go to the convention?" Lin Shan asked. Based on martial arts abilities, Lian Feng was definitely not under Qin Yu.

Lian Feng shook his head: "Didn't I already tell you? I have no more ties with

the Imperial court and Jiang hu. All I want to do is....” When he got to this part, he paused and looked at Lin Shan.

Lin Shan’s face immediately turned bright red. Her heart felt like it was going to burst: It’s over! We’ve already been married for awhile, yet he only needs to look at me and I turn so fluster! Ah, how embarrassing!

Lin Shan awkwardly tried to turn away. But Lian Feng grabbed her hand.

“Let’s go. I’m going to take you to a place.”

“It’s almost dinner time. Where do you want to take me?” Before Lin Shan could question further, Lian Feng had already pulled her out of the residence.

It was evening and the Sun was about to set. The setting Sun was turning the horizon red, and the afterglow bouncing off the roof tiles made the little town looked extremely enchanting.

They have already been here for three years. From the far and distant north, they took a long and difficult trek to find this place of serenity.

As they walked along the narrow flagstone path, they passed by Jiangnan’s thin river course. Across from it were the homes of many households. The sweet scent of cooked meals drifted through the air.

When Lin Shan looked up, the clear shallow river appeared red from the Sunset. It was gleaming reflections of waves. It was extremely pleasing to the eye and Lin Shan was caught in a daze. She was no longer in a rush to go home to eat. The sight was as alluring as a painting.

At the end of the road was a newly built stone bridge. This was funded by the Martial arts building from a few months ago. Currently, the Sunset had painted it red.

Lian Feng pulled Lin Shan to the bridge and stood in the middle of it. From where they were standing, they could clearly see the end of the river. From a distance, the afterglow made the sky and the river merge together. It was hard to tell which was the sky, and which was the water. It was so breathtaking that it could suck someone in.

Lin Shan felt like she was dreaming. In a daze, she noticed three graceful words

on the stone tablet in the middle of the bridge.

“Three life bridge...” She softly whispered.

“Do you like the name?” Lian Feng asked. His voice sounded like it had been painted by the sky and river. She felt like she was in a trance. The Sunset had also dyed her cheeks red.

“Do you want to know why I named it that? It’s because...” He paused as he held her hand. The heat from the palm immediately transferred into her heart. She even had trouble standing firm.

Lian Feng pulled her into his arms as his fingers stroked the hair on her shoulder. He slowly murmured: “Because I want to make a pledge. Three life... forever...we shall never be apart.....”

At that moment, Lin Shan felt like her heart was turning into the gorgeous river water, flowing towards the horizon.

Forever, you and I. We shall never be apart!

Afterwords

That’s it, folks! I’m done! Thank you so much for reading. This was actually very difficult for me. I had contemplated on quitting before. There were days when I had meltdowns, when I was in so much pain I could barely move, and when I lost all motivation.

It honestly took a lot of willpower to continue. Until you actually translate, you wouldn’t understand the turmoil we translators go through.

Thank you so much to **Amery** who introduced the novel to me. Without him, I definitely wouldn’t have known about Your Highness.

Thank you to **Kyle** who suggested translating to me. If it weren’t for Kyle, I would have never started translating.

Thank you to all my readers who have donated to me. It really means a lot because I have spent hundreds of hours on this. It might have taken you an afternoon to read the entire thing, but this was a project I worked on for 6 months.

Thank you to all my readers who leave me nice comments. It honestly helps a great deal.

If you would like to support me, you can:

1. **Donate to me (any amount is appreciated)**
2. **Turn off your adblock**
3. **Write me a nice comment**
4. **Write me a review on <http://www.novelupdates.com/series/your-highness-i-know-my-wrongs/>. You can be honest. Even if you didn't like the story, I enjoy feedback.**

So what's next?

I will be retranslating the first twelve chapters of Your Highness. After I am finished, I will actually be hosting Your Highness on Volare Translations. My original chapters will still be here, but in the future, my translations will be on Volare. I actually haven't decided what my next project will be, so feel free to leave suggestions. HOWEVER, I can only handle about 10 chapters a month. Therefore, do not suggest anything with thousands of chapters because I know I cannot dedicate 10 years to translate a novel. Ideally, I'm looking for something around 100-200 range (less is also good).

I hope my translations had the ability to cheer you up and/or brighten your day. It was so hard but quite rewarding. Please take care, my dear readers.

Love you all and please check out my other posts on <https://liveandlearn88.com/>